

**The child of circumstance : the mystery of the unborn / by Albert Wilson.**

**Contributors**

Wilson, Albert, 1854-1928.

**Publication/Creation**

London : John Bale, sons & Danielsson, Ltd., 1928.

**Persistent URL**

<https://wellcomecollection.org/works/exundscm>

**License and attribution**

Conditions of use: it is possible this item is protected by copyright and/or related rights. You are free to use this item in any way that is permitted by the copyright and related rights legislation that applies to your use. For other uses you need to obtain permission from the rights-holder(s).



Wellcome Collection  
183 Euston Road  
London NW1 2BE UK  
T +44 (0)20 7611 8722  
E [library@wellcomecollection.org](mailto:library@wellcomecollection.org)  
<https://wellcomecollection.org>










22102175409



Med

K45327





Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2017 with funding from  
Wellcome Library

<https://archive.org/details/b29818461>



THE  
CHILD OF CIRCUMSTANCE



BY THE SAME AUTHOR

Education, Personality and Crime

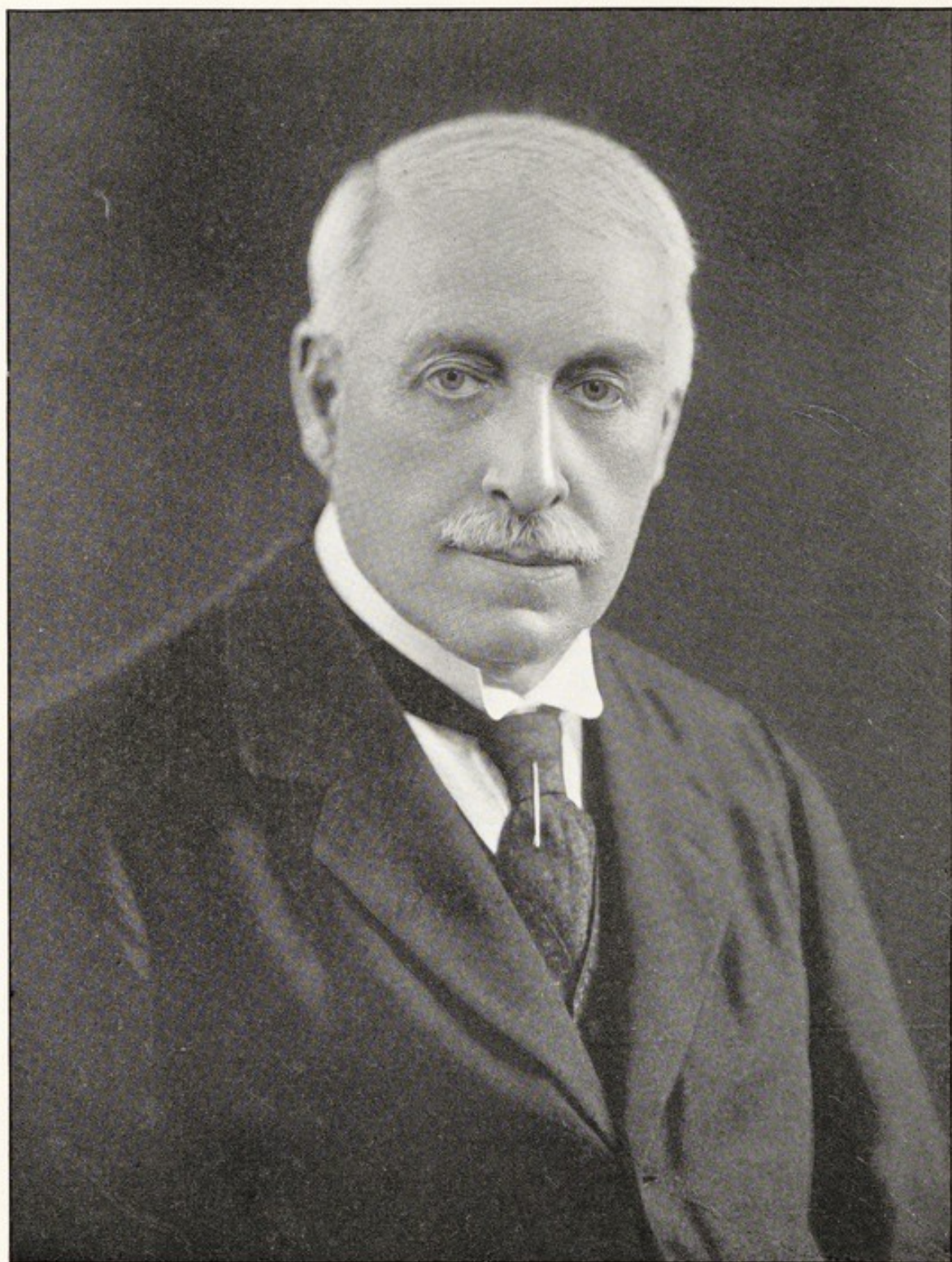
Unfinished Man

Rambles in North Africa

Notes on a Murderer's Brain







Allen Wilson

THE  
CHILD OF CIRCUMSTANCE

THE MYSTERY OF THE UNBORN

BY

ALBERT WILSON, M.D. EDIN.

*Fellow, late President of the Royal Medical Society  
Fellow of the Royal Society of Medicine, &c.*



LONDON

JOHN BALE, SONS & DANIELSSON, LTD.

83-91, GREAT TITCHFIELD STREET, W. 1

—  
1928



21717

MADE AND PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN BY  
JOHN BALE, SONS AND DANIELSSON, LTD.,  
83-91, GREAT TITCHFIELD ST., LONDON, W.1.

4541 157

WELLCOME INSTITUTE LIBRARY	
Coll.	welMOMec
Call	
No.	WQ



DEDICATED  
TO THE MEMORY  
OF  
MY BELOVED CHIEF  
THE LATE  
LORD LISTER  
WHOSE NAME  
AS  
THE GREATEST BENEFACTOR OF SUFFERING HUMANITY  
IS IMMORTAL  
AND TO WHOM I OWE SO MUCH

*"When the ear heard him, then it blessed him, and when the eye saw him, it gave witness of him ; he delivered the poor that cried, the fatherless and him that had none to help him. Kindness, meekness and comfort were on his tongue. If there was any virtue and any praise, he thought on those things. His body is buried in peace, but his name liveth for evermore."*



## AUTHOR'S PREFACE

THIS work refers to the last hundred years and the changes which have occurred since then. The author is interested in criminals and has made a study as to their cause, their behaviour and their cure. He regards the criminal as a naughty child ; but the low-grade violent criminal is often irresponsible, suffering from the arrested evolution and development of the brain. The Great Architect of the Universe has left him unfinished. We cannot expect normal reactions from that class of humanity. The author writes from personal research, has visited many prisons at home and abroad and compares their different methods. FREUD'S sexual psychology is criticized. The problem of dissociated or alternating personality, so common to-day, is discussed, with a case of ten subpersonalities in one, which was under the care of the author, and almost the first to be described.

The aim of this book is to deal with the criminal from a scientific point of view, to ask what he is and why he is. We shall be faced with some gruesome and ursavoury problems, which cannot be avoided.

The keynote of this inquiry is

*Mens sana in corpore sano.*

ALBERT WILSON.

*Fairwarp, Sussex.*

*London, W.1.*





ALBERT WILSON came of North Country stock, being born at Newcastle-on-Tyne. Both parents were members of the Society of Friends. Much of his early education he owed to his mother, who was a scholar of no mean ability. She was a large-hearted woman greatly interested in social problems, working in conjunction with Elizabeth Fry, Mrs. Henry Fawcett and Josephine Butler. Garibaldi also was numbered amongst her friends. Wilson was educated at Bootham School, York, where he matriculated. Thence he entered the medical school at Edinburgh University. Happy, strenuous years followed, rich in friendships and associations.

The battle of antiseptic and aseptic surgery was being fought, and Wilson enthusiastically sided with his "chief," the late Lord Lister, to whom he frequently acted as dresser. The teaching and principles here imbibed were tenaciously adhered to by Dr. Wilson himself throughout his long and varied professional career. Graduating M.B., C.M., in 1878, he took his M.D. with gold medal in 1882 for his Thesis on "Clinical Research with the Sphygmograph."

Eye, ear and throat were studied at Paris and Vienna; the medical clinics in Berlin and St. Petersburg were also visited.

When serving as house surgeon to the Royal Infirmary, Edinburgh, Dr. Wilson in 1879 held office as President of the Royal Medical Society, the oldest medical society in Great Britain.

He made close acquaintance with the seamy side of city life when resident physician to the Cowgate



Dispensary and early showed his strong sympathy with the ailing poor.

In 1881, settling at Leytonstone, Essex, Dr. Wilson soon had a large general practice. He married two years later Emily Louisa, youngest daughter of Dr. James Clephan Minto, of the Cameronians; there are two daughters, who survive them.

Work at the Walthamstow branch of Essex County Asylum, over which he was Medical Superintendent in 1890, and at the Claybury Laboratory in association with the late Sir Frederick Mott, Dr. Shaw Bolton and Dr. G. F. Watson, induced specialized study of criminal conduct in relation to brain pattern and disease. His pamphlet on "Treatment of Malignant Diseases by Goat Serum and Oleates" was an original contribution on the cure of cancer, viewed as a chemical problem. Other articles which appeared in the medical and scientific press were on "Rheumatoid Arthritis," the "Responsibility of Parentage," and the "Development of the Child's Brain."

In 1914, and during the Great War, though over the age limit, Albert Wilson served with the French Red Cross, and had charge of various hospitals at Dieppe, in the Somme, and in the Marne and the Meuse. Experience gained in this new field led him to write on the "Value of Salicylic Acid in the Treatment of Wounds and Typhoid Fever" and "Notes on 150 Cases of Wounded French, Belgians and Germans."

Dr. Wilson was a keen traveller, and his holidays on the Continent and in Algeria and Tunisia were full of varied and amusing experiences. An intense interest in botany, geology, bird and animal life, as well as local ethnology, enhanced their charm.

After more than a year of indifferent health, under strong medical advice Albert Wilson retired from consulting work in London in September, 1927.

A year of great peace and happiness followed in the new home in Sussex; a year that was by no means idle,



filled with correspondence to and visits from old friends, and with work on his book.

On Friday, September 7, 1928, he corrected the final proofs. That night a severe heart attack was followed by great weakness.

Very peacefully on Sunday morning, September 9, 1928, Albert Wilson entered into his rest.

In *The Times* of September 17 Lieutenant-Commissioner I. Unsworth, O.B.E., of the Salvation Army, wrote a "personal tribute to the memory of one of the kindest men I ever met in my life, and in all my world travels. Wilson was prepared as were few men of his standing to take risks on the lines of advanced science in respect of certain maladies, breaking away from conventional grooves to use the new knowledge for the benefit of sufferers. But the doctor will be remembered above all for his kindness and generosity. If ever a man loved to do good by stealth, if ever there was a successor of the doctor-hero of the 'Bonny Brier Bush,' it was Albert Wilson. Hundreds will remember him with reverence; never was one turned away from his door.

"In his long career he saw again and again the seamy side of human nature, sometimes the worst. Let down time after time, he harboured no resentment. Smiling even when badly beaten, he would pass the matter off with one of his little pleasantries, of which he kept a stock for bad weather. His friends in the profession honoured and respected him, but for his most fitting epitaph I would quote Lowell's on Tom Hood:—

'If thou wouldst know how great a man was he,  
Go ask it of the poor.' "





## FOREWORD

By THE REV. R. J. CAMPBELL, D.D.

THE work of my old friend, Dr. WILSON, in the treatment of aberrant and abnormal types of character and mentality is well known to experts, but perhaps not equally so to the general public. As an authority of eminence in his chosen field of scientific observations and corresponding service, he has a long and honourable record behind him. He is now giving in popular form some of the results of his experience as a criminologist, and also as a student of human nature in general. He holds strong views on some subjects, notably on the tendency of the Freudian school and others to mechanize everything in connection with our psychological processes and, *pari passu*, to undervalue moral sanctions and the need for the cultivation of self-control.

That there is much danger in this teaching and its correlatives the clergy and the medical profession are already aware, but Dr. WILSON speaks with the weight of a specialist in condemning some of its grosser fruits and the false tenets which produce them. If to the reader he may at times appear unsparing in his censure, it should be remembered that he has had unusual opportunities of coming in contact with and understanding the evils he condemns.

But his book is not simply a technical treatise ; it is far more a presentation of kindly and instructive recollections of past events and scenes in a varied professional career. Dr. WILSON has ever been a sober and sympathetic analyst of human conduct, especially in its frailer aspects. The experience thus acquired is undoubtedly useful, but it has its drawbacks. One outcome thereof, however, has been to give Dr. WILSON a clearer insight



into the workings of human motive than is possessed by many people. He is no mere statistician, but a tolerant and helpful friend of weak and erring men and women.

Few will agree with all the opinions advanced in this book. I, for one, find myself unable to do so. But there is scarcely a page in it that is not charged with living human interest. The personal reminiscences alone are sufficient to justify the writing of the book. That a distinguished pupil of Lord LISTER should give us his impressions of that benefactor of the human race, is timely, to say the least, and is sure to attract wide attention. But can Dr. WILSON easily reconcile his Quaker and philanthropic associations with his views on capital punishment and the lash? He himself shows convincingly in these pages that the period of brutal punishments was not a period of less tendency to crime than now; and is there nothing to be said in the way of compassion for warders and wardresses whose duty it is to watch in a condemned cell or usher a fellow-creature to the gallows? An offender may deserve the lash, but what of the effect on the man who has to wield it?

But I heartily commend the book as the considered utterance of a competent worker in more than one sphere of valuable service taking calm retrospect upon things he has seen and learned in a long and useful career.



## FOREWORD

By JOSEPH SHAW BOLTON, M.D., F.R.C.P., D.Sc.

*Professor of Mental Diseases in Leeds University.*

It affords me the utmost pleasure to be granted the privilege of writing an appreciatory note on the accompanying volume.

To few men has fallen the fortunate lot in time and opportunity of my old friend, Dr. ALBERT WILSON, who without intermission has pursued his studies in social psychology during some forty years. How many of such, however, have, like Dr. WILSON, placed their rich harvest of observation and deduction at the disposal of their fellow-men? Not only are his writings in abnormal mentality, criminology and social psychology of interest to the medical man and even to the expert, but, owing to their simple, non-technical language and their intelligible and at times rugged style, they are readily understood by the intelligent layman.

Dr. WILSON has always had a soft place in his heart for the under-dog—the man who has not had a chance—and his faith in the possibility of finding out both the good and a means of physical and mental improvement in even the most degraded, which manifests itself throughout his publications, is sublime in its apparent idealism.

It does one good to read a work inspired by such earnest and lofty motives, particularly when the author is one who by training and experience is capable not only of collecting and digesting facts and calling a spade a spade, but also of presenting them in attractive and intelligible form. I commend this volume both to the

members of my own profession and to the general public as a deeply interesting and highly instructive effort at social service which cannot fail to serve the end of its author, the diffusion of truth to the ordinary man.

*West Riding Mental Hospital, Wakefield.*

*April 13, 1927.*



# CONTENTS

	PAGE
AUTHOR'S PREFACE ... ..	vii
FOREWORD by the Rev. R. J. Campbell, D.D. ... ..	xiii
FOREWORD by Joseph Shaw Bolton, M.D., Director of Wakefield Mental Hospital; Professor of Mental Diseases, Leeds University ... ..	xv

## SECTION A.—WHO THE CRIMINAL IS.

Chapter I. Criminal Psychology ... ..	3
II. The Child of Circumstance ... ..	16
III. Sexual Crimes ... ..	38
IV. Criminal Families and Groups, at Home and Abroad ... ..	48
V. How the Criminal is Made ... ..	60

## SECTION B.—ABNORMAL MENTALITY.

Chapter VI. Dissociation of Consciousness ... ..	75
VII. Multiple Personality... ..	80
VIII. Dual Personality and its Relation to Crime ... ..	100
IX. The Criminal's Mind ... ..	111
X. Freudian Philosophy ... ..	128

## SECTION C.—HOW TO DEAL WITH THE CRIMINAL.

Chapter XI. The Administration of Justice... ..	175
XII. The Inequality of Sentences ... ..	187
XIII. Capital Punishment or Prolonged Deten- tion ... ..	195
XIV. Our Prison System ... ..	209
XV. Prison Psychology ... ..	223



## SECTION D.—PUNISHMENT.

	PAGE
Chapter XVI. Penology ... ..	231
XVII. „ in Holland ... ..	254
XVIII. „ in Belgium ... ..	271
XIX. „ in France ... ..	289
XX. „ in Germany ... ..	298
XXI. „ in Spain, Portugal and S. America ... ..	303
XXII. „ in America ... ..	315
XXIII. The Care of the Criminal. John Howard and Elizabeth Fry ... ..	326
XXIV. The Deflation of Crime ... ..	335

## SECTION E.—PHYSIOLOGY.

XXV. From Conception to Daylight... ..	353
XXVI. Sex ... ..	375
XXVII. The Brain Machine ... ..	388

APPENDIX ... ..	412
-----------------	-----

INDEX ... ..	414
--------------	-----

# LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

	Portrait of Author ...	...	...	...	<i>Frontispiece</i>
FIG.		CHAPTER I			FACE PAGE
1	Photo of Williams	...	...	...	3
		CHAPTER II			
	Cartoon from <i>Punch</i>	...	...	...	35
		CHAPTER III			
2	Group of perverts at Merxplas	...	...	...	38
		CHAPTER IV			
3	The pedigree of a bleeders' family	...	...	...	48
4	Family chart affected by brachydactyly	...	...	...	48
		CHAPTER V			
5	Two boys, a normal and a degenerate	...	...	...	62
6-9	Four blocks of brain cells multiplied 350 times, post-natal and pre-natal—				
6	Adult normal	...	...	...	64
7	Child of 5, very intelligent	...	...	...	64
8	A murderer	...	...	...	65
9	Ouran-outan	...	...	...	65
10	Columns of comparison of different prefrontal layers in brains	...	...	...	66
11	The gamut of humanity	...	...	...	<i>On page</i> 70
		CHAPTER VII			
12	Writing of B2	...	...	...	84
13	Pattern of brain showing the circulation	...	...	...	85
14	Writing of B3	...	...	...	86
15	Writing of B6	...	...	...	86
16	Writing of B6	...	...	...	88
17	Writing of B9	...	...	...	88
18	Drawing by B10	...	...	...	91
19	Drawing by B10	...	...	...	92
20	Drawing by B3	...	...	...	93
21	Drawing by B6	...	...	...	93
22	Writing by B10	...	...	...	93
		CHAPTER IX			
23	Feeble-minded criminals	...	...	...	122
		CHAPTER X			
24	Fœtal brains	...	...	...	130
25	The prefrontal in a normal...	...	...	...	131
26	The prefrontal in an idiot	...	...	...	131
27	Brain of a female dement	...	...	...	138
28	Flechsigs's areas	...	...	...	138
29	Sketch of the mechanism of reading and writing	...	...	...	139
30	Lower brains	...	...	...	143
31	Five layers of brain cells	...	...	...	144



FIG.				FACE	PAGE
32	Five layers of brain cells	...	...	...	144
33	Comparison of cortical developments	...	...	...	145
34	Cells and fibres.	Lent by the late Sir Frederick Mott...			153
CHAPTER XI					
35	Murderer's brain, upright	...	...	...	177
36	Murderer's brain, occipital	...	...	...	177
CHAPTER XII					
37	The coiner	...	...	...	190
CHAPTER XVIII					
38	School for boys at Ruysselede	...	...	...	288
39	School for girls at Bruges	...	...	...	288
CHAPTER XXIV					
40A	Smallest idiot brain on record	...	...	...	338
40B	Smallest idiot brain on record, from above	...	...	...	338
41	Brain of an imbecile	...	...	...	339
42	Brain of an ouran-outan	...	...	...	339
43A	Normal Betz cells...	...	...	...	344
43B	Betz cells in an idiot's brain	...	...	...	344
CHAPTER XXV					
44	Germinal epithelium	...	...	...	356
45	Germinal elements of <i>crepidula fornicata</i>	...	...	...	356
46	Diagram of fertilization after Boveri...	...	...	...	357
47	Mendelian diagram of inheritance of characters	...	...	...	365
48	Mendelian phenomena in wheat	...	...	...	367
CHAPTER XXVI					
49	Germinal gland of <i>gryllus</i> or cricket	...	...	...	379
50	Diagram of sex determination	...	...	...	380
CHAPTER XXVII					
51	Brain and spinal cord	...	...	...	388
52	Brain and spinal cord	...	...	...	389
53	Spinal reflex action illustrated	...	...	...	390
54	Salivary reflex action illustrated	...	...	...	390
55A	Cell from the grey cortex	...	...	...	394
55B	Cell from the cerebellum	...	...	...	394
56	Fibrillation of prefrontal cortex	...	...	...	394
57A	Fibres in the brain	...	...	...	395
57B	Pyramidal cell from Rhesus Macacus	...	...	...	396
58	Vertical section through the brain	...	...	...	397
59	Flechsig's area of the brain	...	...	...	400
60	Human foetus, thirty-fifth day	...	...	...	408
61	Brain at birth	...	...	...	408
62	Normal brain	...	...	...	408
63A	Section from ascending parietal convolution	...	...	...	409
63B	Pre- and post-natal neuroblasts	...	...	...	409
64	Grey cortex at birth	...	...	...	410
65	Same area in a degenerate	...	...	...	410
66	Portrait of Barrett, king of silver thieves	...	...	...	411



SECTION A

WHO THE CRIMINAL IS

CHAPTERS I—V









FIG. 1.—Williams the Second, ex-burglar, with Brigadier Playle of the Salvation Army, and the Author. He says that in one prison he was confined eight weeks in a punishment cell which measured only 8 feet by 5 feet. It evidently got on his nerves. His stories of prison life are very pathetic, and in fact horribly revolting. (The burglar is sitting.)

# THE CHILD OF CIRCUMSTANCE

THE MYSTERY OF THE UNBORN

## Chapter I

---

### SUMMARY

WILLIAMS THE SECOND.

His History.

His prison life and sufferings.

The psychology of the criminal.

DR. BJERRE ON THE PSYCHOLOGY OF MURDER.

RELIGION.

Mission work.

William Wheatley.

Thomas Holmes.

The Residue.

Anatole France.

WILLIAMS THE SECOND.

### *His History.*

IT was after the war that one morning I got a telegram, "Mr. Williams is dead, do you want his brain?" and then followed the address of the sender. I replied, "Is it Mr. Williams the burglar?" as I had two or three Williamses on my list. Next day I got a letter full of surprise from the wife, who never knew his profession. As he was seventy, the brain would be wasted and therefore of little use to me.

Williams the Second was quite a character. He always dressed well, and so I could not object to his walking one day up Regent Street with me. True, he was wearing clothes I had given him, but being a tailor he turned himself out smart and rather put me in the shade.

I was interested in him for many years and,



recognizing that he was reformed, perhaps on account of age, I got him a situation of trust as a caretaker under the London County Council. He died rather suddenly while in their service, where he had given full satisfaction.

I had some difficulty in placing him, as several objected to engage a retired burglar, while so many honest men were out of work. I recently found a quaint letter from him written in 1911. He writes :—

“I will tell him [Mr. Winston Churchill] the story of my life and how when one wants to live an honest life he cannot do so, for it is almost impossible to get anything to do to earn a honest living. The world is very cold to a fallen man like myself. God bless you, Dr. Wilson, for your kindness, my sister would like to see your book Sir, as I am still staying with her and she is very kind to me. But she is very Poor. I have no work yet My age goes against me. My sister tells me to trust in the Lord, it is Good to think so.”

The last sentence has a ring of despair about it, but later Williams showed every sign of being reformed, though he had to be allowed to air his vanity. He wrote me out his history, and what he emphasized as much as his suffering was that he was in every way a gentleman. The title of his story was “A instance of injustice.” In this he states that he was born in 1849 and brought up in the business of his father, which was very successful. His father was “a man of good birth.” As a boy he was fond of sport and could box, run and swim; but his boxing brought him into bad company and was his downfall. He expressed himself as very fond of fighting and admitted that he was rather too quarrelsome.

### *His Prison Life.*

In the year 1869 he was charged with highway robbery with violence, and sentenced to five years' penal servitude. He maintained that he was innocent, and



from the reckless official methods of that period such is quite possible. It happened that he went to some races at Dover with the usual kind of low gang, and he and one or two others were arrested at a public house on this charge. After a few weeks in prison he was so miserable that he attempted suicide, and for this offence was "flogged like a dog." Williams was "sent to Chatham prison, which was a hell on earth." I have frequently heard the same opinion, and of how convicts would jump under the trucks to get maimed, losing a leg or an arm. The convicts used to say that every stone of the Government's work was cemented with convicts' blood. Convicts then were more virile and brutal than to-day.

Williams was discharged in 1874 and says "he dressed well and always bore himself as a gentleman." Unfortunately the same year he was arrested, this time for housebreaking, and received eight years' penal servitude. Again he went to Chatham, which was still a hell, and was discharged in 1881 on licence.

At once he fell into criminal practices and was arrested for the third time and received a sentence of twenty years from Judge Hardman for housebreaking. He sent several petitions to the Home Office against the severity of his sentence, but all were returned, written over "No grounds." This made him desperate, so that he did not mind what he did, and unfortunately assaulted an officer, who evidently was irritating him and threatening to report him. He was at once placed in the penal cells and waited some weeks before he was tried, as sometimes occurs to-day in less civilized countries. His diet was only bread and water for eighteen days and in addition he had to wear the parti-colour uniform, a sign of disgrace. He lost five hundred and forty remission marks and seven hundred and twenty class marks, three pounds in money off his dole, and to add to his discomfort three months in cross irons, fixing up both arms and legs. Think of this in the eighties ! This treatment induced a



good deal of suffering, so that at the end of the punishment it was necessary to move him to hospital. Even here he had to wear the cross irons night and day, for they were riveted on to his arms and feet.<sup>1</sup> After some months he was sent to Parkhurst, which was the establishment for sick prisoners.

He was discharged from Parkhurst in 1894, being too ill and broken down to be a public danger, but he had still eight years and twenty-one days to serve under police supervision, or ticket of leave. Foolish and helpless man ! He was brought up again in 1895, and Sir Charles Hall sentenced him to a month's imprisonment, which meant that he must complete the eight years in prison. He served four years at Parkhurst, and was then sent out in poor health.

Again, poor devil, at the Central Criminal Court in 1902, he was sentenced for burglary to seven years' penal servitude. This meant that he had to finish two years of his licence, making nine years in all. He was released on June 11, 1908, leaving three years and fifty days unexpired.

I have often wondered if it were not the duty of the State to place a lethal chamber in every prison for those who could not bear their burdens, and yet they seem inclined to cling to life with all its miseries. This is what Williams the Second wrote to me :—

" . . . if God will spare me till the first week in March next I shall know what freedom means, for it is forty one years since I knew what freedom was. My God what a life of crime misery and shame. Dear Sir, when he<sup>2</sup> thinks of his misspent life it seems like a nightmare. May God help me to live a clean life in the time to come, for God and myself only knows what he has suffered in the past for he has been half starved tormented kicked

---

<sup>1</sup> The author is quoting from Williams' letter. Such practices were common at that date.

<sup>2</sup> He often wrote of himself as " he," and rather mixes up " he " and " me."



flogged and bullied and driven in a most brutal manner, its a terrible life a convict leads in a prison."

Then follow a long list of severe punishments for comparatively trivial offences.

### *The Psychology of the Criminal.*

It is the fashion now not to depend on the old teaching which has stood the test of time, but to demand the new psychology of any problem pertaining to the human race.

What is the psychology of Williams the Second and what were his complexes that resulted in such a life of disaster? Williams' life makes a good test case, for he was a particularly dangerous criminal, and when arrested always put up a good fight. He usually carried a revolver, but his vanity would not let him use it, for he confined himself to his fists. Williams had a fair start in life, as his father had a good business. I fear that what incited Williams and many of our criminals of the same class is the Egocentric complex. This in common parlance is self-centring; selfishness with no thought for others. There is no sense of propriety or decent living, as another main complex is linked on, namely Freud's "pleasure principle." By this latter Freud maintains we may enjoy ourselves in any way we please, even with pleasures which are looked upon by most people as illegitimate. We see full measure of this principle to-day among the poor women in Russia, not to mention the girls on our own streets.

Another complex appears possibly as a result, the Vanity complex. I have hardly ever met a criminal who was not literally bursting with vanity. This does not mean that they are not liable to acute depression when by themselves, but when on show, or in court, or among their mates they are full of pride.

One noted criminal told me that people had stopped him in the streets to ask the honour of shaking hands



with him. All that *kudos* is a very small compensation for the misery the criminal experiences.

Williams' vanity of his family traditions made him quarrelsome, at times envious, perhaps jealous. It would hardly lead him to highway robbery and I do not think he was guilty of that offence. Justice used to be very lax. I once knew a man who running to a train was arrested for stealing a leg of mutton and got a month in prison ; yet he had never been in the street where the butcher's shop was, and was hurrying home to his own leg of mutton. It used to be the aim of the police to catch someone, and some magistrates seemed to enjoy downing a prisoner. This innocent man died some years later and left £50,000.

It was easy to understand how unruly and defiant Williams' conduct was in prison if he were innocent, with his vanity and pride urging him in the background. A consummate obstinacy and determination to war on society now seized him. He was a sheer devil. How do the new school explain the devilry in a criminal ? It is a blind force exerted against all humanity ; a perversion of ideas ; a miscalculation of what pays best ; a moral squint ; a despair for the past with utter hopelessness for the future. The old book that has described the human heart can explain it better than the new-fangled theories that cannot give a true scientific basis on which to work.

At that time Williams would not have accepted any religious sympathy or help. It was only after forty-one years of bullying, beating and chaining that he was reduced to a pulp, and gladly went to the Salvation Army for shelter. Many used to laugh at these performances and say that it was only when a criminal got too old that he went to the Salvation Army. That is quite true. But why not ? The Salvation Army knew this better than anyone, but if they could not rescue a man at 30, they were only too pleased to get him at 60. Discussing the past with Williams the Second, I asked him if he ever



thought his sufferings were due to his own folly and defiance? His reply was that no one spoke kindly to him, but probably he was quite unapproachable. At the time he remarked, "Why couldn't one man, even the parson, have spoken kindly to me like Commissioner Sturgess talks to me?" This saintly man is now passed over. He had a wonderful control over the worst of criminals and he had visited Williams in prison. I have often been amazed at the way the members of the Salvation Army got hold of these degenerates and others of better class, who had sunk deep into the mire. Many think that the religion of these converts is not sincere; that it is merely a cloak to gain favour. Such a possibility must be freely admitted, but let it continue, for at all events the public are thereby protected and the criminals are protected from themselves.

### DR. BJERRE ON THE PSYCHOLOGY OF MURDER.

An able Swedish barrister and professor, Dr. Bjerre, has made a study of criminal psychology.<sup>1</sup> He found three mental conditions which he considered to be the basis of the criminal mind:—

The first was self-deception, but his description suggests the justification which prisoners show. As a Freudian he regards it as the psychological way of escape for all thoughtless criminals, to produce a feeling of contentment with their surroundings. On the other hand many criminals on release give their views of the crimes they have been sentenced for and undoubtedly deceive themselves, for they cannot see themselves as others see them. They are out of true perspective or they would not be criminals, and their stories must be viewed in this light. It is crooked vision which leads to crime.

---

<sup>1</sup> "The Psychology of Murder." By Dr. Bjerre.



The second cause which Dr. Bjerre expresses, is fear, which is more apparent in prison, where there is no room for bravado. What he describes is mental and has been written about by German doctors as prison<sup>1</sup> paranoia and it often ends in dementia. It is very interesting where he points out that whereas the murderer in a love affair is intensely jealous of his rival, he has seldom any thought of killing him, but focuses his hatred on his lover and murders her.

Criminal psychology and prison psychology are two different things. There is not much self-deception nor fear outside. The third condition, shamming, however, does belong to the criminal before arrest. It is an unfortunate term, for it is used to indicate all the plotting necessary to screen the crime. We have plenty of examples in crimes reported every week, but usually the plot fails in one detail, which is like one prick in a balloon ; the result is failure and conviction. It takes a clever person to make a plot devoid of leakage ; in fact, frequently a lawyer must be employed to guide things, as is the custom in big financial frauds. Are the ruling authorities in the legal profession as careful of their honour as are our authorities, who turn down doctors oftentimes for amoral rather than immoral offences ? The case Dr. Bjerre gives shows elaborate letter-writing and blackmail, but fails. I fear the Swedish criminals are more clumsy and less clever than the English.

One very interesting matter is the exclusiveness of the peasant class in Sweden. They carry on for generations, always proud of their pedigree and their inherited, though small, domains ; but if one of their number marry the daughter of a labourer he is at once ostracized, and of course she is never received. How snobbish !

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* Chapter XV on Prison Psychology.



## RELIGION.

We have seen how far Freudian doctrines fit in with criminal psychology, without doing anything to make men lead better lives. By experience religion is *par excellence* the medicine to affect the criminal.

I carry no sectarian label, so feel more competent to press religion. During the war, as I did not approve of the line of action taken by the majority of the Society of Friends, the Quakers, I left them, with much pain. Honour be to the hundreds of young Quaker men who loyally fought for their country, and to the many who fell.

It will be observed that I say a great deal about religion as a palliative, and, if successful, it may have a curative result.

I don't mind what form of religion is used. Each form can be, and probably is, adapted to the mind most susceptible to it. Is it not a question of attraction and repulsion in different temperaments? They all make for goodness, and elevate those who believe. For those with poor mentalities and weak *moral*, in fact, the "submerged," is not emotional religion the medicine to prescribe? It is a great misfortune that religion is so much on the wane. The employment of religion explains why Holland and Belgium are so much in advance of us in penal methods, while the bright spots in Penology in our country are all associated with religion.

We see by the account of Williams the Second, the type of criminal and the punishment that obtained in the eighties. It was at this period that William Booth, preacher and psychologist, evolved his principle of the submerged tenth and proceeded to try and save them. I once said to the old General that his treatment was largely a matter of suggestion. He, with his usual cheery sense of humour, replied: "Thank God for suggestion; let us have more of it." Suggestion, with love and affection, plays a great part in such difficult and unselfish work;



so does the confessional, or "penitent form." The psychoanalyst claims to effect a cure if he can bring the secret trouble up to the level of consciousness. This is exactly the curriculum of the Salvation Army. Reformation, or, as it is called, "conversion" follows, or in psychological parlance, sublimation.

General Booth was a king among men. Like a beloved patriarch he took care of his sheep, providing food and numerous homes and colonies where he could shepherd those who were lost and destitute.

Here is an extract of a Salvation Army report concerning prison work: "That there must be punishment, and at times even severe punishment, is admitted, but it must not be administered for punishment's sake, nor merely to safeguard society as a whole however important that might be. The spirit of the individual offenders comes within the purview of the Salvationist who does not shut his eyes to facts, and who considers the case of the prisoner from all its bearings. He remembers that we all have antecedents, and that where we live, and how we live, and with whom we live are factors affecting our personal behaviour, and when he comes to the member of the Society who has broken the law of the land and is sentenced and is cast into prison, within his breast there burns a Christ-like passion to help, to reclaim and to save."

It is statements like this that make one long for a different atmosphere around those in control of the criminal world.

### *Mission Work.*

I remember many years ago meeting in prison a kindly white-haired gentleman, who was slipping into one cell after another. This was William Wheatley, looking for boys. Sometimes he took them from the Courts and sometimes from the cells. He told me he could do nothing with a boy unless he was down and wanted to be saved. In that case he gave the boy a good clean bed and wholesome food. Mr. Edward Wheatley found a place and started the boy off. He had two or three



homes, where the boys stayed until they were properly settled, oftentimes going to the Colonies. Many of these thousands the callous State would have cast into prison, dressing them up in broad arrows, shutting them into cells and sending them into the streets homeless and helpless. How many would have turned out like Williams the Second ?

Once I asked Mr. Wheatley if many of the boys ran away, for they could at all events steal their new clothes. He gave me a very proper answer, "Why should they ?" It is true that they had no reason to do so, for they had full liberty, good food and healthy recreations. It was indeed an object lesson. The authorities would have secured many of them in prison or in Borstal lest they would break out into further crime ; but these lads were normal ; they abhorred crime ; what they wanted was a home and parental care. Hundreds of these lads fought for us in the Great War, which showed a fine patriotism, considering that the State did nothing for them. Many came from the Colonies and several laid down their lives. It shows that Mr. Wheatley's religious training bore good fruit.

I was much interested in a particular *protégé* of Mr. Wheatley, and it makes interesting reading. Many years ago when Mr. Wheatley was at the prison gate to meet prisoners on discharge, a woman was waiting with a pretty child of six ; he spoke to both and suddenly a very brutal man emerged from the prison. The child cowed and clung to Mr. Wheatley's hand, saying with sobs, "I don't like my daddy." The result was that the child remained with Mr. Wheatley and the father went off with some of his old companions. The child was adopted, and after his education was completed he rose step by step until to day he is earning more than a thousand a year in a very responsible position.

There were several other cases of men in responsible positions, such as bank manager, all of whom were Mr. Wheatley's charges.



Mr. Wheatley's work was voluntary, for he supported himself out of his own business. He never used any of the subscriptions for his own purposes. The same remarks apply to General Booth, who had a small private income.

William Wheatley was a gold beater by trade. All the gilding round Buckingham Palace came from his workshop. He began his work among the poor and criminals in 1867. *The Times* in a memorial article (February 18, 1926) says: "When he began his work, boys were sent to prison for comparatively trivial first offences, and he made it his object to give them another chance of becoming good and useful citizens. The results which he showed undoubtedly helped to prepare the way for the passing of the First Offenders Act, 1887, which was followed by the Probation of Offenders Act, 1907. Mr. Wheatley founded his first home for juvenile offenders in 1887, and judges and magistrates have used it freely, sending boys to its shelter, care and training, instead of to prison. About 10,000 friendless juvenile offenders passed through Mr. Wheatley's hands, and the great majority of them have done well in after-life."

The mission is still as active as ever under the guiding of Mr. William Wheatley's son—Edward, who is a probation officer. It is more than tragic that every week shows that some magistrates and judges are still sending boys of sixteen and eighteen years of age to prison.

We must not forget that lovable court missionary, Thomas Holmes, who never locked his door at night and always left some food for an arrival. It is to the credit of some of these hardened lags that not in even one instance was he robbed.

### *The Residue.*

Everything is now tending towards sanity and humanity in dealing with criminals: but, however much improvement occurs there is always a residue, which is beyond hope or salvation. This is the experience of all organizations



that work among the "submerged tenth," and it will be very interesting to know if the final problem will be solved by psychology in another twenty years, or if it will not become a physiological problem of aiding healthy, normal children, and firmly repressing reckless breeding. A new treatment is on the way, namely, cleaning up the bodies, and restoring the glands to health. It has been tried in the observatoria in Belgium and Holland and has been begun in our asylums.

*Anatole France on Religion.*

In *Le Jardin d'Épicure*, M. Anatole France makes some excellent remarks *à propos* of this problem :

"A sustained argumentation on a complex subject will never prove anything except the cleverness of the mind that has conducted it. It must be that men have some suspicion of that great truth, since they never govern themselves by reasoning. They are led by instinct and feeling. They obey their passions, love, hatred, and especially salutary fear. They prefer religions to philosophies, and reason only to justify their evil propensities and their wicked actions to themselves, which is laughable, but pardonable. . . . Systems of philosophy have succeeded on account of the genius of their authors, without it ever having been possible to recognize in any one of them characteristics of truth which make it prevail over the others. In morals every opinion has been supported, and if several seem to agree, it is because moralists, for the most part, have been careful not to quarrel with the general sentiment and the common instinct. Pure reason, had they listened to nothing else, would have led them by various ways to the most monstrous conclusions, as we see in the case of certain religious sects, in certain heresies whose authors, over-excited by solitude, have despised the unreflecting consent of men. That holy and salutary truth that there exists for man a guide more sure than reason, and that he must hearken to the heart, is to be found at the bottom of every religion."



## Chapter II

---

### SUMMARY

#### CRIMINOLOGY.

Mrs. Thompson and Bywater.

#### DETERMINISM.

#### SIN AND CRIME.

Cain and Probation.

#### WHAT IS CRIME ?

#### CRIMINAL NEGLIGENCE.

The Road Hog.

#### RESPONSIBILITY.

#### THE MURDERER CAILLARD.

#### TYPES OF CRIMINALS.

The Highwaymen.

The Receiver.

The Financial Swindler and Pickpocket.

The Burglar.

Barrett, the Silver Thief.

#### TRAMPS.

#### LÈSE PATRIE.

### CRIMINOLOGY.

**C**RIMINOLOGY is perhaps the most interesting subject in social science, for it concerns all of us in one way or another. There is an endless interest in studying the causes that are more directly responsible for crime. The stories of old lags show one side of crime, namely, jail and the unsatisfactory "in and out" prison system. Crime is a psychological puzzle. Take the noted case of Mrs. Thompson and Bywater, which recently attracted so much notice. The details



are pretty well known of how Bywater struck down and murdered Mr. Thompson one dark night, Mrs. Thompson being party to the crime. Another view presents itself when you probe the unpublished part ; the part that is not considered in the Law court.

Here we have a woman, burning with passion and depraved emotion, fascinating a young man and, almost as if by hypnotism, leading him on to murder. This young man, though no saint, was not a murderer by intention. The woman twisted him according to her morbid and cruel will, and probably got satisfaction in watching his struggle to go straight and her will always bending him. The man was wrestling mentally, but was powerless in her grip. If she had escaped the gallows, she would have taken a savage pleasure in picturing his sufferings. Mrs. Thompson was a *sadiste* ; but more of this gruesome subject later. Bywater was possibly a clean young fellow till he met this awful woman, and how nobly he tried to take all the blame and die for her.

It was a position in which, if Mrs. Thompson, the control, said "You shall," her subject was unable to reply "I won't." This awakens the question of Free Will, which the new school of Psychologists affirm has no existence.

### DETERMINISM.

The new school of Psychology denies the existence of any moral sense as we know it. They have presented us with an old theory, that of Determinism, according to which every action is supposed to be the only possible response to the environment at that particular moment. Determinism brings us down to the level of the lower "creation" ; but when we introduce it into human affairs, it takes away the responsibility of the criminal, and in fact all responsibility. Punishment becomes injustice, as the criminal has no choice. Such a disconcerting position cannot possibly survive. In order to admit punishment, they allow experience to come into



play, which, they say, does influence conduct. The necessary experience which they prescribe for the criminal is punishment, so that when a similar temptation or environment recurs the past experience will be associated with it. Their attitude is wholly illogical and contradictory. If the criminal resists temptation from whatever cause, surely he employs free will, and Determinism falls to the ground. Freud is strong in this opinion that any particular act, which includes crime, is determined by the effect of the environment on the instinctive desire or emotion. There is abundant evidence that those who have knowledge and education, plus experience, should be capable of free will. Where we find free will non-existent is in amentia or non-development of the higher brain centres, especially Bolton's area, the prefrontal.

Let us further examine the new psychology and the Freudian dogmas and see whether they apply more to the criminal type than to normal, or more correctly, ordinary man. The Freudians have established to their own satisfaction that :—

- (1) There is no God.
- (2) That conscience is a nervous symptom only found in neurotics.
- (3) That good deeds are only done to gain the praise of onlookers.
- (4) That we are governed or receive our urge from our sexual emotions.
- (5) That all mental energy is an overflow of sexual energy.
- (6) That we are allowed to live for our own pleasures regardless of what it costs to others.
- (7) That religion is a myth and a delusion.
- (8) That there is no such thing as free will.
- (9) That we are governed by the principles of Determinism.

The Determinist theory was held by Locke and Hobbes but dates back much further. Aristotle was no



determinist for he defined virtue as the result of deliberate choice as a man of sense would choose, which implies purely voluntary mental processes. Virtue to the ancients meant a state of moral excellence, thus including all that goes to make up a good life.

If we accept the dogmas of the new psychology and can read them into a man, that man is a criminal, most certainly *in posse* as the lawyers term it, but probably *in esse*.

### SIN AND CRIME.

There is a certain relationship between sin and crime which merits consideration. Sin is the abnormal expression of man's overpowering natural emotions. We must in this inquiry ignore the ultra-religious literature which deals with sin and punishment, some of which for want of balance fails in its purpose. The Bible is a wonderful book and its historical accuracy is increasingly demonstrated, since recent excavations cannot be questioned; but its main value rests on its wholesome psychology, which is presented as it were in pictures. The history of Cain gives us our first lead in justice and criminal reform. Presuming that I am conversing with Deists, I will describe the Mosaic story, or call it allegory. After Cain killed Abel, his brother, the Lord was wroth and punished Cain with the curse that he should be a fugitive and a vagabond. The result was that Cain, suffering from fear, cried out, "My punishment is greater than I can bear," "and it shall come to pass that everyone that findeth me shall slay me." Too often punishment provokes defiance in the criminal, but with Cain there was remorse, which ought to be the immediate result in the heart of every evil doer. In consequence the Lord showed mercy in that he offered Cain protection, as we do to the accused and even to the guilty. What happened? The Lord said, "Therefore, whosoever slayeth Cain, vengeance shall be taken on him sevenfold." After showing remorse and penitence, Cain



was put on probation, the first recorded case of the kind. Truly, how little man changes in five or ten thousand years!

Does not the ancient prayer in Sanskrit express our position more clearly than do the neo-psychologists? At the funeral pyre the Brahmin recites, "Oh, thou spirit who art no longer; the parts of thine earthly body are to be consumed; for that body was replete with passions and with ignorance, and to thy good deeds it added many which were sinful and wrong. May the Supreme King forgive thy sins, wilful or unwitting, and allow thee to ascend the heights above."

Sin and crime would appear to be relative terms. It is often a question of degree or intensity, but to-day Law has made a wide gulf between sin or wickedness and crime. Through the weakness of human nature we are all sinners and are we not all potential criminals? Sin is natural to man, whereas crime and misdemeanour are more or less artefacts, or social products, and they are treated by society on defensive lines for its own protection. Law is thereby regulated by the demands of society and only touches morality and justice at points. As society ascends through evolution so does law develop on more normal lines. An instance occurred lately, in the summer of 1927, where law was in direct conflict with justice and morality. In Sierra Leone a slave owner claimed the right to re-capture two of his slaves, but the Court would not allow it. The slave owner appealed to a higher court, and the Judge reluctantly gave consent on point of law. There appears to have been a complicated mixture of rights attending the conditions of the Protectorate, some of which allowed slavery in certain areas, on condition that the slaves were treated kindly; but it is doubtful if that be possible in any condition of forced labour. The furor aroused in the British Press induced our Government rapidly to change these conditions and abolish slavery; thus morality and justice came off triumphant over law.



## WHAT IS CRIME ?

When a definition is required of a substance such as iron, or copper, or oxygen, certain properties are ascribed, which cannot be added to or subtracted from. Such a definition is precise, accurate and scientific. Dealing with psychic problems, whether the instinct of the bee or the mentality of man, we find ourselves on a moving platform or an unstable quicksand.

The question in this treatise arises, what is crime and who are the criminals? The derivation is from the old Saxon word "*crimen*," an offence, or from the Latin "*crimen*" of similar meaning. That appears simple and resolves a crime into an offence against society or one's fellow men, either individually or collectively. We thus include the common thief, the murderer, the dishonest financier and company promoter, the communist and strike leader who are out to win by terror rather than by reason, and indeed those out for wrong-doing but who by some chance fail in their attempt.

No one could accept such a description as final. Mercier defines crime as "conduct injurious to society" and regards it as "the preponderance of self regarding conduct."<sup>1</sup> He writes further that "every crime is an act or omission by which the criminal seeks his own gratification at the expense of some injury to the society to which he belongs."<sup>2</sup> Mercier writes according to the general principle of what crime truly is or ought to be. Dr. Goring,<sup>3</sup> on the other hand, regards crime as an act meriting conviction and punishment; and he deals with convicts rather than criminals in the wider sense. This medico-legal view entails a limited classification and outlook, for the number of criminals who are convicted is very small; a ratio of about one conviction to five or six accusations.

---

<sup>1</sup> "Crime and Criminals," p. 92.

<sup>2</sup> "Crime and Criminals," p. 144.

<sup>3</sup> "The English Convict."



To-day crime is considered only in its legal sense. Sir Fitzjames Stephen says that crime is an act or omission that the law punishes.<sup>1</sup> This thesis is open to serious objection for the simple reason that law alters and is frequently bad law. As Mercier points out, the pedlar, who breaks the law and gets a week in prison for not renewing his license, is surely not a criminal? A nursemaid was fined for wheeling a perambulator on the pavement, and as she had no money was sent to prison. Had she committed a crime? And what about an ambassador who suppresses his orders and brings his country into conflict? Surely that is a crime, but it is not punishable.

Leaving international crime, of which we have had such grievous examples, what about the social aspect of crime? The customs of society, which is always in flux, largely determine what is crime at any particular period. The result is that to-day minor defaults are called "offences," but sometimes they are dealt with as crimes. The debtor who has no money may be put in prison, not for the crime of poverty, but by a shuffling of law, for contempt of court. He is sentenced for the offence of not paying up what the judge orders!

The Law cleaves in two the ethics of sin and crime. To be eugenic, the relationship should be maintained.

When society reaches such a stage of growth that someone takes over its direction and a government is formed, law appears as an instrument of control and protection. Thus Jurisdiction holds sway over social customs which have developed during the evolution of civilization. Society introduces and maintains certain of these which should be of value to the individual and to the population. Crime is an offence against these customs. It is here that Jurisprudence steps in.

Jurisprudence considers what is right and just in relation to the State, and equally and impartially what is fair

---

<sup>1</sup> "The History of Criminal Law."



to the individual. Jurisdiction has no knowledge or idea of what is right or just, but only administers the law, good, bad, or stupid. Truly at times "the law is a ass." Conflict results between the law as it is and the law as it ought to be. While crime is that which *is* forbidden by law, Jurisprudence says that what is injurious to society or to the individual *ought* to be forbidden by law. It gives us a principle to guide us instead of the rule of custom, which is the common basis of jurisdiction. The term Jurisprudence is derived from the Latin words *jus*, *juris*, law; and *prudens*, or *providens*, prudent, or foreseeing. It offers Law that is dictated by wisdom, caution, and discretion. We thereby obtain a conception of what crime really is.

### CRIMINAL NEGLIGENCE.

Dr. Charles Mercier, who wrote on criminal responsibility, held the view that intention played a great part in the decision of criminality. Thus, in a quarrel, if a man pointed a loaded gun at another he would become a murderer by intention. He may have restrained himself at the last moment, or perhaps the trigger would not act, which saved him from the law, but by his purpose and intention he committed a criminal act, in fact a murder, and ought to be punished. So also with the reckless road-hog, who has no kind mission, like the doctor or the fire-engine, to justify his speed, being out only for self-gratification.

Juries are very unwilling to return a verdict of criminal negligence, and as there is a great need of clear thinking on this problem, I will make no apology for introducing the subject of motor car accidents, as a test case.

There are about one thousand fatal accidents in London alone in one year, and about twenty to thirty times that number of less serious accidents. A great deal is made of the carelessness of the pedestrian, the underdog, who has the full right of user, and, indeed, contributes to the maintenance of the road. A judge has actually said in



Court that the pedestrian has the right to tie up his boot-laces in the midst of traffic. On the other hand, some motorists act as if the pedestrians have no rights. It is often a matter of extreme difficulty in a motor accident to decide fairly if there has been criminal negligence on the part of the driver, or contributory negligence on the part of the pedestrian.

A suitable punishment, to act as a deterrent, must be thought out. If full restitution were made, the road sense, the responsibility and care for others, would develop. The fear of consequences keeps most of us from the outskirts of crime.

To-day, the improvement in firearms renders the motor bandit a positive menace to society. He should never be allowed a second chance, and, if very brutal, should receive a death sentence. Are we not eugenically stupid in allowing criminals to dwell in such undisturbed peace until some startling crime is committed ?

### RESPONSIBILITY.

Responsibility, according to the materialistic basis, is not an inward power, either mental or spiritual, but is the reflection of society at any particular period. A century ago we were too harsh on criminals ; to-day, society has assumed a different attitude towards both the criminal and the insane. Responsibility becomes a question of social evolution in the direction of what is convenient to the majority. The new school of psychology consider that the principles of morality and good conduct are the result of conditions built up by good and great men—saints—through many generations. This idea forms a good supplement to the doctrine that we are descended from apes, gradually ascending mentally ; but it will require a good deal of scientific demonstration to eradicate the belief in the higher spiritual nature of man, which presumably rules his life, and through which he evolves the sense of responsibility.

If we watch the bee or the ant, we see determinism in



full force, but we must admit the same in the life of every flower of the field. Each flower moves or reacts according to its environment. Different is it if we take man's most faithful friend, the dog. While we see evidences of determinism in its life, there are times when it acts contrary to the circumstances of the moment, and that is free will, determined by reckoning up fully its surroundings, and, guided by experience, making a free choice of how it will act. However much new psychology reduces us to mere reactions, those amongst us who have education, judgment, and self-control, give evidence of free will. On the other hand, the mentally weak and degenerate show an absence of self-control, and therefore of responsibility. These form the bulk of the criminal masses with whom we are dealing.

As an illustration of this class, I will give the history of the rather noted murderer, Caillard.

#### THE MURDERER CAILLARD.

Here is a classical case, which might be explained by the theory of Determinism. He falls into the blood-thirsty class of criminals, but most probably was mentally affected. Caillard was a Frenchman who, at the age of 27, murdered a family.<sup>1</sup> The French seem rather addicted to this wholesale style. It was in 1898 that he murdered the mother, grandmother, and three children, thus wiping out the family. The learned President of the *Cour d'Assises* summed up the situation in excellent terms. He said: "You were remarkable from your childhood for perverse actions. You hacked young trees; you put stones on the railway line to throw the trains off; you passed your nights in marauding, and your days in stealing from shop fronts; you were sly and hypocritical; you were considered capable of anything. For years you have roved from factory to factory, leaving the worst records everywhere. At 18 you were sentenced for theft;

---

<sup>1</sup> "The Criminal Mind," p. 110. De Fleury.



and five times since for the same crime." So far, this concerns the prisoner's self. Now for what he is not responsible for: the reason for his being a criminal. "You are the son of the stone mason, who was a drunkard, and died in an asylum at Lisieux; your mother had not a good reputation in point of morals; it is certain that you have had a bad education." This judge was a wholesome-minded psychologist, for he combined inheritance and environment, which manufactured this revolting character, and demonstrated the theory of Determinism. Caillard reacted to his environment. If he was attracted by shop fronts, he stole, and probably was led by a perverted imagination to wreck trains for the sake of plunder. These mental weaklings are easily irritated and inflamed, and react to their surroundings with violence and murder.

Determinism fosters a new theory in psychic affairs, a theory of attraction and its opposite, repulsion. I once heard of an intelligent man who lived under circumstances of attraction in three directions. In chapel he was a fervent worshipper. Here was the attraction of religion through the building and the general atmosphere of the company. In his office he was the promoter of bogus companies, and felt no hesitation, or even sorrow, in taking money from someone who could ill afford it, for in the business atmosphere attraction of gold changed him into a criminal. There was yet another sphere of attraction, the Bench, and there he was not only just, but kind and merciful. He lived, as it were, between three magnets. On the Bench and in the chapel he must have abhorred and repelled the doings in his office; whilst by repulsion he must have shut all religion out of his fraudulent practices. Later, he had time for meditation in the prison cell.

### TYPES OF CRIMINALS.

Every age or period has its own type of crime. Before railways were in use, and we had the magnificent family equipages, highway robbery was almost an industry. The



highwaymen would make a show of firearms to expedite business, but in some cases they treated their victims politely and almost with sympathy. In those days violence on the part of criminals was extreme and was dealt with by unreasonably brutal punishments, usually death, oftentimes hanging with quartering before they were actually dead.

To-day crime is more of an industry than a century ago, and specialism has evolved in the criminal ranks as much as in normal trading circles. Among burglars there are many types. We have the night visitor; the thief who enters when the family is at dinner; the man who calls in the morning, ostensibly for an order for coal, like my poor old friend, Barrett, and finds his way to the silver. Yet none of these would stoop to pick a pocket; more probably would they aid the police in chasing a pick-pocket. Such a case I have known. The coiner would never forge, nor the forger coin, while the company promoter moves in the highest society, where, indeed, he finds his victims. From one point of view the criminal of to-day is more polished and better dressed than a hundred years ago, when poverty was more prevalent and their methods were rough and ready.

Let us go back a century and see the type of criminal then existing.

Here is an interesting account, chosen quite casually out of the *Newgate Calendar*.<sup>1</sup> The title is: "The exploits and adventures of William Shelton, who was hanged at Tyburn for robbing on the highway."

He was born of respectable parents at Cheshunt, in Hertfordshire, and "received a liberal education in the learned languages," later being apprenticed to an apothecary at Enfield and Stoke Newington. He married and had a fair income, but things went wrong and he deserted his wife. Being distressed at not being able to keep himself "he determined to turn highwayman." One day he hired

---

<sup>1</sup> Vol. II, p. 224, original edition.



a horse and pistols, and rode to Finchley Common, but had poor luck. He "took about thirty shillings from four ladies whom he stopped in a coach, and three shillings and sixpence from a gentleman he met on the road." Soon after this he put on a mask and robbed passengers of watches and money in a stage coach in Epping Forest. Some persons on horseback pursued him as far as Waltham Abbey, but he went by Cheshunt to London. His pursuers got on a different road to Enfield and so missed him. A Jew bought the watches. Later Dr. Shelton rode to Hounslow Heath, where he demanded a gentleman's money, and thus acquired thirty-two guineas. Then he crossed the Thames and dined at Richmond, and afterwards stopped two ladies in a coach on Putney Common, but got no booty from them, as they had just been robbed by another highwayman. On the same evening he robbed a quaker of nine pounds, and early the following morning stopped the Northampton stage, and robbed the passengers of twenty-seven pounds. This accretion of wealth allowed him to rejoin his gambling companions.

Expecting to meet a colonel he knew, he next rode to Chiswick. They exchanged shots; the highwayman demanded the colonel's money and got fifty pounds. Thus, in a lively way, the nights were all much alike. At Finchley Common he got booty of ten guineas, some silver, and two gold watches, but he was chased by some gentlemen on horseback. This necessitated concealment in a field at Enfield Chase, and when they had passed he started for London, robbing *en route* a lady and gentleman at Muswell Hill of forty shillings.

He was usually styled Dr. Shelton, being an apothecary, and "the name of Shelton was now become so eminent that many other robbers courted his acquaintance." The doctor was evidently proud, for he would have nothing to do with the small fry of the profession.

In one evening he robbed several coaches at Hounslow, getting as much as £90. "He became so notorious that



a proclamation was issued for taking Shelton into custody, and he was recognized in Hertfordshire, where he was in hiding, and conveyed to London, where he was convicted of several robberies and sentenced to die. In prison he affected great gaiety and entertained visitors to stories of his deeds ; but he was reduced to tears when the warrant for his execution arrived."

He was hanged at Tyburn on October 9, 1732, having refused to perform the customary devotions at the place of execution. He was one of the most successful highwaymen, but he had an unusually short run.

Here is another example of short-lived highwaymanship. In Vol. I of the *Newgate Calendar*, an account is given of a young man, John Smith, who was born near Gloucester and brought up to the business of peruke-making ! But he was idle and extravagant and drifted to London, where he met one of his own type. On Sunday, October 29, 1704, they proceeded to Paddington, where, looking over a stile, they saw the gallows which were always left standing at Tyburn. This curbed his zeal, but he soon started robbery and on November 6 he attacked a gentleman's carriage on Finchley Common. Here he was pursued and caught and was "capitally convicted" and sentenced to death. He was executed at Tyburn on December 20, 1704, after a "run" of eight days. A reprieve arrived after he had been suspended a few minutes, but it was too late.

When these villains were caught, the punishment was always at the gallows, to which they surrendered as heroes amid the cheers of the onlookers, for there was some sport and cleverness in their profession.

Highwaymen are replaced to-day by motor bandits.

Receivers are criminals produced by the society of to-day and they keep up the profession of burglary. Burglary itself is hardly worth pursuing, unless for the passing excitement. It is a poorly-paid profession. Many burglars have deplored to me the poverty of their calling. One of the most successful told me that he had



stolen more than £10,000 worth of valuables, but had not gained more than £500. He would have done better sweeping the streets. He is still poor and has to thief in a way contemptible for such a high-class criminal. Thus, though well over 70, and with forty-five years of actual prison life behind him, he may still be described as on the active list.

Crime has become much more respectable in some directions and is carefully thought out. It is a kid-gloved, well-dressed industry, chiefly undertaken by men of little education, who have sprung from the lower ranks, but who have attractive manners and soon gain the confidence of their plentiful victims.

#### *The Financial Swindler.*

The law appears to the layman almost to absolve this new type of accomplished criminal from responsibility, either of word or deed. The swindling company promoter is just as much a criminal as the man who has been sentenced for picking your pocket of a hundred golden sovereigns. Sailing close to the wind, he often manages to relieve you of a larger amount of money by his plausibility and without damage even to his name. The reason for this difference in the efficiency of the law is due to the complicated nature of proof required in the case of the dishonest company promoter, who usually has the aid of an extra-astute lawyer to enable him to walk along the border-line which separates legal honesty, which may be dishonesty, from roguery. Proof of dishonesty is so technical and difficult that the injured individual is disinclined to go to the expense of seeking redress, and unwilling to advertise the fact that he has been taken in. The dishonest trickster trades on these conditions with unlimited success. We have to remember that the clever, gentlemanly swindler places everything before his victim, which, though actually false, is plausible, whereas the pickpocket gives no such chance. Then we have to remember the third brain, an unknown quantity, namely, the judge who tries the case.



We are all anxious for something for nothing, and the law declines to defend fools under any conditions. It would seem that stricter legislation and greater supervision of joint stock companies is called for; and when it is noticed that a man, or a group of men, are concerned in transactions of a doubtful character, full investigation should be possible by a judicial or semi-judicial body. Meanwhile it pays the respectable criminal to play with such fools, besides supplying a good deal of practical interest to the legal profession.

It is admitted on all hands that our bench of judges is to-day as pure and uncorrupt as any in the world. Is it possible to hope that this high opinion is generally held by the laymen, of practising lawyers? At the present time, many in the business world feel that the bigger financial swindler is often greatly aided by the "shady man of law." We all realize that there are black sheep in every flock, and just as we read of shady doctors, so we know of unscrupulous lawyers. Are the legal governing bodies as careful of the honour of their members as are the corresponding medical corporations? Are they careful to protect the public from members of their profession "covering" dishonest company promoters?

It would only be playing the game if every convicted financial swindler were made to forfeit all his money, towards repaying his victims; and the sentences should be in proportion to the crime, in some cases detention for life, where the swindler can fascinate or hypnotize investors. The sentence of five or seven years is surely too short, as the convict often comes out to enjoy an immense hoard accumulated in his criminal days. It makes one doubt if in the City honesty is the best policy.

In common law there are such types as accessories to the main crime or accessory after the fact. In great swindles there are several accessories to the crime. There are the confidential clerks, who are as guilty as the man who holds the bag for the burglar, or keeps watch



during his act of theft. Then there is, in some cases, the wife, or paramour, on whom the stolen funds are settled, guarding them till his release from prison. Ought not all these to be treated as accessories to the crime and made to share the penalty, that is, prison? If accessories were properly dealt with the master mind would have less chance of success.

### *The Burglar.*

The ordinary lay mind does not appreciate the difference between the common pickpocket and the bogus company promoter of good appearance, though the latter is a bigger prey on society. The criminal classes regard their own nefarious practices entirely from the business point of view, and as no worse than those of the company promoter. Many burglars have told me that they do not think there is anything wicked, in the biblical sense, in their actions. They look upon all property as common, which is probably correct. If they abstain from violence they regard themselves as saints. Society is their natural enemy, so they will "have their own back," and there is a thin line of justice running through the argument. One retired burglar, who was a great favourite in our family, told me of a burglary in Bedford Square in company with a mate, Lester, who was executed later. The residents were from home, and on the second floor they met the housekeeper. Lester, raising his jemmy, said: "Let's kill her." The poor woman begged for her life. My acquaintance, Barrett, interposed and checked the would-be murderer, and promised the woman she would not be touched if she allowed them to escape, which they did with their loot. The two burglars never went out again together, for my friend abhorred such a brutal companion.

### *Barrett, the Silver Thief.*

This poor man, Barrett, had rather a pathetic history. At the age of 12, seventy-four years ago, after stealing a pound, he was turned out of the house and told by his



father not to return, which order he carried out. I found on inquiry that as a child he always pilfered from the cupboard, which is a common habit, even among well-to-do children. It is really an instinct, that of self-preservation, and when unchecked we find the public schoolboy robbing his fellow students. This smart, nice-looking boy was soon picked up by professional thieves, and had the mischievous satisfaction of passing his father unrecognized in Regent Street, and actually picking his pocket as the father stood looking in a shop window.

The young thief saw advertisements for his return, and his mother, who died soon after, appeared to him in a vision and begged him to go home. This is, of course his own story. He became a very troublesome thief, and, being the son of a silversmith, developed into the most expert silver thief in London. He would model certain articles in imitation of expensive silver goods and change them over the counter, usually with the aid of his valet. Another trick was to cover a brass watch chain with a thin layer of gold and sell it as gold. If a dealer wanted to test it with acid or a file, the trickster would threaten him with the law ; that is, if it proved gold the dealer must keep it at its full value on account of damaging it, whereas now he offered it at a great reduction. He was so clever that he usually sold his goods, and if the police made one district too hot, he would move to another.

He told me of one robbery in Camden Road, N.W., where he and a friend forced the back door on a Sunday evening when everyone had gone to church. The thieves were very disappointed and so consoled themselves with the supper which was prepared for the family. At the final search they examined the top drawer of a wardrobe and found a tin box with eighty sovereigns. Then they hurried off and hailed a cab. As the vehicle drove off they saw the family enter the house.



This poor criminal spent thirty years in prison, and at a time when it was a very uncomfortable residence.

Towards the end of his days Barrett used to come and see me when "times was 'ard," and when he reached 80 he developed heart failure. I persuaded him to go into the workhouse, and only recently came across a letter from him to my wife, saying how kind everyone was to him, and describing the luxury of the Christmas dinner: "hot roast beef, baked potatoes and vegetables, followed by Christmas pudding, and as much as you could eat."

I was rather satisfied, as he died without relations, that his body was handed over to the anatomists. He thereby repaid part of his debt to the community.

Barrett was a good man, only with too broad ideas on social problems, the *meum* and the *tuum*. He was of a kindly disposition and refined manners; in fact I used to think what a nice deacon or churchwarden he would make in my surtout. I rather think he fancied himself.

### TRAMPS.

In the popular mind tramps or vagrants are associated with the criminal classes. Tramps are not as a rule criminals. They are born-tireds, mentally deficient, usually of temperate habits, harmless and with too little imagination to indulge in active crime. These weak-minded people cannot keep pace with civilization. House rent, local rates and super-tax frighten them, so they will have none of it. The tramp likes the open sky for his roof, the hayrick for his bed, and to live free of anxiety for to-morrow. If his larder is empty, who amongst us would grudge him a bit of chicken or a cutlet, for he is a dainty feeder? Fortunately his wants are few. He is as suggestible as a child, and this very suggestibility at times rouses him to fury, and then we may have a highly explosive mixture.

There always have been tramps. Queen Isabella very much objected to meeting them on her drives, so at



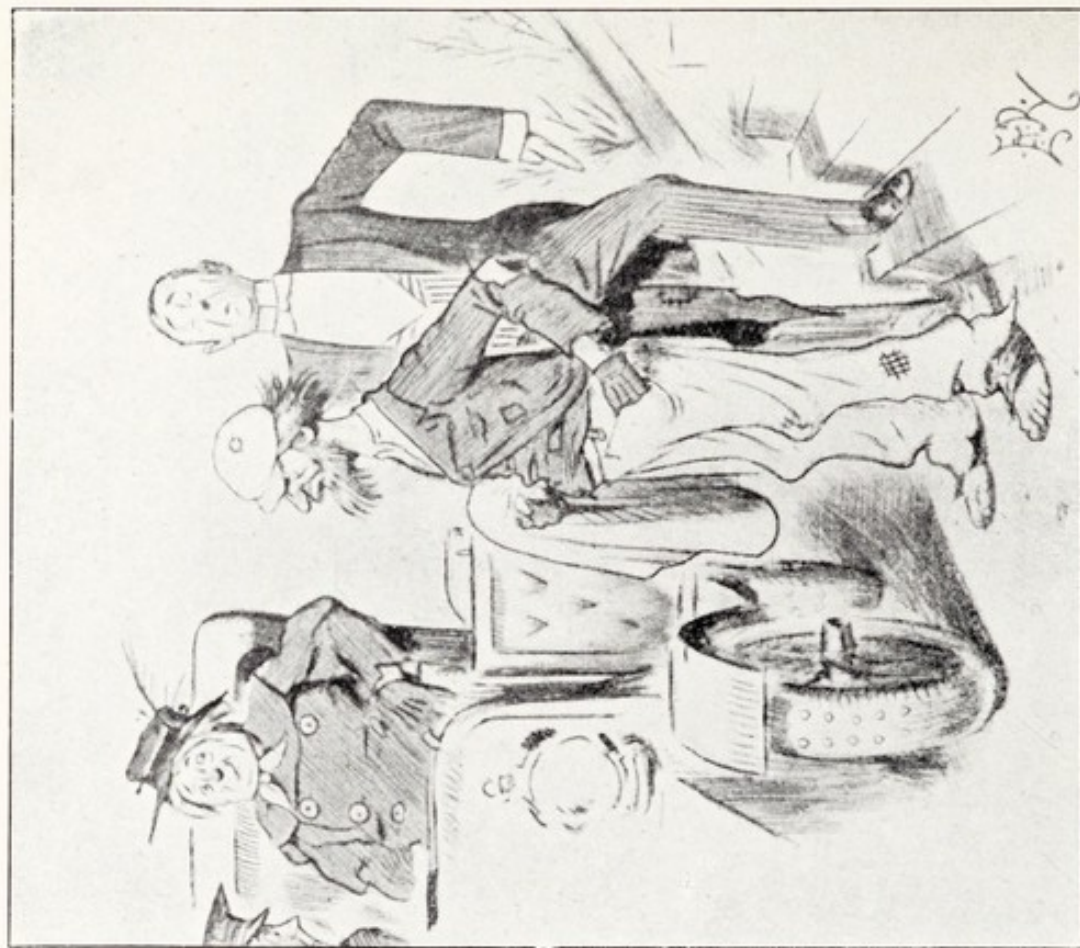


## THE LEISURED CLASSES.

Dr. Albert Wilson, in a recent lecture, had a good word to say for tramps: "They were not really a very bad class; they corresponded to the country gentleman."



"Don't know 'ow it is,—I seems dead haff my 'drive,' some'ow! ab-serlootly rotten!!"



"Nothink much in the way o' distance this mornin', Blériot—not more 'n about two or three 'undred mile; 'cos we've got a Bridge party lither-hon."



"Top o' my form this mornin'! simply cawn't miss 'em!  
It's as heasy as kiss my 'and'!"



"Bein' a J.P. I allus likes to put in an appearance hevery  
naow and agen. Goo' mornin', Constable."

(Reproduced by kind permission from *Punch*.)





Granada she had a large prison built in which to confine them. It is there to-day and looks like a fortress. In Belgium they do better, for they do not allow tramps. When the police meet a tramp, he has to show where he is going to. If for employment, they assist him; or if hoping to get employment they will keep him in a colony till he succeeds, but if he is just an ordinary tramp he goes into a beggar colony, a charity institution at Merxplas, where he must work.

Tramps are undoubtedly a nuisance, and we have not paid much attention to the problem. Their neglected toilet and general appearance give us the feeling that they are the vermin of society. They are thus on a different plane from the criminal population, who in fact despise the tramp.

The drink traffic would disappear if it depended for its income upon tramps, or even on criminals, for the latter require clear heads to carry on their profession. In addition to the genuine weak-minded tramp, we have the pseudo-tramp, that is, the inferior workman who never can keep a job for long, and is necessarily a good deal "on the road."

At a lecture to a medical temperance association, The Society for the Study of Inebriety, I described the tramp as a country gentleman. He enjoys the country, the woods and the valleys, in summer; while in winter he lives in a sort of palace, the "stone jug" with liveried servants, good food and an even, warm temperature. He so arranges his offence in November that he will be discharged in early summer. It is a beau-ideal existence for the born-tired.

The subject of the lecture was "Alcohol in Relation to Crime," and I pointed out that criminals were frequently abstainers, especially in the skilled branches of the profession. The tramp as a rule is not a heavy drinker, probably because he is so much in the open air.

In some way my remarks found their way to *Punch*, that great educator of the British people, and with their



kind permission the explanatory cartoon appears in the frontispiece.

### LÈSE PATRIE.

We all know what *lèse-majesté* means and how sternly it has been put down, especially in foreign countries. *Lèse-majesté* hardly has an existence in our country because the royals have lived in sympathy and fellowship with their people.

But we have a worse weed in our midst—*lèse patrie*. It grows rank and in profusion. We regard it with indifference, although it is a menace and a danger. Other countries are more on the alert. Recently France has sent a communist deputy to prison for thirty years for promoting disaffection in the army. Several others have had shorter sentences. During the War I censured a Quaker relative, a pacifist, for trying to persuade soldiers not to fire or to fire above the heads of the enemy. No religion can justify such interference.

Then we have the great strikes among the working class. I fully admit the working men have had, and still have, great grievances against their employers, but they have no right to bring trouble on the whole country. Any man or group of men who practise *lèse patrie* must be regarded as criminals of a very serious type.

This form of crime has grown since the masses have received equal governing power, without being educated up to their responsibilities. Communist Sunday schools should be sternly repressed, for no one has the right to poison young minds, and indeed we all should take part in training and guiding the young. It is the duty of the country to act in sympathy with the labouring classes, to ameliorate their condition, to train them, to enter into their home life and explain to them the principles and duties of civil life. Parliament must busy itself in putting labour on a proper basis in relation to capital. Some of the enormous profits are equally due to brawn as to brain, and that fact must be recognized. When I



was young, I have seen children of 10 and 12 years of age going down the pits for a twelve-hour day or night. That was slavery. But even to-day a working-man lives on the edge of a precipice, and through no fault of his own may fall, or be pushed over. I never feel able to blame one of the lower classes either thieving or becoming a downright criminal.

Quite recently things have improved. The community pays the fee for the labourer's birth, his mother having previously been cared for at public expense. Clinics watch over his growth, and he can have as good doctoring as the rich man's child. What happens later spells disaster. He is driven into a miscalled education department, and crammed with facts difficult to remember, and of no use in after-life. This, since the eighties, by ruining the starved, undeveloped brains, has been the main source of our national inefficiency.<sup>1</sup>

The great need for the masses is that, when ill or too old to work, they should be allowed sufficient wherewith to live in reasonable comfort. The fear of the workhouse or starvation must be terrible to bear. On the other hand, no doles should be given without some work being done in exchange. To instil beggary and cadging, instead of a spirit of independence, is to foster crime. It is a political game, and I think we all recognize that some politicians are out for themselves rather than for the country.

---

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter XXIV—Letter by Sir Robert Armstrong-Jones, M.D.



## Chapter III

---

### SUMMARY

MISDIRECTED INSTINCTS.

THE PROCUREUR.

SADISM.

Jack the Ripper and the Like  
Verenzi.

Stigmata.

Causes of Sex Anomalies.

Vidal, the Murderer of Girls.

### MISDIRECTED INSTINCTS.

I HAVE alluded to theft and murder and will now touch on sexual crime. Murder has an intimate connection with sexual aberrations, more so than with theft.

There lie in the human breast or, more correctly, at the base of the human brain, the two main sources of human energy ; the instinct of self-reproduction and that of self-preservation.

It is the misdirection or perversion of these instincts or emotions that brings us into the region of crime. Self-preservation calls for acquisitiveness ; it fosters the desire for possession ; it may necessitate theft in the case of the needy ; and when dealing with groups or nations it may mean war. Normal sexual relations spell health and happiness ; but, unfortunately, the uncontrolled or perverted forms lead to suffering, poverty and crime.

The Zulus, before they were conquered and alcoholized, formed a virtuous nation, and virtue engenders courage. We all know what athletes and courageous fighters they



FIG. 2.—A group of most revolting perverts and weak-minded degenerates, kept in a colony. No cure, the only proper treatment is painless extinction. We must stop this type breeding by sterilization.





were. Many tribes existed among them, some of whom were polygamous, but they always punished irregularities, even visiting death upon the seducer, who was regarded as a disturber of family life.

In our country we do not pay enough attention to seduction. If a girl be over eighteen years of age it is not a crime, and if below it is comparatively easy for the seducer to escape punishment. A seducer is one of the worst enemies to the community. If there be a child born, the only remedy is for the girl's father, as employer of his daughter, to sue for damages for loss of services. If the girl's father die before the child be born, her mother has no claim, nor rights. This is law, but surely very bad law.

In Belgium seduction (*viol*) under age is regarded as a crime, in fact as rape, and treated accordingly. The whole question distinctly requires more attention, as the old feudal sentiment prevails that women or girls are but as cattle. If we can keep the poor man's home clean and his girls pure, we shall certainly diminish the increase of criminals.

Illegitimacy is a source of a great deal of social disturbance, and yet how many of our best people are illegitimate. The recent legislation allowing of legitimization under certain conditions is an important move in the right direction.

### THE PROCUREUR.

Every civilized country is well supplied with procureurs, who carry on the white slave traffic. They are the worst of all criminals. This traffic has diminished since the War, as it was chiefly in German hands. I came across a typical but remarkable case some twenty years ago, where two girls were decoyed by advertisements to situations in South America. The parents made inquiries and thought all was right. A young Englishman, visiting his usual "bawdy house," made the acquaintance of one of these girls, and, finding her in great distress,



acted honourably and after a fight rescued her. The girl's story was that they were met at the railway station by two women, apparently ladies, and evidently by arrangement they were separated. She was kept under lock and key, but her girl friend has not been heard of since, nor can she be traced.

The man in the street, of course, replies: "Serve them right for their stupidity." Unfortunately, we are all more or less stupid, nor is that the right way to look at it. Many girls amongst us are mentally only equal to children, and require our protection and are entitled to it.

### SADISM.

A chapter on the criminal would not be complete without allusion to this unsavoury subject. The name is derived from the Marquis of Sade, a cruel, degenerate, sexual pervert. There is a great deal of literature on the subject, which is eagerly devoured, showing the morbid tendencies that exist.

It is recorded that Tiberius, Nero and the Cæsars, as well as many well-known historical characters, suffered from this complaint. The stories about them are too revolting to be reproduced here, for it is well known there are such psychological phenomena as imitation and suggestion, which influence the unstable.

Morel<sup>1</sup> records some of these types. Among them there was one, Gilles de Rays, a French noble who, by reading the Latin works of Suetonius, became morally infected with this disorder. With the help of others he obtained small female children, whom he threw into a vat and by night transferred them in a box or boxes to Machecoul, where he burned them alive. They were murdered in a room in his castle or mansion at Suze, near Nantes. In his confession he wrote that some of the beautiful children had their heads kept as relics. He confessed to at least six score of these sacrifices a year.

---

<sup>1</sup> "La Folie Héréditaire." *Gaz. hebdom.*, 1861.



Charles, King of Navarre, Count of Evreux, was burned alive in 1387 for similar unspeakable and murderous practices.

This is a man's disease, and few women are addicted to these practices. Catherine de Medici was a *sadiste*, a *flagellante*, for there is every variety of this disease or crime, from murder down to trivial acts of cruelty, such as flogging. There are certain methods of mutilation which are accepted in medico-legal circles as proofs of sadism. A sadist who starts on one method or style usually repeats the same, as in the noted case of Jack the Ripper. When these murders and mutilations occurred in the east end of London, it was judged that the same brain and hand acted throughout.

*Jack the Ripper and the Like.*

Jack the Ripper was responsible for about eight murders with sex mutilations. He kept the east end of London for some time in a state of panic, till they stopped as suddenly as they began. Nothing was ever proved as to how or why he disappeared, although many comforting theories were cast about to allay public anxiety. The psychology of the situation is most interesting, for it is quite possible that Jack was a dual personality. Alternating personalities were reported before Robert Louis Stevenson wrote "Jekyll and Hyde," and previous to these murders I had such a case under my care. One of the sweetest-natured girls changed unconsciously into a criminal complex. In this condition she was very wicked, and one day would have committed a murder if the mother had not come on the scene in the nick of time. Why not the same condition in Jack the Ripper's case? Let us suppose he was a man of unblemished character, say a parson. He might retire at night in his normal or A personality. In the night, without any consciousness on his part, he would change over to B, the sadist, dress, rush out and commit his horrible deeds and return to bed, to wake in his normal state, totally ignorant of what had happened.



Later on I shall describe cases which are unexplainable, as I fear this murder mystery is equally unexplainable.

Alternating personalities lead quite separate lives, neither personality having any knowledge of the other. Jack the Ripper may be alive to-day, a venerable old man. He may have been a doctor ; at the time some thought a medical student ; or even a Church dignitary.

Some experts, like Feuerbach and Krafft-Ebing, declare that these degenerate monsters commit cannibalism—anthropophagy<sup>1</sup>—and give cases. Rape, mutilation and cutting up of the victim are symptoms of the worst forms of sadism. But the cutting up of the bodies is not necessarily to avoid detection ; it is a part of the morbid pleasure.

I have in "Unfinished Man" given the case of a boy in the criminal asylum at Tournai, in Belgium, who cut up his mother, *en morceaux*, which act, in spite of the blood relationship, falls under the heading of sadism or sex perversion.

We must regard this loathsome disease as the most degrading of crimes, and we ought to join internationally on the question of brain research. Esquirol records the brain examination of a sadist who raped and murdered a child of 12, and before burying the body ate its heart. After execution it was found that the sadist suffered from pathological meningeal adhesions. Was he responsible ? What are we going to do in these cases, for it is more than probable that old-standing meningitis accounts for a great deal of crime ?

*Verenzi.*

Apart from what may be found in the brain of the sadist, there is frequently a bad heredity. In the case of one, Verenzi, there were no sexual assaults, but that is not necessary in diagnosing sadism. As a child of 10 he would kill fowls for his own pleasure, but it was not till

---

<sup>1</sup> *Anthropos*, a man ; and *Phago*, I eat. (Gr.).



the age of 19 that this blood-thirst led him to murder females. This was in the year 1868, and he successively strangled at least six girls and women before he was caught and executed in 1872. In one or two cases he mutilated the abdomen. His father suffered from a chronic skin disease, pellagra, which is common in North Italy. I have seen many cases in the asylums in Italy, for it affects the patient mentally. Two of Verenzi's uncles were cretins; another a beardless microcephalic, and a cousin was a kleptomaniac. Verenzi's head was average size but asymmetrical, which is an important point in degeneracy. Verenzi, the sadist, must have been insane.

### *Stigmata.*

Krafft-Ebing reports a case of sadism with physical and mental stigmata, who was the son of a general paralytic. We have sufficient cases reported to demonstrate that sadism is, to use popular language, in the blood. There are few cases that have not shown signs of degeneracy in childhood.

Many who do not exhibit any sexual symptoms take pleasure in ill-treating others; such as biting, beating, cutting off women's hair or a portion of dress, or wounding the skin and watching the blood flow, oftentimes sucking the wound. It is thought that cruelty to animals or children is closely related to sadism, as sadists have in early years shown symptoms of such a character.

The newspapers of to-day bring many criminal and cruel cases of sadism before the public; but the public do not understand that they are phases of insanity, passing from father to child. We hang a "trunk" murderer who has cut up his victim, and pity him, thinking it is his first fall. If we knew the truth it would probably reveal a long list of horrors. The men who assault girls in a variety of ways, oftentimes giving them "a good time" first, are sadists. On scientific lines the lethal chamber should be their speedy destination, and brain experts should have the opportunity of studying



the pathological condition. I expect a syphilitic taint in a father or grandparent is a not infrequent cause.

The Government of Holland is devoting considerable attention to this question. As they do not resort to capital punishment, they are studying how to deal with the psychopaths, and other perverts, who occupy the ambiguous position of being responsible lunatics or irresponsible criminals—a curious contradiction in terms.

The late Thomas Holmes, the police-court missionary in London, testified to Holland being in advance of other countries in caring for juvenile criminals and tramps. This was in the year 1911. I visited their schools, reformatories, and colonies some time before that date,<sup>1</sup> and was greatly impressed with the superiority of their methods.

#### *Causes of Sex Anomalies.*

The *fons et origo* of sadism and sexual perversion may partly depend on some poisonous secretion of the sex glands entering the blood and affecting the brain. The enlarged fibroid prostate, which is the homotype of the uterus, is also a frequent cause of serious sexual mental disturbance in elderly men.

We are all acquainted with the term "third sex," which applies to a mental and physical condition intermediate between the two sexes. The woman is very masculine in figure and habit. The male is effeminate, beardless, with a high voice and the affectionate nature of a woman. In some instances these cases prefer their own sex, being man haters and woman haters respectively. This abnormality in sex is fully explained by a study of the differentiation of sex in the earliest stages of development of the ovum. When the ovum is fertilized it is possible, in the case of certain lower forms of life, to

---

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter XVII, Penology in Holland; and "Unfinished Man," Chapter XIV, Social Hygiene in Holland.



determine, with the use of the microscope, whether it is going to produce a male or a female. Under certain conditions an accident may happen by which the male ovum may become partially female and vice versa. In such cases the chromosomes and chromomeres, which are the physical carriers in the fertilized ovum of all our mental qualities, are disarranged; and when we grow up, our minds, our dispositions, and our characters are disarranged. Might we not get such a condition in which a female man might behave to women as a bitch does to a bitch? Instead of affection for the woman, he has dislike, even hatred, which in some ungoverned temperaments might lead to cruelty, or sadism, and even murder. Without pursuing an unsavoury subject, I trust I have said enough to make my readers think about it very seriously.<sup>1</sup> As our civilization advances, so will these difficult problems be referred to medical assessors, for many of these troubles are on the mental plane.

*Vidal, The Murderer of Girls: An Instance of Sadism.*

The French are more dramatic in crime than we are, due to their hot Mediterranean blood. At the same time, till recently they were less willing to admit the plea of insanity. As an instance, let us take the classical case of Vidal,<sup>2</sup> the murderer of girls, who was under observation for six months at the prison at Lyons. His history is, briefly, that he was born in 1867 at Vals and was the only survivor of a family of four children. His father died before he was born. Thus he had a bad start in life; and what about his heredity? His mother's father was epileptic, as were her paternal aunts. One of Vidal's brothers was eccentric, garrulous and a bad character. As a child Vidal was sulky, treacherous and bad-

---

<sup>1</sup> Read Chapter XXVI on "Sex."

<sup>2</sup> "Archives d'Anthropologie Criminelle," Drs. Lacassagne, Royer and Rebatel, November 15, 1902.



tempered ; and after an attack of typhoid at the age of 15 he had a good deal of loss of memory. Lacassagne regarded him as a psychic degenerate, chiefly by reason of heredity.

He went through his military service, and at the age of 21 fell off his cycle and was unconscious for some hours. Thus he had a series of mishaps, which must have added to his trouble, though similar accidents would have little effect on a normal youth.

Vidal was described as weak-minded, timid, taciturn, unsociable and extremely selfish. He complained of headaches and noises in his ears. He was emotional and tearful. He did not suffer from sexual excesses or perversions. Strange to relate, he was very fond of animals and was never cruel to them.

Although Vidal perpetrated murders he would never go near a corpse. It was in 1901, at Nice, that he made his first attempt at murder. He accosted a young girl and went home with her. He had thought out his mode of attack, and in the dark stabbed her in the back with a large knife, bought for the purpose. The girl escaped and fled and he quietly returned to his home at Beaulieu. It is stated that he was always very cool and deliberate, showing no hesitation, or anxiety, or emotion. Ten days later he committed another attempt on exactly the same lines. This girl kicked him and tackled him so that he barely escaped. Three days later he was more successful at Toulon. He stayed with the girl, and the next day took her to a lonely spot where he stabbed her in the back with the same knife. Having murdered her, he stole her jewellery. A few days after he stabbed a girl in the train near Nice and threw her body out of the carriage, returning to Nice to his lodgings. Here he was discovered by blood remaining on his mackintosh. He had intended to wash it off, but was, as are many degenerates, too lazy to act with precision. After this he paid the penalty. He was thought to have committed other murders, always girls and always by stabbing.



Vidal was tall, well-developed, but with asymmetry of features and skull, and had an internal squint. He was not intelligent and was very lazy, with weak will power and seldom working. He had no delusions, nor did he suffer from epilepsy. Though no special mental or physical taint was in evidence, surely some family taint would have been found "in the blood" under further examination. He was adjudged sane, because his crimes were so deliberate, and he was declared "responsible with slight attenuation." The standards by which he was judged are obsolete to-day and will be still further obsolete to-morrow. We need not regret his punishment. He is better away, but it would be more scientific to have diagnosed his irresponsibility, and though a low-grade victim of "determinism," he and others like him should be treated with more mercy in the lethal chamber.

How many hundreds of such degenerates are walking about to-day? Some are known and recognizable, but we must wait till they commit a murder or a crime before we can interfere. When public or preventive medicine gains the confidence of the masses, then perhaps the lawyers will call us in to indicate what is necessary. On eugenic principles some weeding-out may be necessary, as we do to-day for plague, fevers, leprosy and small-pox.



## Chapter IV

---

### SUMMARY

1. CRIMINAL FAMILIES AND PEDIGREES. TABLES.
2. FAMILY TAINTS.
3. CRIMINALS AT HOME AND ABROAD.

### CRIMINAL FAMILIES AND PEDIGREES.

IT has frequently been shown that there are actually criminal families, and though it comes rather as a shock, if examined carefully there is no solid argument against it. There are several recognized intellectual families, stabilized for generations, where the name carries weight for wisdom and goodness. Such families by nature belong to the ruling class, and it is rare to find criminal tendencies among them. Other families are unstable and may show various taints, such as deafness, bad temper, nervous diseases, &c. Such instances of devolution and evolution make a strong impress, not only on the community, but also on the country and even on the race.

Everything in social science resolves itself into home-life, family and pedigree. Some families cannot go straight, whilst others cannot go crooked. The cause is a mystery. Is it that man's enemies, the poisoners of his race, alcohol and syphilis, are secretly at work in the neurones<sup>1</sup> and the germ-plasm?<sup>2</sup> Is that the reason why

---

<sup>1</sup> A neurone is an isolated unit or system in the brain and nervous system. It consists of a receiving nerve, an analysing (?) cell, and an outgoing fibre to continue the message.

<sup>2</sup> For germ-plasm, see the physiology of Sex, Chap. XXVI.

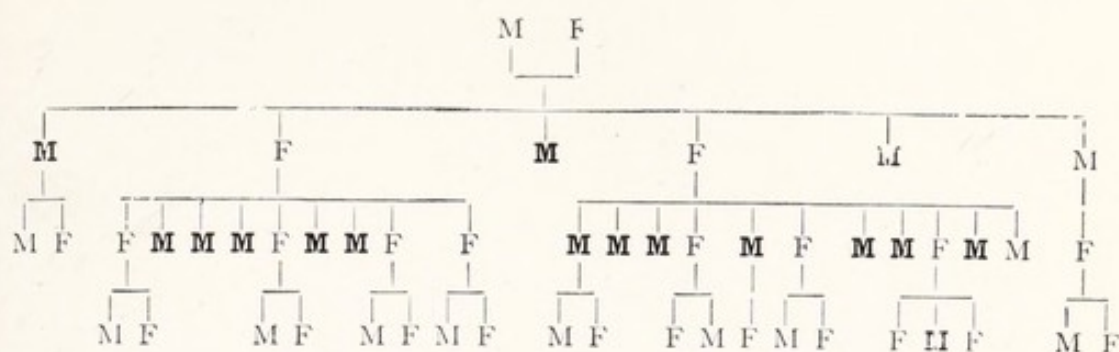


FIG. 3.—A family of bleeders recorded by Professor Klebs. The dark letters indicate the bleeders. Observe that two sons, though bleeders, did not transmit the disease, whereas it passed through four of the females. Transmission is only through females.

[From "Heredity," by Professor J. A. Thomson.  
By permission of Mr. Murray.]

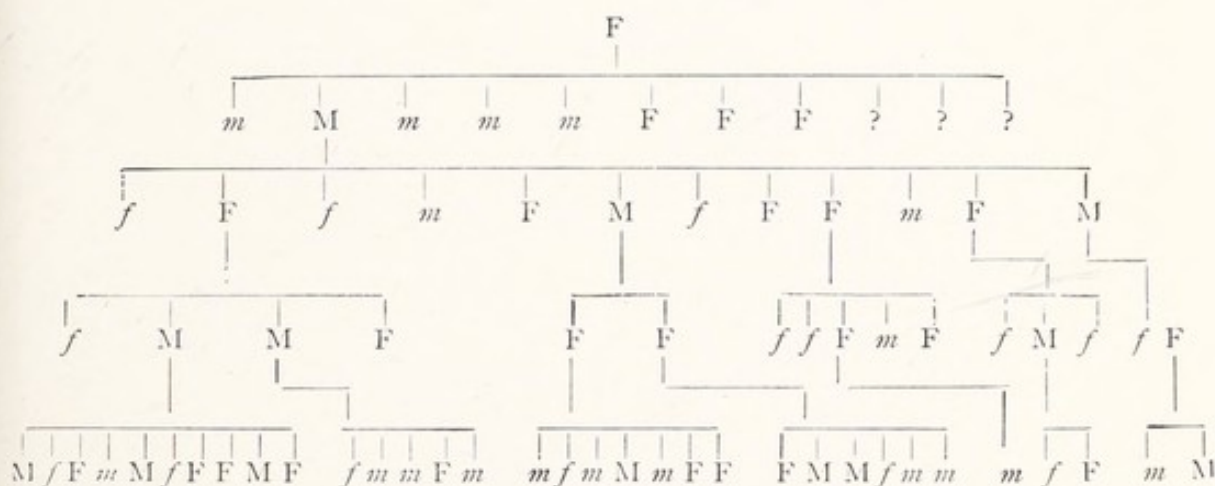


FIG. 4.—A table by Farabee representing a family affected by Brachydactyly, in which all the toes and fingers are double-jointed like the thumb. The abnormal members are indicated by the capitals. Normal members had normal children, and are not included in the above fourteen families.

[From "Heredity," by Professor J. A. Thomson.  
By permission of Mr. Murray.]





one member of a good family is poisoned and all his offspring are more or less social failures?

The dogma that we are all born equal and free is the delusion of democracy. It is the quality of the family germ-plasm that decides the issue; saint or sinner; intelligence or mental feebleness; success or failure. In years to come we shall have to attend to these problems and improve the breed.

In the year 1908 I recorded the tree of a prominent family in which there was a physical taint, associated with nervous and psychical disorder.<sup>1</sup> The history on record of this family began about two hundred years ago, when there was a union between a man of highly respectable old family, A, and a lady of noble birth, B. The family of A had a clean record, but B's family had a taint or stain, consisting of nerve tremors and psychic irregularities.

A, male, clean, married B, female, tainted. The issue consisted of five children :—

1. An idiot son, the first in A's family tree.	
2. A son who appeared normal and married into a good county family. He had 10 children and	
33 grandchildren	
66 great-grandchildren, and	
12 great-great-grandchildren, all healthy.	
Total	121
3 and 4 did not marry.	
5. A daughter, married a first cousin in the tainted B family, with the following disasters :—	
10 children . . . with a toll of 7 disasters.	
67 grandchildren . . . " " 36 "	
168 great-grandchildren " " 6 known disasters.	
94 great-great-grandchildren.	
Total	339

---

<sup>1</sup> "Education, Personality and Crime," p. 40.



It is interesting to observe how much more prolific and prepotent<sup>1</sup> the cousin marriageship became than that of the son who married a healthy girl of another county family; 339 descendants against 126 in four generations. It has been impossible for me to collect all the facts as to grandchildren; but there are many unstable specimens among them, and indeed some have shown criminal tendencies, more especially in *haute finance*.

This is a clear demonstration against the policy or advantage of inbreeding in the human family; though among animals inbreeding of pure specimens is said to be successful.<sup>2</sup> Is it not natural that where we get an inferior breed or stock, whether among mankind or the lower animals, the offspring will continue to be degenerate until well-mated to a superior stock? Even then it is almost impossible to cast out degeneracy entirely. Nature usually accomplishes her purpose by sterility of the worst specimens.

Lombroso found among criminals that 26 per cent. had criminal parents and relations.<sup>3</sup> Strachan gives the history of a family numbering 834 individuals. Seven hundred and nine of these were traced, showing :—

106 illegitimates,  
164 prostitutes,  
17 procureurs,  
142 beggars, and  
76 criminals, who spent sixty-six years  
in prison; and, to show the poor quality of the stock, 63  
were in hospital for chronic disease.

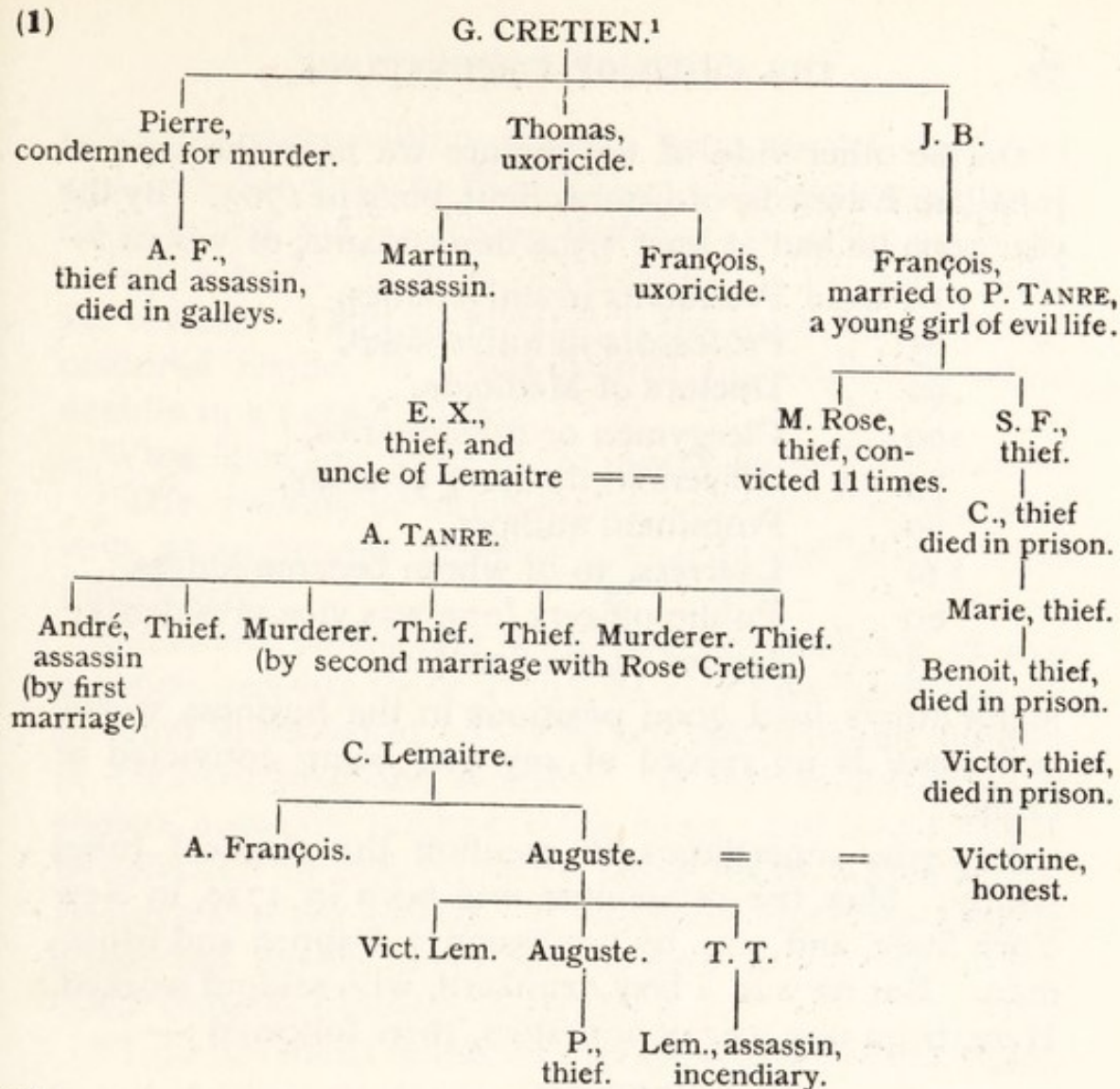
The following are interesting tables of degenerate families, taken from Lombroso's work on "Crime":—

<sup>1</sup> Prepotent is a term used biologically to indicate a predominating influence in breeding or reproduction.

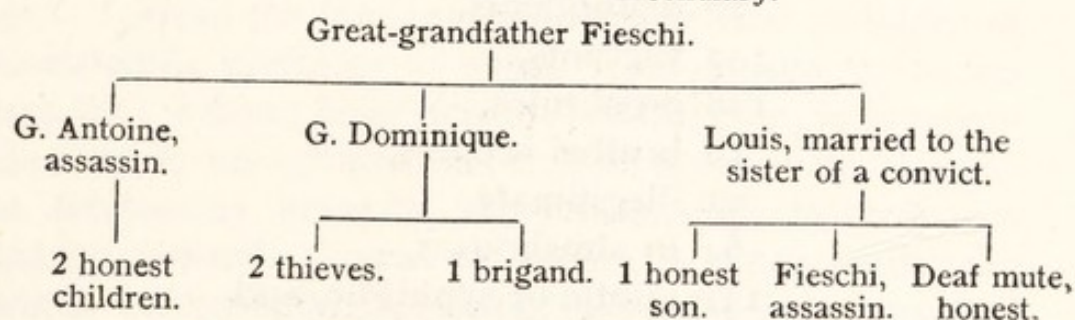
<sup>2</sup> For further details, see "Education, Personality and Crime," p. 40.

<sup>3</sup> "Instinctive Criminality."

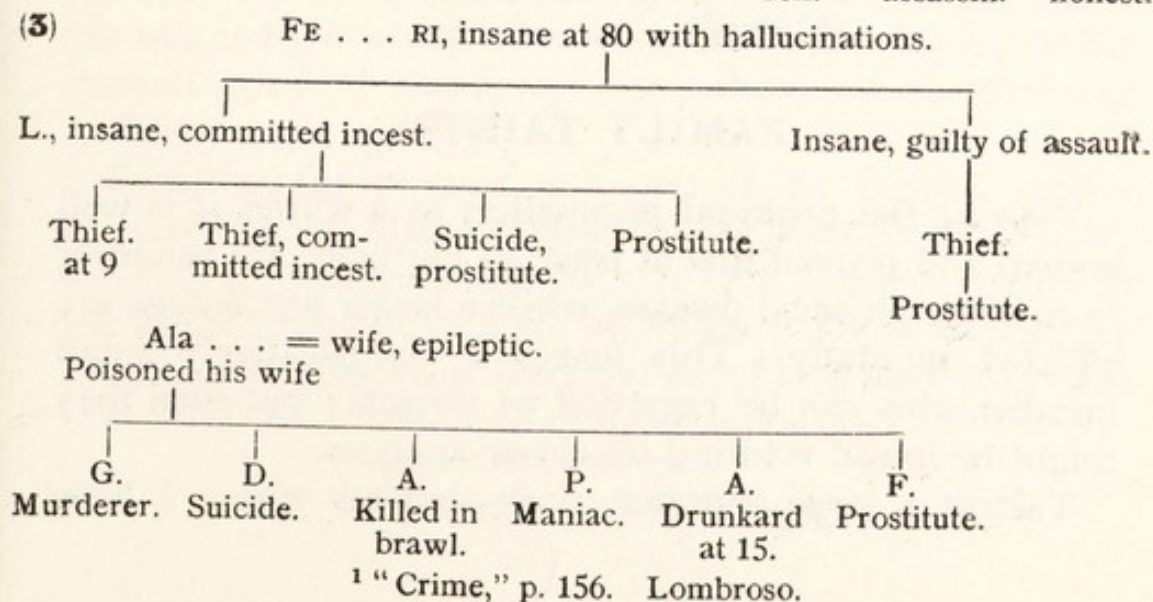
(1)



(2)



(3)



<sup>1</sup> "Crime," p. 156. Lombroso.



On the other side of the picture we have the case of Jonathan Edwards, of Connecticut, born in 1703. By the year 1900 he had at least 1,394 descendants, of whom :—

15	were	Presidents in universities,
65	„	Professors in universities,
60	„	Doctors of Medicine,
100	„	Clergymen or missionaries,
75	„	Officers in the navy or army,
60	„	Prominent authors,
130	„	Lawyers, 30 of whom became judges,
80	„	Public officers (one was vice-president),
3	„	United States Senators.

Many others held good positions in the business world, and there is no record of any one being convicted of crime.

It seems superfluous to mention the classical Jukes family. Max, the progenitor, was born in 1720, in New York State, and was by profession a trapper and fisherman. But he was a lazy drunkard, who seldom worked. Here, from one pair of ancestors, there followed :—

76	delinquents,
142	vagrants,
128	prostitutes,
18	brothel keepers,
91	illegitimate,
64	in almshouses,
131	idiotic or syphilitic, and
46	sterile.

### FAMILY TAINTS.

Viewing the criminal population as a whole, it is well known and proved that at least 40 per cent. are suffering from some physical disease, while a larger percentage are affected mentally. This leaves a comparatively small number who can be regarded as normal ; but even they might be found wanting on closer analysis.

Taking a large number of ex-convicts whom I have



examined, more with a view to their mental condition and pedigree than to their unfortunate surroundings, I do believe it will be shown that there is, in the majority, a family taint. It does not amount to insanity; quite the reverse. Taint, or blemish, is the word, like a wrong-coloured feather in a highly-bred pigeon, or a white necktie in a pure-bred dog.

What Mercier<sup>1</sup> wrote of the insane holds good here:—

“The stability or instability of a person’s highest nervous arrangements depends primarily and chiefly upon inheritance.”

Clouston<sup>2</sup> writes that “without the existence of evil nervous heredity there would be very little unsoundness of mind in the world. It is the fate which lies on millions of civilized men and women.” If they could be forestalled, humanity might breathe freely; but how? Only by selection in marriage and clean living, which is impossible to some people. It all shows the great need of a marriage bureau to educate the people.

Sir Thomas Clouston continues:—

“I do not mean tendencies to gross and evident ‘madness.’ I mean the tendency towards mental irritabilities, eccentricities, unfitness to work, or to endure, or to feel normally. I mean tendencies to wicked lives, to irresponsible lives, to unregulated lives, or to cruel lives. I mean also tendencies towards bad citizenship, towards law breaking, towards asocial practices. I mean tendencies towards callousness of feeling, towards ambitions that are markedly irreconcilable with the social fabric, or the general good of humanity . . . these are all marks of unfitness evolutionally.”

Clouston, the pioneer, and one of our greatest authorities on mental diseases, defined the position accurately. I have traced all sorts of evils, not only in the mentality of the individuals but in their forebears. These develop or accumulate into very forcible emotions, and it is the

---

<sup>1</sup> “Sanity and Insanity.”

<sup>2</sup> “Unsoundness of Mind,” p. 5.



obstruction they encounter, of what they will, or desire, or attempt, that often drives them to crime.

What is the remedy? Clouston is bold enough to suggest religion in many forms and morality; religion has been, we think, wrongly dismissed by the neo-psychologist as a series of delusions.

Duty, in the old-fashioned sense, may be cultivated and correct the mode of living and thinking, but the neo-psychologists lower its status and origin to being an act of vanity in order to seek praise from others. There can be no question that the neo-psychologists, in endeavouring to get rid of God, religion, morality, and the sense of duty, would so lower the standard of humanity that we should soon reach the level of Russia and Germany. We are emerging from the very condition which they are advocating.

There will ever be a dispute as to whether inborn personal character can be transmitted from parent to child. But what if the same type of brain is passed down; will not the offspring follow the parent? So much depends on imitation, from the association of the children with the parents in early life. Professor Ford Robertson maintains that "offspring inherit no character whatever from their parents. Offspring are merely the realization of the developmental potentialities of converged ancestral lines of germ-cells. The distinction between inborn and acquired characters has really no justification in modern scientific fact." This means that we inherit not from our parents only, or perhaps not at all from them, but from hundreds of thousands of ancestors; which is as marvellous as it is true. Our parents were only carriers of what they received, namely, thousands of ancestral units.<sup>1</sup> Some consider that we inherit more from our grandparents than from our own parents.

That expresses fully how man comes into the field equipped with his inheritance only, and his success or

---

<sup>1</sup> Read the Physiological Chapters at the end.



failure depends chiefly upon how these hidden forces direct his life. But environment has a notable influence that cannot be ignored.

Professor Ford Robertson writes:—

“All the acquirements of literature, art, science, social customs, &c., form an environment to which man's inherent potentialities of development are capable of responding.”

In the background, which no investigation can reveal lie the emotions, the tendencies, the potentialities of the human mind or, in poetical language, “the heart”—more correctly our personality, which we owe to our heredity or inheritance.

Such clear, correct thinking as expressed by an eminent psychologist at once puts the present school of psychology, with all its introspection, out of action. Professor Robertson has the advantage of direct knowledge, in being one of our greatest experts in mental diseases. He has charge of Morningside Asylum, the most advanced mental hospital in the world. To show the confidence the public have in the institution, more than half are voluntary patients, without certification. It is from such highly-educated men that we want advice and direction.

### CRIMINALS AT HOME AND ABROAD.

There is a popular idea that there is a criminal class, and that we can go into the streets and pick them out. This doctrine was emphasized by Lombroso, the Italian psychologist. He regarded the criminal in most cases as born rather than made, and started the theory of stigmata of degeneration, by which they may be recognized. The stigmata are deformities, mostly about the head and face, such as long, heavy, protruding jaws, cross-eyes, bridgeless noses, small or badly-shaped asymmetrical skulls and gross irregularity of features. He maintained that 40 per cent. of criminals have these stigmata, but this subject has been well thrashed out and is not generally accepted to-day; in fact, many criminals are



very handsome and well-formed. These deformities are frequently syphilitic taints from parents, and this infection quite possibly may be associated with some mental weakness due to brain defect. Everyone will admit that the face is a good index of character. Expression, or the fine workings of the delicate facial muscles, comes directly from the cells of the higher frontal brain, thus indicating the workings of the mind.

Crime is recognized as a profession in different countries. Thus, in Morocco, the Bani Hassan are professional thieves and train young boys to thieve from the age of 8. They employ four kinds of theft: oat-stealing, horse-stealing, house-breaking, which is done naked with the body so greased as to make capture practically impossible, and lastly, highway robbery.

The criminal tribes of India are said to number ten millions, and these groups or settlements live almost entirely by thieving. There is one tribe of thieves called the Zacka-Khail. When a boy is born they dedicate him by passing him through a hole in the house, saying three times, "Be a thief."

The Government of India, having tried all kinds of punishment, finally asked the Salvation Army to undertake their healing work among these criminal communities. The first settlement was at Gorakhpur, a town of eighty thousand, amongst a community called Doms, who were constantly in and out of prison, and they constituted, as Commissioner Booth-Tucker informs us, a plague spot in the city. At one time there was a single register of bad characters, or badmashes, including practically all the natives, but Commissioner Booth-Tucker suggested three registers, adding nekmashes or good characters, to which a man could be transferred if he had been crime-free for a certain time; and on the third register crime-free children were to be enrolled until they became adults.<sup>1</sup>

After such success, the Salvation Army were asked to

---

<sup>1</sup> See Harold Begbie's book, "The Light of India."



undertake two more settlements at Haburahs and Bhatoos, and so their work grows, until to-day they have twelve settlements, and supervise ten thousand of these erstwhile criminals. It is thus seen that in their world-wide religious revival the Salvation Army have done a lot of spade work.

General Booth was not satisfied with bringing these criminals merely into habits of decency, but he gave them occupation which would interest them. Hand looms and like machinery were obtained for silk weaving, and this revived their old industry, which cheap imports had destroyed. They were also supplied with the best silk from Japan. The General attached great importance to occupation of the fingers, with an object to work up to. This was a truly scientific idea, considering that we belong to the *Bimana*. He succeeded as regards these terrible outlaws and changed them into respectable citizens.

Even the lowest caste of Hindustan, the pariah, strictly speaking not a caste, beneath all castes, were reached and elevated from the drudgery and demoralization in which they lived. Commissioner Unsworth, S.A., a world-wide traveller, tells me that order and decency have replaced anarchy and crime, and that they are now a well-behaved, industrious people.

Caste<sup>1</sup> is rather a useful social distinction and the direct opposite of democracy. It is thought to have originated when the Aryans, or nobles, penetrated into India. They had a great contempt for the Turanians, whose home was in Central Asia, and they felt the need of keeping their own race pure from intermarriage. About 1500 B.C. these conquests ceased, and the people settled down into normal pursuits, and there were three chief castes: the Brahmins or priests, the warriors, and the merchants. There was a fourth caste, the artisans and labourers. Beyond these were the pariahs, who were downtrodden outcasts.

---

<sup>1</sup> *Castus*, pure, chaste (Latin). *Caste*, pure, or unmixed race (French).



Italy, including Sicily, is the home of thieves and murderers, many of whom are outlaws from foreign countries, especially Greece, Spain, and Portugal. In Corsica they are pirates, and given up to homicide; while Sardinia has a vigorous brigandage of Phœnician blood. Many Semites, Arabs and Berbers settled in Sicily, being cattle stealers and brigands. Travellers need not, however, be afraid of travelling in Sicily.<sup>1</sup> We found the people very civil, but one must not be alone at night, or wander too far in the mountains. It is more a question of Mafia, which concerns family feuds; thus, if a man kills his neighbour, all the relatives of the slain are at once out to kill the murderer or any of his family. These attentions are kept up, first on one side, then on the other, and appear to last for generations. It is not in the interest of the people to expose their quarrels to travellers; it is far wiser to bleed them of cash.

It is thought that Semitic and Egyptian blood is more prone to homicide than the Teutonic. Both these former races, which are more or less Arab and Berber, filtered into Greece, Italy, Sicily, Spain, and France. They form the brown people, and are an indolent, hot-headed and violent group.

Jews do not indulge in murder or violence, except now in Russia. They seem to be robbed of their courage by years of persecution; but all honour to them for their services in the War. To-day, those who are dishonest specialise in swindling and receiving, often working in groups, but not indulging in burglary or violence, or any active crime.

In Spain the "gitane"<sup>2</sup> are great cattle thieves. The Spanish peasants are extremely ugly and fierce-looking, and very marked with stigmata of degeneration. In one

---

<sup>1</sup> See my book, "Rambles in North Africa" (Jonathan Cape), for the early history of Sicily. Since writing this, I heard of a case five years ago where some innocent-looking peasants nearly entrapped two ladies who were out botanizing.

<sup>2</sup> Singular, "gitano."



boys' prison near Madrid, which I visited, out of 400 boys there were 60 murderers, chiefly for purposes of theft. Robbing and murdering solitary people in the mountains seemed to be an attractive occupation.

The word "camorra" is of Spanish origin, and means a "quarrel." "Camorrista" societies still exist in the Mediterranean countries among descendants of the brown people, who are always unstable, excitable and revengeful. These societies are recognized as a force not to be trifled with, for they even gather tribute from the general public, and woe betide the unwilling giver. Occasional efforts have been made to break them up, but the societies are always re-formed. In the last century, at Messina, twenty-nine leaders were executed, but this had no repressive influence. In Naples there was a juvenile camorra, consisting of boys of 15, who gave honours to those who committed murders and perpetrated deeds of cruelty. The same kinds of societies existed in Sicily, murdering and pillaging as they chose. No authority dare interfere with them, and too often people in authority were in with them.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Since writing this, Mussolini has done a great work in putting down this unwholesome brigandage.



## Chapter

---

### SUMMARY

WHO THE CRIMINAL IS.

ARRESTED BRAIN DEVELOPMENT.

THE ENDOCRINE GLANDS AND MENTAL DISORDERS.

THE GAMUT OF HUMANITY.

### WHO THE CRIMINAL IS.

**I**T is very important, in considering how criminals are made, to form a simple classification. All the many crimes that are chronicled can be reduced to two main types depending on the two primary vital instincts: that of acquisitiveness, or the will to live, and that of reproduction. Among the crimes dependent upon the instinct of acquisitiveness, we have not only the common thief, to whom theft may be a necessity, but also the gentlemanly company promoter, or financier, who has no excuse and is activated by simple greed. This instinct makes for self, and self only. It may lead to violence to facilitate gain, and, after all, is not war a game of acquisitiveness, provoked by the need or desire for expansion?

Instead of evolving the normal and legitimate function, the desire to live, there appears to be a morbid desire to seize one's neighbour's living. This is the fundamental source of the war between capital and labour; the rich man's brain is devouring the poor man's brawn.

The adult pauper criminal lives in a world bent on crushing him, and he has some excuse for committing crime. Our duty is to do away with the pauper, but that is a branch of social science too vast to embark on here.



The pauper is commonly of bad stock, and that is why he is down in the world; nor is the criminal a fallen saint, however good his previous character has been. The instinct for crime always existed, and his resistance was minus, but the attraction plus opportunity had not occurred before.

The richer, better-educated individual apparently ought to be more resistant, but when we examine the family of the respectable criminal we usually find some members who are diseased on the mental plane. There is a sister, delicate, nervous and refined, who, having a lowered resistance, is struck down with tubercle; one uncle on the mother's side has made a fortune rapidly, perhaps bought a title; another uncle has been shady on the moral plane; and the maternal grandfather, though outwardly a leader in religion, has been charged with fraud and barely escaped prison. We continue the search and we find eccentricity, instability of character, alcoholism and religious excitement among the cousins on one or other side of the house. This general want of balance or ballast accounts for much; but if we arrive at healthy marriage the offspring become more stable.

Let us build up another family tree where the children are all neurotic and weak, and may not commit any criminal acts, but their parents and uncles have been subject to suspicion, and some have had to go through the courts for dishonest finance. Their grandfather, though prominent in public affairs, was secretly dishonest in his methods of acquiring other people's money, and the great-grandfather ended on the gallows for fraud in pre-Victorian days.

These pedigrees are interesting, and they show that just as low-grade, despicable crime may run in families, so does more respectable crime.

To hold the opinion that crime belongs to the poorer and less fortunate section of society would be a great error. Crime is in all classes; it may be a family blemish, but it seems less excusable in the rich than among the



poor. Nevertheless, the disease or emotion to do wrong is just as distressing to the rich man as to the poor man. The poor criminal has not only to suffer as the result of bad breeding, but has to contend with a bad environment which cripples him. As a result of poverty, we find the boy or the slum child, who is one of the "vessels born to dishonour," is more sickly than those of the upper class. Some visitors go so far as to say that in the same poor district the delinquent child or youth is more delicate and sickly than the more moral of the same area. I have frequently found among juvenile prisoners, and the same in institutions, that the more stunted and sickly are the worst behaved; while the best boys are those with good teeth and good physical development.<sup>1</sup>

After some hundreds of examinations, I found that the poor boys, and especially the bad boys, were 20 to 23 per cent. below weight when compared with the average well-to-do lads of the same age; and a similar deficiency applies to height. Thus, a boy of 17½ was 4ft. 7in., about one foot too short. He weighed 6st. 11lb., which is about three stone too light. A boy of 16 was 5ft. 7in., and weighed 9st., but he had better surroundings (fig. 5).

I used, in a boys' prison or a boys' home, to ask for their eight or ten worst boys, and the same number of their best boys. I found the worst boys were very undeveloped, often with bad teeth as an extra handicap. We have reason to hope these troubles will cease as more attention is bestowed on the poor, especially where attention is given to the expectant mother.

The great efforts to-day to improve housing and have clinics for children will make a wonderful improvement in years to come. With the poorer criminal it is a continual struggle to exist, and he merits sympathy rather than hasty condemnation. His is a fair and square fight against these social conditions.

Crime may be produced by the ignorance or want of care on the parental side, for the thoughtless impatience

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* "Education, Personality, and Crime," Appendix.



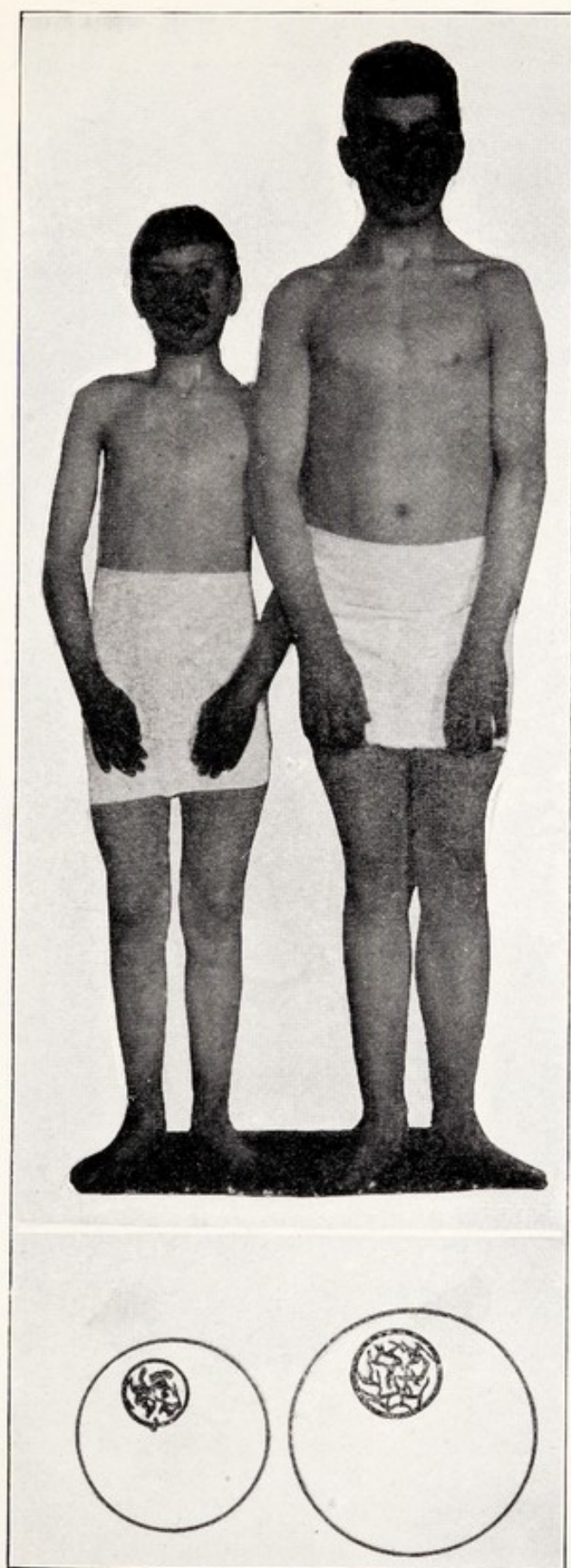


FIG. 5.—This is to explain how degeneracy follows on the starved or poisoned ovary. The tall boy is aged  $15\frac{1}{2}$ , the stunted boy is 15. Two hypothetical ova below. The smaller boy stood 4 ft. 7 in., 8 in. below normal and the height of the tall boy. The bigger boy weighed 7 st. 4 lb., a little above normal, while the small boy weighed 5 st. 4 lb., nearly 2 st. too little.





of the parent to a sensitive child is a common source of evil. Children require a great deal of patience. There is the tired mother, who has to run the home on very little and loses health and strength and, with the strain, her natural sweetness of disposition. Friction which seems so trivial may cut deeply into the child, who starts brooding, heaping up grievances which, if possible, must be avenged. This is called phantasy or morbid imagination, and develops an anti-social attitude, which may persist for years. It sinks deep into the memory, into that which Freud calls<sup>1</sup> the "unconscious mind." Would that it could reach *unconsciousness*, as then it might be forgotten. Instead, it is buried in the subconscious mind or distant memory, affecting the emotions, so that the whole character is soured. By freer communication with others, especially in higher walks of life, new hopes arise, and the old grievance may thereby be starved to death. These are the troublesome, stubborn children at school, so difficult to understand. Some of them fasten on to a teacher, having found a sympathetic friend, and by unburdening the sorrow, which is often a phantasy, a cure may be effected. This is called "sublimation," the bringing of the nursed grievance from the recess of the subconscious mind to the surface of consciousness; in fact, to opening one's heart to a friend, or perhaps to confessing to the doctor. The new psychologists, especially those who are amateurs, or lay brethren, seem to forget that the physician all his life is lightening the burdens of others and dissipating complexes. Sublimation is no new process, though it is a new name or title. It goes back as far as Cain.

These struggles and failures and ill-health in the poverty zone, and the faulty upbringing of children who are so many embryo-criminals, compel us to plead for true missionary endeavour on the part of the educated rich. From the eugenic or medical point of view there is only one remedy, and that is smaller families. The claims of the unborn child are never thought out.

---

<sup>1</sup> Miscalls.



## ARRESTED BRAIN DEVELOPMENT.

As far as our present knowledge goes, there is no such thing as a criminal mind. It may be bold, but it is not unreasonable to speculate on how the criminal responds to that plastic machine, his mind. A criminal's mind is not built on one universal pattern, so as to justify the axiom of a criminal mind. How and what the criminal thinks can never be unravelled, and therefore there is no proper basis for postulating such a theory as a criminal mind. Yet in many cases the criminal thinks as we do, and possibly we think as the criminal thinks. The factor which determines the issue is resistance. It is impossible to discover the criminal's mind by tests, as in cases of disease of the brain. Degenerate criminals are in quite a different category.

Examining with the microscope the brain of a murderer,<sup>1</sup> I found a remarkable contrast to that of a healthy young man of 22 years of age, who, sad to relate, was killed in London by a motor bus. The same might be said comparing this degenerate's brain with the well-developed brain of a boy 5 years of age. In the two normals there were layers of cells and fibres in rich profusion, while in the murderer's brain one cell only was developed to ten or fifteen cells in the normal brain; yet his brain was full size and weighed fifty ounces, and his skull was large and not too thick. How could such a brain machine work properly? How could he observe or perceive and accumulate facts and knowledge? How could he remember and profit by experience? Where was the machinery in the association areas<sup>2</sup> to bring facts

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* Chapter XI for this man's brain, which never developed past the ape stage.

<sup>2</sup> The association areas represent portions of the grey matter which do not respond to the galvanic current; and, in popular language, are the thinking centres. That in the forehead, above the brows, has been shown by Dr. Bolton to be largely concerned in control. More of this in Chapters X and XXVII.



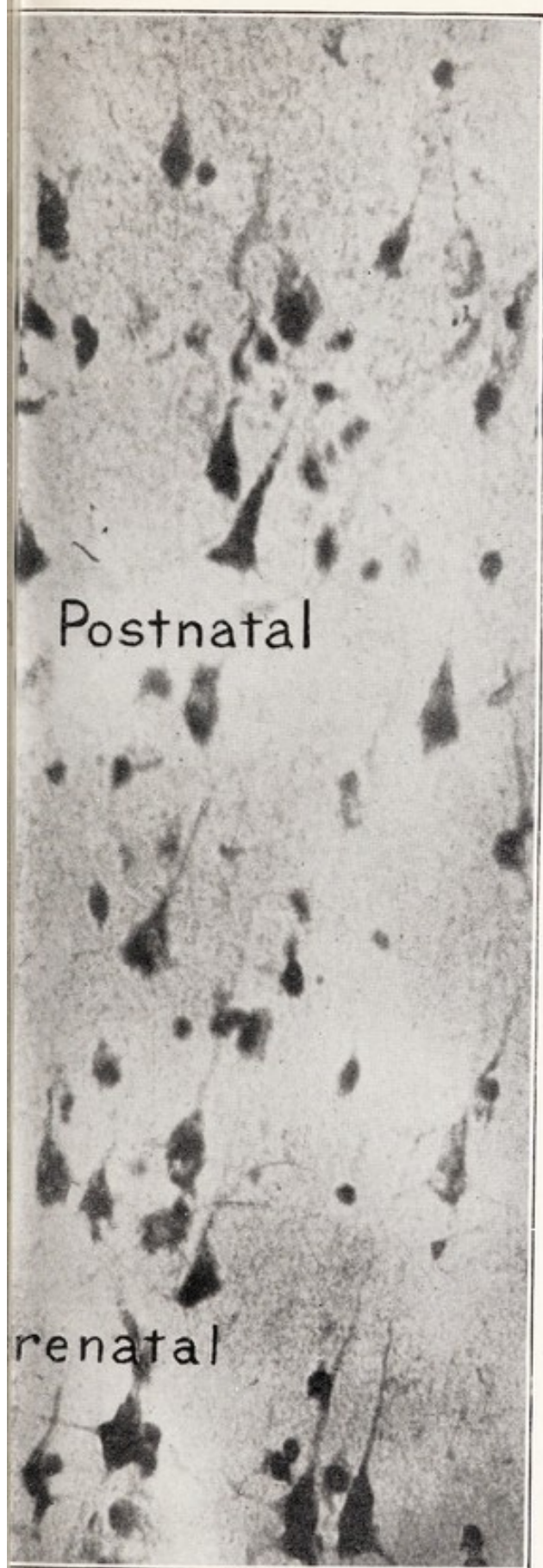


FIG. 6.

BRAIN SECTIONS.

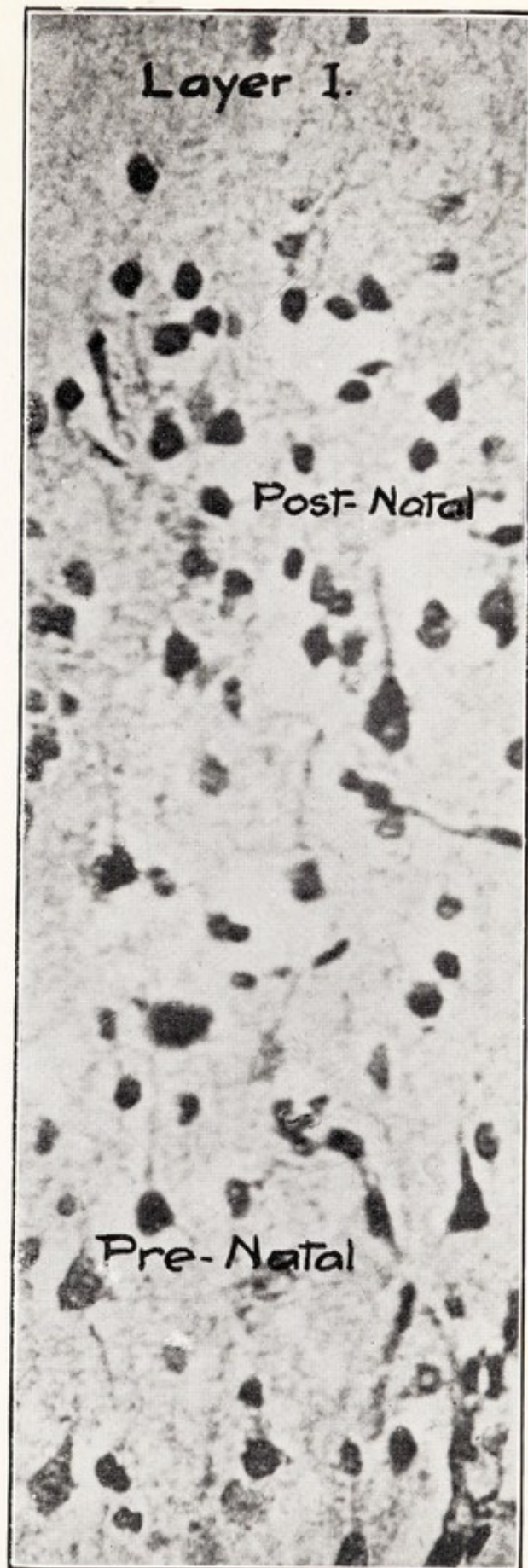


FIG. 7.

FIG. 6.—This photograph (350 magnification) is of the cortex of a normal man. The cells are developed very fully. First temporal convolution.

FIG. 7.—This is a section from the same convolution of an intelligent child aged 5. There are a few neuroblasts, post-natal, not yet changed into pyramidal cells but otherwise full of good cells.





FIG. 8.

BRAIN SECTIONS.

FIG. 9.

FIG. 8.—This is the murderer's cortex; the same area as the last two. It shows that a degenerate's brain is poorer in pyramidal cells than that of a child. Very few cells, developed or as nuclei, are to be seen.

FIG. 9.—The cortex of an ouran-outan to show a better development of pyramidal cells. A human degenerate may be lower than a normal anthropoid in brain development.



together and form inferences or obtain guidance? It may be just to hang the normals or otherwise punish them for crime, but what is to be said about punishing or hanging the degenerate? This is where the alienist comes in, and where medicine must, at all events, go hand in hand with law.

I will now draw the reader's attention to five diagrams which are of importance, as showing the different conditions that underlie the criminal problem.

The first figure<sup>1</sup> is from the section of brain of a normal, intellectual man. The upper part is marked *postnatal*, to indicate that these pyramidal cells were developed after birth. Below is the word *prenatal*, which implies that these cells were present on the day of birth. I maintain that the prenatal cells are proof of the race, the genus *Homo*; while the cells that develop after birth are indicative of the family or individual, in fact, of the particular family, or, in other words, the breed. This is not a generally accepted view, but I pressed it many years ago after examining various specimens.

At birth the postnatal layer is composed of round, latent cells, which during the first four or five years develop into active thinking cells of pyramidal shape. It is when these cells, or nuclei, fail to develop, that we get the degenerate, the criminal, and the weak-minded.

The second diagram<sup>2</sup> shows the cortex of a child of 5, from the corresponding convolution. This child was very brilliant, and died of tubercle of the brain. It has very highly developed cells.

The third diagram<sup>3</sup> shows the cortex of a degenerate, in fact, a murderer, and is from the same area as the other two. Here we find an infantile condition continuing, and hardly any developed pyramidal cells as in the clever boy of 5.

By way of comparison, I place alongside a section of

---

<sup>1</sup> Fig. 6.

<sup>2</sup> Fig. 7.

<sup>3</sup> Fig. 8.



the cortex of an ouran.<sup>1</sup> This was a well-known resident for many years in the Zoological Gardens, and could count and imitate humans in a remarkable degree.

When the thickness of the cortex in different human conditions is examined, it shows the difficulty of formulating laws in psychology, relative to intelligence. These are represented diagrammatically in columns<sup>2</sup> to show the relative depth of the pyramidal layers, which have been indented to mark off the post- from the prenatal layers. The topmost layer devoid of cells contains delicate and important fibres. The cortex of the child of 5 is about four-fifths of the adult depth; while the degenerate murderer does hardly reach to 70 per cent. of the normal.

It is to be remembered that while the prenatal cells may be as persistent in savage and degraded man as in civilized man, it is the development after birth that stamps the individual intelligence, *morale*, character and breed. So, while we get rid of useless people by hanging and imprisonment, it would be more scientific to try and improve the stock and prevent them from becoming criminals.

### *The Endocrine Glands and Mental Disorders.*

Mental weakness is in many cases due to physical causes, one of which is disorder of certain internal glands.

In the majority of criminals there is some mental weakness, perhaps an ancestral taint; or there may be epilepsy, septic troubles, venereal disease or some brain affection; often a derangement of what is termed endocrine secretion.

There are certain closed glands, called endocrine glands, which are essential to health. These closed glands have no duct or exit. The blood flows through them and the gland cells manufacture infinitesimal

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* Fig. 9. Dr. Hose says in his work on New Borneo that in correct spelling the G must be dropped.

<sup>2</sup> *Vide* Fig. 10.

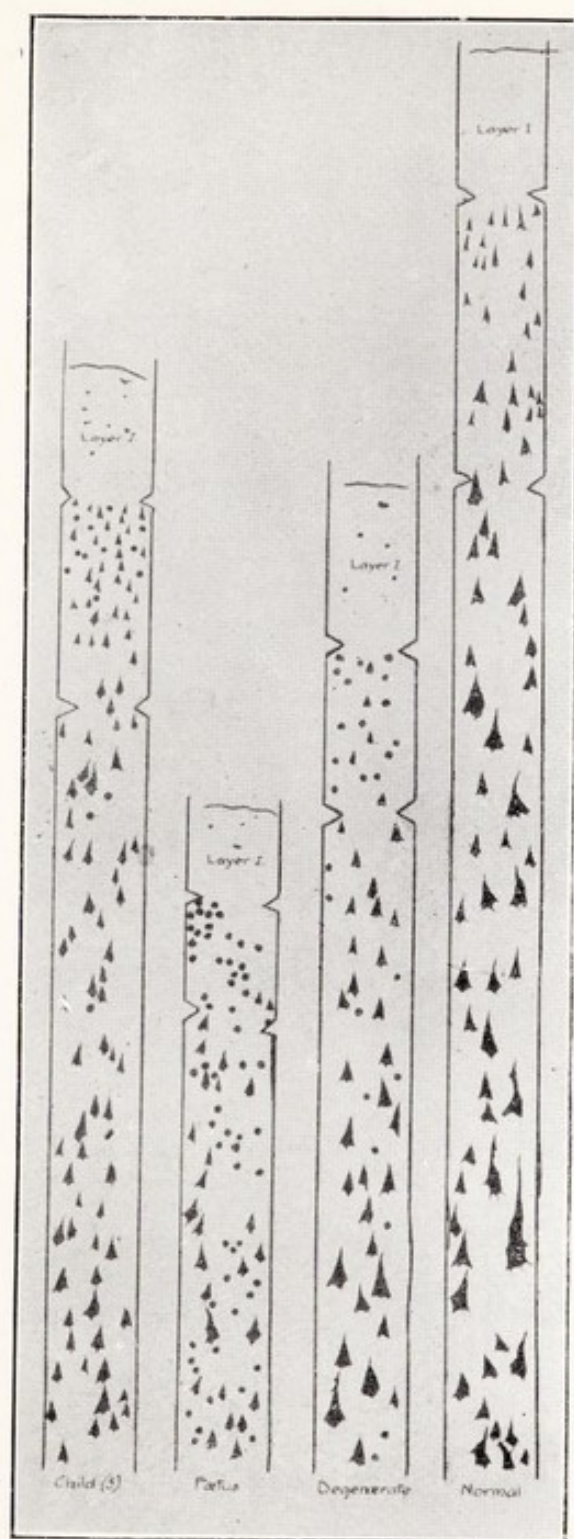


FIG. 10.—Diagrammatic columns of the pyramidal layers in the temporal area, the area of hearing. From the left : child aged 5 ; then follow a foetus, a degenerate and a normal. Note the undeveloped cells in the degenerate are more numerous than in the child ; and the depth of the pyramidal layers is shallower than that of a child aged 5.





amounts of chemical substances, which enter the blood-stream and control the vital and mental developments of the body. If one gland goes out of order the consequences are serious.

If the thyroid is too active there is goitre, with all its train of disturbances of the nervous system. It is usually a woman's disease, but was common among men in the war as the result of shock. The soldiers got well by rest, especially after the armistice. If the gland does not function at birth you get the cretin so common in Switzerland, being afflicted with arrested mental development from infancy.<sup>1</sup> In the opposite condition of the gland, that is in deficiency, a disease called myxœdema occurs, in which there is diminished mental power and loss of memory. Must it not happen that slight affections of the gland so alter the mental constitution as to bring about a degree of instability that may lead to any irregularity of conduct?

So also with the pituitary body, a small endocrine gland inside the skull at the base of the brain. If it works too little we get the fat boy of Pickwick; if it acts too much we may get the giant.

The organs of reproduction play a great part in character, crime and insanity. In the male gland, in addition to the secretion of sperm cells, there are other interstitial gland cells which secrete minute quantities of a chemical substance into the blood, which gives all the male characteristics of courage and manliness. If certain cells<sup>2</sup> in the gland are deficient or diseased, we get a mental disease which afflicts youth, the insanity of adolescence, and the young patient dies in an asylum. In such abnormal conditions we may get crime, cowardice, treachery or violence. We cannot reach this

---

<sup>1</sup> This is being cured by adding iodine to the water supply.

<sup>2</sup> The late Sir Frederick Mott found the interstitial cells diseased. The French pathologists regard it as a disease of the sympathetic nervous system. It may be both.



*a priori*, but we may infer that sterilization is the right cure for the dangerous criminal. The subject requires further investigation, even though very gruesome.

In the female organs there are many diseased conditions, producing mental changes from hysteria to insanity, and pathological changes will apply also to the female criminal. Every female criminal should be overhauled by a gynæcologist, and if necessary by other specialists. It does not advance matters merely to label her complexes. Let us consider a practical issue. A woman murders her child or perhaps her husband ; under expert medical examination she is found to be very septic internally, or her gland system may be quite out of order, requiring perhaps thyroid or pituitary treatment. Doctors are daily treating melancholia, delusions and even immorality by correcting the ills of the body. If this woman were cleaned up and her system readjusted, she might cease to have any criminal instincts.

There are several important glands, the suprarenal, thymus and others. We do not know a great deal about them, and who can foretell whether or no their disordered secretions so upset the constitution as to be indirectly responsible for the "criminal mind" ?

It is evident that we must analyse each prisoner from head to foot, in a biological laboratory, as is done in Holland and Belgium, and we must compile his ancestry. If there be any medical fault as the cause of his trouble, may it not be unjust to wreak vengeance on him ? There can easily be instituted "Hospitals for Detention" for placing the unlucky man under further observation and treatment. It is better in that way to cure and do what is right, than as now recklessly to imprison. If he cannot be cured, he can at all events undergo a surveillance, compulsory if necessary. It is surely a folly to imprison a man who has some taint or disease, and send him out in no way relieved, to repeat the offence and ultimately become a chronic inmate of prisons.

At a medical discussion on sepsis, with special refer-



ence to the teeth, one doctor gave several asylum cases of depression, melancholia, irritability, and even mental symptoms, which were relieved as soon as sepsis of the throat, mouth and teeth was cured. How often the removal of adenoids has cured delinquency in youth, hence the great importance of overhauling every prisoner, young as well as old. Years ago, at the request of his employers, I was instrumental in saving a young clerk from the criminal ranks by an operation for tonsils and adenoids. He had been stealing money, but quickly reformed, and later gave his life for his country. In this case the plugging of the air passages with adenoids retarded the aeration of the blood. Badly aerated or septic blood meant a deficient supply of blood to the brain, resulting in a diminution of thinking power. In vulgar parlance he was muddled and stupid; and a condition of irresponsibility supervened. To be successful with a semi-mental case one has to be as clear and decided as a judge. I explained the condition to the boy and promised him that after the operation he would never feel tempted. The boy had confidence and was cured. I was very glad that one criminal career had been so easily averted, and it taught me how simple and how subtle may be the causes of going astray. Of what value could psycho-analysis be in such a case?

### THE GAMUT OF HUMANITY.

Are there not different layers in human intelligence and breed? We might represent it diagrammatically.<sup>1</sup>

There is first a middle layer of considerable depth occupied by ordinary man, more or less normal so far as we can discover. I object to the label *Homo sapiens*, as this type is very mediocre. *Homo domesticus* is more correct and divides up into average intelligence, clever and dull.

---

<sup>1</sup> Fig. 11, p. 70.



Homo sapiens  
(Super-normal).  
1 in 5000 - Galton.

Homo domesticus  
(Normal).

(Sub-normal).  
Degenerates.  
Weak-minded.

(Abnormal).  
Aments

G. Geniuses
F. Exceptional
E. Clever
D. Average
C. Dull
B. Weak-minded, but moral.
A. Degraded and immoral.
Imbeciles. Idiots

### The Gamut of Humanity.

FIG. 11.—This diagram explains itself; the different grades of humanity. The lower types are due to neglect, and our own fault.

Above them is a layer which can carry the label *Homo sapiens*, as in this group they are supermen in intelligence and capability. Galton estimated them at 1 in 5,000 of the population.

Below is a subnormal layer containing degenerates and weak-minded, while lowest of all come the aments, imbeciles and idiots. The insane are left out as being diseased specimens, artefacts. We require a different understanding and analysis for each group. No one psychological system can apply to every group alike.





SECTION B

# ABNORMAL MENTALITY

CHAPTERS VI-X





## Chapter VI

---

### SUMMARY

A RECENT DISCOVERY.

JEKYLL AND HYDE.

CHARCOT, THE PIONEER.

THE CASE OF MARIE H., IN 1884.

THE CASE OF FELIDA X., IN 1858.

### A RECENT DISCOVERY.

SINCE the Great War the public have realized that each individual is a composite personality ; in fact, that we are not one compact whole, but that we may live, as it were, at one time in one compartment and at another time in a different compartment. As the result of severe fighting, cases of shell shock became frequent, and in this condition a man's nature might be completely altered. Among the soldiers we had examples of what is called alternating personality or dual consciousness. The patient would forget all his past experiences, and even himself and his friends, as it were commencing in a new world, guided by his instincts and emotions. Often by hypnotism the battle scene would be re-enacted and by suggestion the former life would be re-established.

Cures might come spontaneously with rest, especially among the emotional French, where they were cheered up by their mates. I observed in 1914, whilst working among the French, that when they had chloroform they re-enacted the last battle scene, imitating bayonet action and calling out to charge. On recovery they wept like



babes, but the final psychological results were satisfactory, for they seemed relieved of the shock.

When the war came many new psychic aberrations appeared, such as loss of speech, loss of memory, and loss of touch with surroundings. This was one of the greatest tragedies of the war, for until medical men became aware of these conditions, death penalties possibly followed on the field in such cases.

In civil life after air raids many young people were changed. Some were seized with fear, while others were actually altered in moral character. Cases of young people developing habits of theft, forgery, or lying were common.

Under certain conditions we may split up from one self into two or more minor selves, and one of these may be switched on to represent the whole individual. When a subpersonality is in charge it would appear that all the other experiences and periods of life are obliterated.

The position is very complicated, but it is important to follow it up, especially as the new disease *encephalitis lethargica* is recognized as altering the nature or disposition of the sufferer. This so damages the brain that it forms a reasonable excuse in crime, the offender being classed as a moral imbecile, who previously to the illness was recognized as quite normal. From time immemorial the physician has regarded an attack of meningitis in childhood as wrecking the future of the patient. The child which has suffered from meningitis, born of good intelligent parents and well cared for, may grow up peevish, selfish, unsociable, antisocial, perhaps in adult life a criminal. We meet him when grown up giving trouble. The mother says, "he was a beautiful child and then he had what the doctor called a slight touch of brain fever, and he has been quite different since." Such is common history, and if they have not friends to protect them, they may become criminals, especially if their surroundings are poor. In dealing with erring humanity, there is always the question whether the defaulter is as he was born, and as Nature intended him to be.



## JEKYLL AND HYDE.

Robert Louis Stevenson forestalled the profession when he wrote his wonderful story, "Jekyll and Hyde." He doubtless got the idea from the writings of Professor Charcot, of Paris, who might be described as the father of functional nervous disorders.

It is nearly half a century since Charcot began the study of dual personality, and he defined it as one person becoming two, who lived alternately two distinct existences, each of which might be ignorant of the other, and at least one of them was always ignorant of the other. One of the personalities was normal, the other pathological. The normal was the primary state, and the secondary state was called by him an attack of vigilambulism.

One of Charcot's earliest cases was Marie H., who was normal until 1884, when she fell into a secondary state, continuing so for a long period, with only a few brief returns to normal. In the secondary state she was quite ignorant of everything and of every person connected with her normal state. In the normal condition she could not read, but she learned to read in the secondary state. She alternated in one or other of these conditions for years.

There appear to have been many cases of vigilambulism in France and important medico-legal questions may arise, because in the secondary state, call it B, the individual, usually a female, may voluntarily commit sexual acts, which she would refrain from when normal. Such a person may be taken advantage of or even assaulted when B, and know nothing of it when she has returned to the normal A. Cases of pregnancy under such circumstances have been frequently reported and probably occur to-day, especially with the present sexual instability. In well authenticated cases, while A cannot explain the pregnancy, B can give the fullest information as to what has occurred, but as B is in a



pathological condition, her evidence would not be accepted in a court of law.

Charcot considered this condition develops during hysteria, and as minor degrees of this complaint are common, it places such a sufferer at the mercy of unprincipled scoundrels. In fact, it may become a question of rape and merits further medico-legal consideration.

Dr. Azam, of Bordeaux, has reported a very important case, Felida X., which occurred in 1858, and has become classical in this type of nervous disorders. Felida X. first showed symptoms of dual personality at the age of 14, while sitting sewing; suddenly her head fell on her chest, and she appeared to be in a heavy sleep, from which it was difficult to rouse her. In a few minutes she awoke, but with quite a different expression, and even a different nature, smiling and bright, and singing as she took up her needlework. Normally she was dull and sad, always complaining of malaise, headaches and various pains. In the B state her character was more like that of a normal girl of 14. Mentally, in both conditions she was sound, with clear judgment and good moral character. In the B condition she lost all the pains and aches which A complained of, and which were put down to the imagination. While B knew all about A, A knew nothing about B, and this has an important bearing on the progress of the case. Whenever B changed back to A, she again dropped her head on her chest and slept for three or four minutes, and then, on waking, she was the same complaining, discontented invalid. Whatever she knew in the previous normal A state she remembered again, but she had complete amnesia, or forgetfulness of her secondary or B state. In fact, when A reappeared she went on with what she was doing previously when A left and B came. A slight tragedy now occurred, for in her secondary B state she became pregnant by her lover, to whom she was properly engaged to be married; evidently she yielded to him as B, whilst as A she resisted and was



most correct. She recognized her condition and talked freely about it as B, in fact in that state she had no sense of its impropriety. On the other hand, A knew nothing of her condition or the cause; but she knew that she was ill and getting worse. When her symptoms were explained to her in the A state, she went into hysterical convulsions for two or three hours. As years went on B, the second personality, took possession and the normal A returned only every three or four months for a few hours. This resembles my case of Mary Barnes, where B6 took permanent possession and A became a less frequent visitor, till she finally left altogether. In 1891 Felida suffered from an ovarian tumour, and I heard from Dr. Camille Julian, of Bordeaux, in 1907, that she was still alive, enjoying a simple old age.

The French physicians describe a condition of hysterical lethargy in which, without necessarily presenting the ordinary symptoms of hysteria, the patient may go into a sleep lasting only half an hour, or days, or even weeks. These are known to the public as cases of apparent death or trance which come to life again. When the individual wakes up she has no knowledge of any event during the period of her unconsciousness. In my case of multiple personality, one phase, B1, was a condition of trance lasting many days. I wish we could disconnect the term "hysteria," which is the mere expression of our ignorance.



## Chapter VII

---

### SUMMARY

MARY BARNES—TEN LIVES IN ONE.

B1 to B10 fully Described.

THE COMPARTMENT THEORY.

DISTINGUISHING FEATURES OF A SUBPERSONALITY.

### MARY BARNES—TEN LIVES IN ONE.

IT is now some thirty years since I was called to see a case, the features of which were entirely new to me. The family were very decent people of the tradesmen class, and of good yeoman extraction. The young patient was a bright girl, clever at school, with blue eyes, fair complexion and a rather long head. I was asked by the clergyman to take charge of her, as the club doctor had given her up as a case of hysteria. I was unable to satisfy myself as to diagnosis, and sought what help I could get, notably from my friend, the late Dr. Thomas Savill, who was one of our most learned neurologists.

I showed my patient at the Clinical Society, a noted neurologist presiding, and the company was most interested, this being the first case of the kind to be exhibited; but the President would not accept it as a genuine case.

The condition of the patient at this meeting, in February, 1896, was as follows:—

She was in the subpersonality B2, which resembled a child of 2 or 3 years of age, who did not understand things or names and clipped her words. Her father could bring the normal self, A, by coaxing and calling for "Mary," thus driving out B2. The normal, A, looked



round, surprised, at the twenty-five or thirty faces gazing at her, answered a few questions quite politely, but soon her countenance changed ; she frowned and fell into her father's arms. B2 had returned. So interested was the Society that I took her again a year later, when she had a warm reception, but no one understood her case. The feature of this remarkable case was the loose holding together of the subpersonalities, which constitute the ego, and it was clearly demonstrated at the meetings of the Clinical Society.

Discussing the case at a meeting some years later, a German doctor, a psychologist, said it was a case of moods, to which we are all liable. This could not be for moods do not dissociate themselves from the main ego, and are passing events in consciousness. Moods come and go in connection with some slight physiological disturbance, caused by some new phase in the environment. Experience has shown that the personality is not one fixed, indivisible unit, but is made up of subpersonalities, any one of which may be dissociated, or separated, from the ego, either temporarily or permanently.

Some believe in the compartment theory, others will not accept it. I hope to prove that it is possible to live in a compartment shut off from the rest of the personality or ego. The case I am about to describe exhibited ten separate subpersonalities.

At the suggestion of the late Dr. Savill, I propose to call the normal state A, and the abnormal B ; B1 to B10 represented the ten phases.

#### *B1 to B10.*

The term "dissociation of personality" exactly defines these cases of dual consciousness or alternating personality. The actual condition requires a little further explanation. The subpersonality is a unit detached from the main personality or ego. It is a separate life in itself, which suggests that there are separate compartments, and



if we are shut up in one we are excluded from the rest of the building. In such a state the unit or "sub" knows nothing of the others and the others know nothing of it. But with all this separation, there was in this case, and probably in others, a connecting link with the parents. This connection looks as if it were in the subconscious, or deepest covered-up memory, perhaps on the emotional plane of the basal ganglia.<sup>1</sup> In the case of Mary Barnes, whatever the subpersonality, she was more or less in touch with her parents; I say more or less, because she had no actual knowledge of them. Her brother and sister were strange to her, whilst myself, nurse and others were quite outside the circle. If the patient was in a state of mania or blindness, or imbecility, or in any other subpersonality, the embrace of the father or the touch of the mother's hand might produce a quieting effect, but not always.

Mary was aged 13, and in April, 1895, was supposed to have contracted influenza, possibly meningitis, which in the next five weeks developed into mania, delirium, catalepsy, coma, and finally she was laid out as dead. The mistake was discovered in time, and she was put into warm blankets and in a day or two consciousness returned. This "sub" we labelled B<sub>1</sub>, and it returned eight or nine times, lasting from half an hour to ten days at a visit.

### B<sub>2</sub>.

At my first visit the little patient appeared normal, but while I was talking to her she changed over to B<sub>2</sub>. She stopped talking, frowned and looked cross; then she pushed the toys and blanket away and turned a somersault on the bed. B<sub>2</sub> had now arrived. Her facial expression was completely altered; instead of her normal bright, intelligent face, she looked like a simple, rather vacant child. She talked as a child; for instance, saying "dat"

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* "Experiments on Decerebrated Animals." By Sherrington, Chapter XXVII.



for "that," nor did she know anybody by name, for she gave all her acquaintances fresh names. Her father was named Tom Dodd; her mother Mary Ann; her brother Thomas was George; her sister was a "gigger," for giggler; one doctor was Sam, and the doctor who preceded me was "Doctor Jim," and so on. She never mistook or confused these names and their relationship. I never got a name, but was merely styled "the nice doctor," or "the dear Jim," confusing me with her old friend. She had no idea of how to place me.

For the sake of simplicity I will here give further particulars of this abnormal phase. The patient became childish, clipped her words, and had no knowledge of ordinary names, nor of her ordinary surroundings. Thus, she did not know the meaning of the word "legs," and if you explained, she would say, "Legs, what legs? What dat mean? Dese sings? Dese long sings?" and so on. When I said, "I want you to walk," she replied, "Walk, what dat, what walk mean?" I said, "Get on your feet," pointing to them. "Get on them things? Those feet? What feet? Walk, mean get on those things? Can't do it." So I lifted her on to her feet, but she could not stand. Her feet gave way, turning outwards. But some things she appeared to know; thus, she would call a drawing slate "a jawing skate," and yet if I touched her nose and asked what it was called, she either might not know, or would call it her ear. But if I said it was the nose, she would argue before she understood. Similarly, she called her mouth her nose, and her chin her mouth, and her ears were her eyes. This habit of misnaming things disappeared in a month or two; probably she heard the right names from those about her, for in this abnormal condition she would be quite lively and bright, though restless. She would turn over books, looking for N's and O's. P she called H, and E, B. She also reversed colours, seeing the complementary colour. Black she called white, green red, and vice versa. She wrote her words backwards, beginning at



the tail of each word, and writing it from right to left, but to the right of the word preceding it, so that she had to calculate what space would be wanted for each word, as may be seen from the specimen reproduced.<sup>1</sup> Observe the corrections: "gt" is crossed out for want of room, and it also shows how she began at the end of each word. This writing was done with ease and ordinary rapidity, and the total effect of it does not differ much from ordinary writing. She also wrote figures backwards. She could not at first write to dictation nor originate a word, behaving as if the word-centre in the brain were switched off from the writing-centre. She could only copy—the writing-centre communicating with the word-visual-centre.

But as weeks rolled on, and as her education improved, she acquired the power of writing from her own ideas or to dictation. This may suggest that in the abnormal state her store-house of word-memories was not empty, but that she lacked the power of association of names with objects. At the same time as this new personality appeared, that is, in the fifth week of her illness, catalepsy occurred. The cataleptic fits came on no matter whether she was in the normal or abnormal mental condition.

It was at this stage I took charge of what was supposed to be a case of hysteria. She changed about from this condition to normal, sometimes for four or five hours or even days each way, sometimes only for a few minutes. The subpersonalities never changed in character, and when one reappeared it picked up the threads exactly where it left off.

I watched the case closely for more than three years, and at the same time she was frequently seen by other medical men, including Dr., now Sir Robert Armstrong-Jones, Dr. Milne Bramwell, Dr. Lloyd Tuckey, Dr. T. Savill, Dr. Mickle, Mr. Barrett, Mr. Barkworth, Sir Thomas Barlow, and others. It was a disappointment

---

<sup>1</sup> Fig. 12.

the nice doctor  
if you is coming to see me to  
at night i wully ~~see~~ see  
good if you do not hit  
a ~~funny~~ funny on me you

FIG. 12.—The writing of B 2. She began at the right side, the tail or end of the word. Observe the corrections in this and figure 17, where there was not room at the left to complete the word. Here "gt" in writing "night" was left, also on account of incorrect spelling.



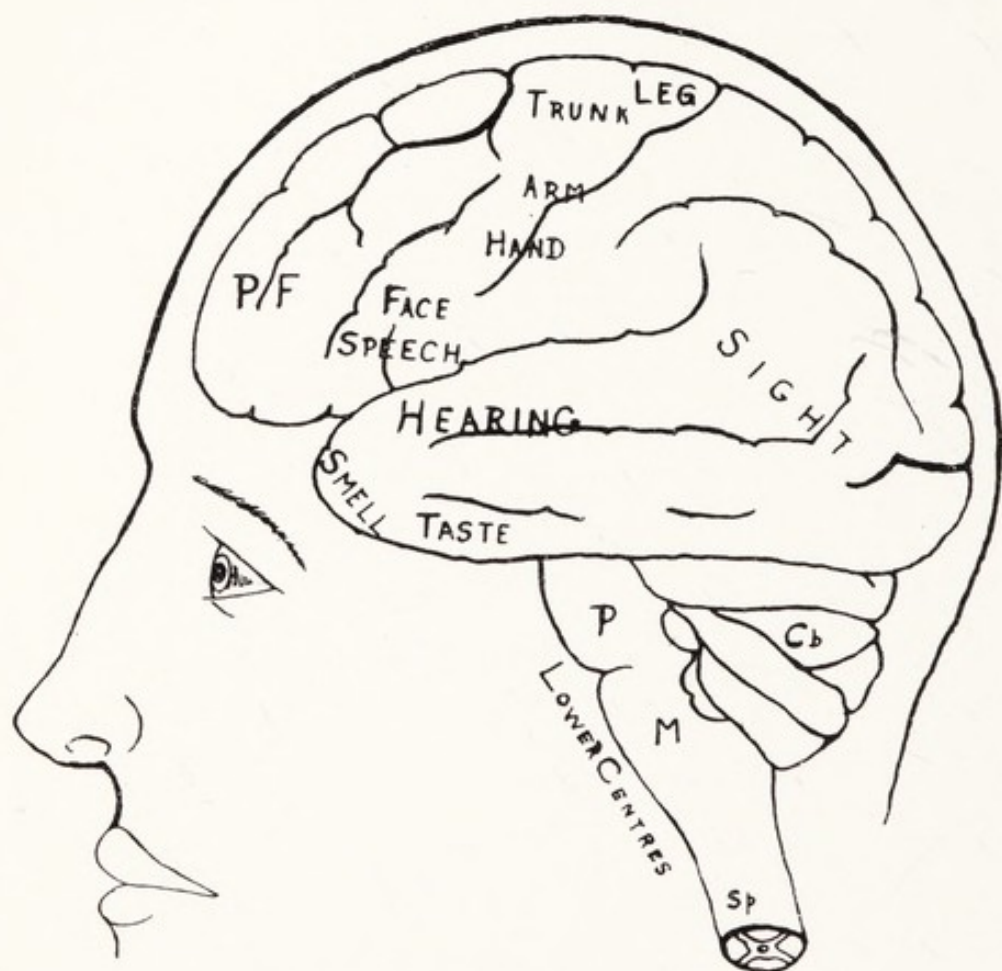


FIG. 13.—This diagram is to show the prefrontal area P F, which is supplied by the anterior cerebral artery, extending to the foot centre beyond the leg centre. It was on account of the spasm of the artery on the right side, depriving the foot centre of blood, that when in this condition, the left foot was paralysed. The right side of the brain controls the left side of the body and vice versa.

that Mr. F. Myers was prevented by illness from attending. No one was able to hypnotize her, and hysteria, as such, was dismissed.

I finally came to the conclusion that it was due to the circulation of the blood being shut off certain areas of the brain. Everyone knows that the numb, white, "dead" fingers are due to a spasmodic contraction of the blood-vessels. I suggest that this brain phenomenon is due to a spasm of blood-vessels, producing anæmia of the brain in certain areas, and thus arresting the activity of the area affected. The two processes may be allied. When a spasm of the arteries of the fingers persists for weeks and months, we have chilblains, or an aggravated form called Raynaud's disease, in which the part is to all intent and purposes dead. The fingers become pale, livid, and without sensation in Raynaud's disease. If we substitute the term brain cortex for fingers, the picture is complete. A study of the brain surface and its superficial network of blood-vessels proves this proposition, for I have not yet mentioned that whenever B2 arrived she lost all power in the left foot and ankle and fell to the ground. Now we have it completely explained. The motor centre for the left foot<sup>1</sup> is supplied by a branch of the right anterior cerebral artery, and this same artery also supplies the right prefrontal lobe of the cortex, which is one of the chief centres of intelligence.<sup>2</sup> The two prefrontal lobes lie above the brows in the forehead. Dr. J. Shaw Bolton has demonstrated that they are the highest centres of control and of intelligence. When this right prefrontal lobe was switched off, the association of the present with the memory of the past was gone. Her right prefrontal lobe was out of action, because of the spasmodic contraction of the right anterior cerebral

---

<sup>1</sup> The motor centre for the left foot is on the right side of the brain, at the upper end of the ascending frontal convolution, and dips down on the inside to a part of the paracentral lobule. The right half of the brain controls the left side of the body, and vice versa.

<sup>2</sup> *Vide* Fig. 13.



artery. She saw her father and mother, but the labels of memory were lost. She may have recognized them but could not place them mentally, and at the same time the whole of her ordinary intelligence was shut off. Her deeply-hidden filial emotion, or instinct, was not destroyed, so what did she call them? Not mother or papa, for she could not associate names with things, so she gave other names that were probably passing through her mind, namely, Tom Dodd and Mary Ann.

It is quite proven that shutting off the prefrontal area deprives the individual of normal intelligence. This patient was not stupid, but ignorant from loss of memory, and required complete re-educating. I quote elsewhere the case of a tumour of the prefrontal lobe, where intelligence gradually lapsed. The same occurs in general paralysis of the insane, which begins in the prefrontal grey cortex and is associated with loss of control. I once had a case of a bullet in the prefrontal cortex, and the man found his way into prison, but was rescued by Scotland Yard and placed in suitable surroundings.

### B3.

Subpersonality B3 appeared about six weeks after B2 first came. There was a good deal of constitutional disturbance at these changes, such as flushes, sighings, and general confusion. We were pleased with B3, for she was a jolly girl, very sociable, and romping like a tomboy, and enjoying very good health. At the beginning B3 was very cross and bit her clothes, but when rebuked was sorry, and said it was a naughty man and that he only came for a minute. She was as reasonable as any ordinary child, and said she would behave properly. As she was so mischievous, her parents called her "Old Nick." Her writing was quite ordinary and forwards,<sup>1</sup> from left to right. We shall return to B3 later.

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* Fig. 14.

My dear Dr. Wilson

I am writing you a few lines to let you know Poor old NICK has woke up I will tell you all about it I woke up all

FIG. 14.—Writing of B 3.

Dear Dr. Wilson

I am writing you a letter to tell you how I am enjoying myself in M  
It is such a glorious place I

FIG. 15.—Writing by B 6.





*B4.*

In the B4 substage which occurred first in August, 1895, she was a deaf mute. During the attacks she took no notice of loud noises close to her ear, and communicated by talking on her fingers, which method she understood slightly in the normal state. This B4 state came on after a prolonged catalepsy, but passed off quite suddenly, changing to B2. But in September she was again deaf and dumb for a fortnight. She changed back from B4 to B2, "a thing."

In this condition there may have been a spasm of the artery (middle cerebral) which supplies the centre of hearing, which we know would bring on mutism, as the result of the deafness.

*B5.*

The B5 substage appeared only on one occasion, November 26, 1895, and lasted until December 20. In this condition she had attacks of paralysis in the legs, became deaf and dumb for about an hour at a time, and lost all memory of events which had occurred more than three days before. She said she had "only been here three days" and was "only three days old." As I had not seen her for three days, she consequently did not know me. She also reversed things. She called the flame of the fire or gas black, also black white, and a fat pug thin. She spelt backwards but wrote forwards. Otherwise she understood everything in the house and gave no trouble. She complained of pain in the left temple.

*B6.*

B6 was the most normal of any personality, and the one in which she has continued since her recovery from the illness, which lasted about two years. B6 called herself "Pretty dear," or "Good creature." She was a sweet, intelligent girl; but she had no knowledge of any event or experience which happened before this illness began. Nor did she remember her friends and school-



fellows of that period, for on meeting old friends she had to be introduced afresh, which proved she was not her original normal self. She had to be taught to spell, read and write. She denied ever having seen me before. She was rather like B2 ("a thing"), but more tractable. B2 sometimes showed a mischievous disposition, e.g., breaking window-panes or putting mustard in her younger sister's eye. B6, on the contrary, was very kind. Another point of distinction was shown later, in that B6 learned a little French from her father, while neither B2 nor A could learn French.

B6 was rather an important personality, for now the normal A became a very rare visitor, putting in an appearance perhaps only once a week, while B6 became more permanent, until finally after two years it remained constant and all other personalities, including A, disappeared. Usually B6 has no motor paralysis and is domesticated and helps her mother. B6 is rather a subdivided personality, for as "Good creature" she can walk, but as "Pretty dear" she cannot. "Pretty dear" occasionally loses the use of her hands. Her handwriting may be regarded as her normal style, for the sake of comparison (see figs 15, 16, and 22).

### B7.

On May 12, the seventh personality appeared. She called herself "Adjvice Uneza." She only came once and lasted ten days to a fortnight, meanwhile alternating with B2 and gradually fading. The special features of B7 were that she had a clear memory of small events of her early childhood, while all memory of and since her illness was obliterated. Thus, she spoke of going on a tram to the London Hospital to see her father, a thing which she really had done in April, 1885, when  $2\frac{1}{2}$  years old, and remembered her mother being ill with diphtheria when she was under 2. She remembered the first part of her own illness, and also a visit to L, but nothing of the relapse or meningitis which followed in April and May,



Dear Mr. Wilson,  
I am writing to  
say that I shall be  
able to keep appointment  
for next Monday, if you  
will write me full  
particulars.

FIG. 16.—Writing of B 6 after supposed recovery.

The dear tomodod  
just a line to you to  
tell you how much I  
wish you was here. I  
hope there is some  
thing ~~in~~ ~~the~~  
your pocket to night

FIG. 17.—Writing by B 9. This is also written backwards; observe the "n" crossed out, and the "ur," perhaps for want of room.





1895. B7 could not stand nor walk. We know that in some cases of senile cerebral decay the memory of early childhood stands out clearly. Does not substage B7 somewhat resemble this condition, and suggest that from arterial spasm the more superficial and recent cortical layers were weakened or paralysed, while the deeper layers with earlier memories were stimulated? But this is speculation.

*B8.*

B8 was very short-lived, only stopping four days. She was very confused and had a severe convulsion.

*B9.*

On October 10 "Tom's darling" gradually left and a new personality arrived, B9. The transition seemed to occupy the whole day and was not, as usual, accompanied by any sudden physical disturbance. She had, however, fits of temper, chasing her younger sister about, and trying to beat her with a stick. She talked like a baby, could not walk properly and could only manœuvre about with a chair. She also tried to hit everyone with a strap, watching her opportunity, and attempted to lock herself into the room. She spoke of things which had happened in her illness of April, 1895; so she must have been here before, and as her parents remember similar incidents lasting off and on for some days, it is clear that this was not the first development of B9. Her mind was a blank. She said she had no name and did not know me. This state lasted in 1896 for about a week. She wrote and spelt backwards like B2.<sup>1</sup> Note the very illiterate style, and observe the corrections beginning with the last letter in each word.

Knowing how they worried "Tom Dodd" (her father), she tried to give up her naughty ways. She could speak a little French, but she did not know how she had learnt it. It so happens that only B6, and not even A, Mary Barnes,

---

<sup>1</sup> Fig. 17.



knew French. She talked of when she was here before, and said she was in bed, and that "Jim," as she called a particular doctor, used to come and see her, thus further recalling events which had happened in April, 1895. We evidently had not recognized this personality in the early mental tumult. Another doctor, whom she called "Sam," and whom she very much disliked, also came to her memory. She happened at this time to see him in the street and in temper shook her fist at him, which at once brought on an attack of catalepsy. She knew nothing of any events in her life previous to October 10, 1896, except such as had happened in April, 1895, during her acute meningitis.

She at first would read backwards from right to left, making nonsense; but her father soon taught her to read in the proper way. Although she regained at times the power of walking, she might be temporarily attacked by paralysis not only of the legs but of the arms.

A new feature occurred, a tendency to kleptomania which she defended on the principles of common and modern socialism: "If people don't give you things, why, nick it; quite right too!" One day when in the village she took an apple at a shop door, but seeing a policeman she went back and replaced it. She was always threatening to steal, but after a time, on being told it was wrong, was sorry. During this substage, "Nick," or B3, appeared for a day on October 16. After "Nick" left, though confused, she seemed to know that she had been in a different condition. This might be aided by the free amount of talking around her. The same evening she walked up to my house as B3 or "Nick." She wished to show me a present, a toy wigwam, which had been given her an hour before. Suddenly B9, the retrograde state, arrived. Her face altered, and she would have fallen from the chair but for help, as she had lost the power in her legs. The toy fell from her hands, and when the first dazed condition had passed off I picked it up and tried to interest her in it, but she did







FIG. 18.—Drawn by Mary Barnes while blind ; a book being held in front.  
She was guided by touch.



not care for it, and said she had never seen it before. When B<sub>3</sub> returned, she again was interested in the toy. The next day she was B<sub>9</sub>, and so remained for another fortnight. If asked her name, she said she had no name. She was frightened by thunderstorms, and after one had an attack of catalepsy. Yet B<sub>3</sub>, "Nick," liked thunderstorms.

B<sub>10</sub>.

In the evening of December 29, 1896, she gradually changed. She sat on the hearth-rug, was cross and stupid, and finally her mind became a blank. This condition, which I have called substage B<sub>10</sub>, developed in the course of the next two or three days till she became a blind imbecile. There was now no excitement, only apathy. She sat quiet by the hour, absolutely blind, with a vacant, stupid expression. She understood nothing, and at times appeared to be deaf. Her speech was incoherent, and she used very few words. She called out "Mutter," "Tom" (her father), and also "Picters." There seemed to be paralysis of the ocular muscles, as the eyes protruded and stared, and the pupils were widely dilated. She was guided only by touch and sound. If I handed her a piece of paper the rustle guided her and she grabbed at it. Sometimes she would sit for hours rolling beads on a tray.

On January 3, 1897, about 2 p.m., she was observed to be drawing with a pencil. As she was drawing correctly, it was thought that sight had returned. But it was not so.

It is remarkable that while Mary Barnes, the normal A, never could draw at all, this blind personality, B<sub>10</sub>, could draw perfectly. Was this a hereditary ancestral faculty suddenly called into exercise, or an unknown latent power? She used to draw by memory the fashion plates or pictures which one sees in the illustrated papers.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> See figs. 18 and 19, which latter was in coloured crayons. Also observe handwriting of B<sub>10</sub>, fig. 22.



They were very well done, even to small details of laces and patterns, &c. At a later stage she began colour-drawing with crayons. She was absolutely blind, as was proved by placing books between her eyes and the paper, which made no difference either to the rapidity or accuracy of her performance. We also proved that she was guided by touch. If the drawing was pulled away, she would put out her forefinger and ask for it to be placed on the part she had been drawing by calling out the name, say the veil or nose. Then if her finger was so placed, she would resume. Later she became so sensitive that she could herself detect by touch where the pencil marks were, and if the paper was shifted could begin again correctly. Ten weeks after the blindness came on she was able to copy by touch. Her general intelligence was then improved, though the blindness continued. If one drew a pencil line across her picture, she would detect it by touch and rub it out. It was very strange to see her feeling the copy with the left fingers and drawing with the right. She copied writing in the same way. She could feel the red ink lines ruled on foolscap. Sometimes we thought she could see, for drawing in colours she would hold the crayons so close to the eye that they would sometimes touch the cornea, which at this stage was completely insensitive.

Towards the end of January, 1897, after four weeks' blindness, she began to improve, not only in intelligence, but also in sight. She was very short-sighted, but could see colours and pictures at a distance of 3 inches. She could not see about a room, and had to feel where she was going. This we proved by several games at hide and seek, which did not please her when she was tricked. She was sufficiently blind to walk against the wall. Ophthalmoscopically the eye was normal. The late Sir John Tweedy kindly examined her eyes, and wrote the following report of them:—

“February 8, 1897.

“I have examined Miss Barnes's eyes. The media are clear, the discs and fundus healthy; the refraction of the



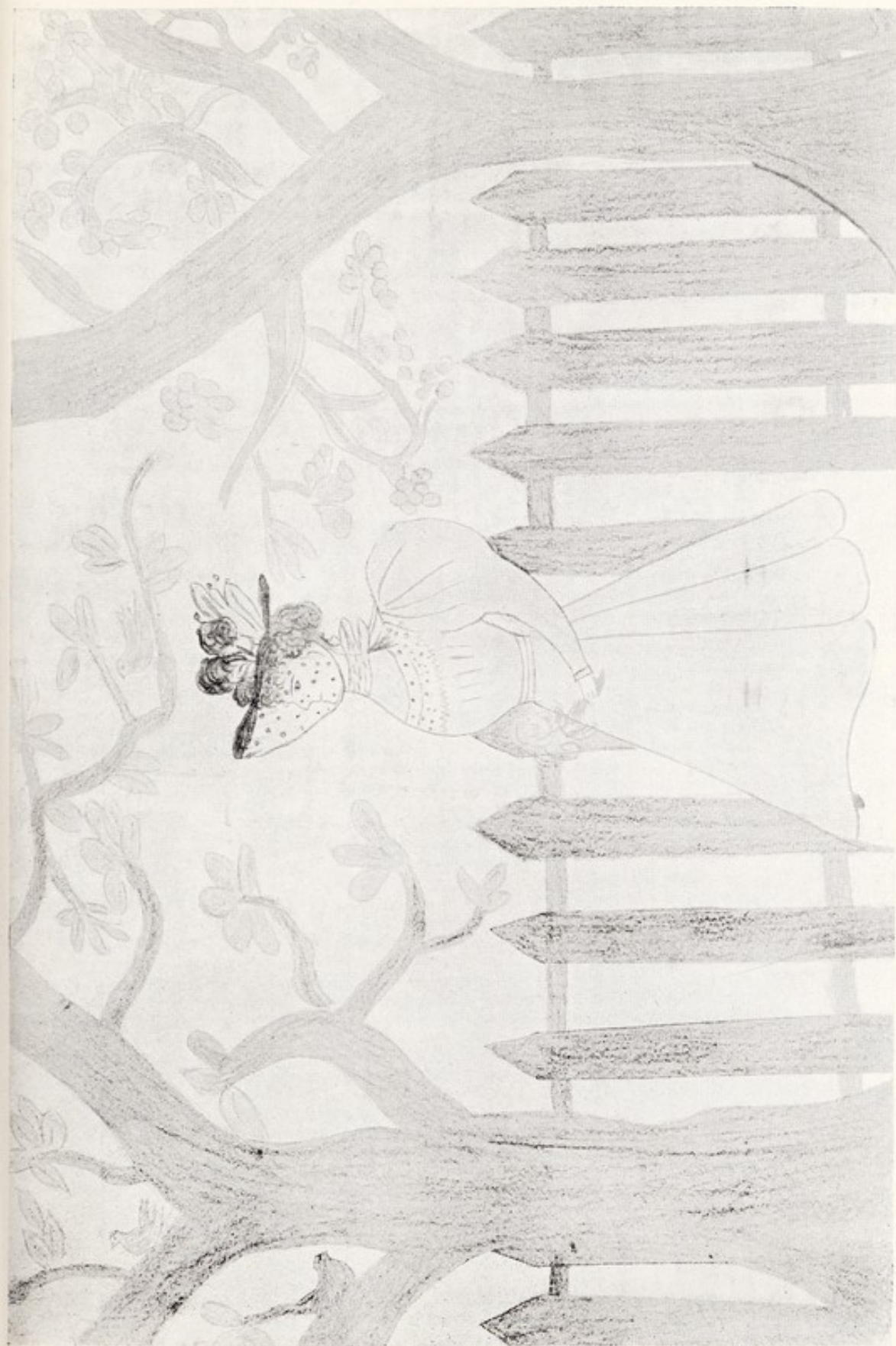


FIG. 19.—Drawing in coloured crayons by Mary Barnes when quite blind. Guided by touch. At times she would look at the crayons to determine their colour, and would press the crayon against the cornea which was insensitive.



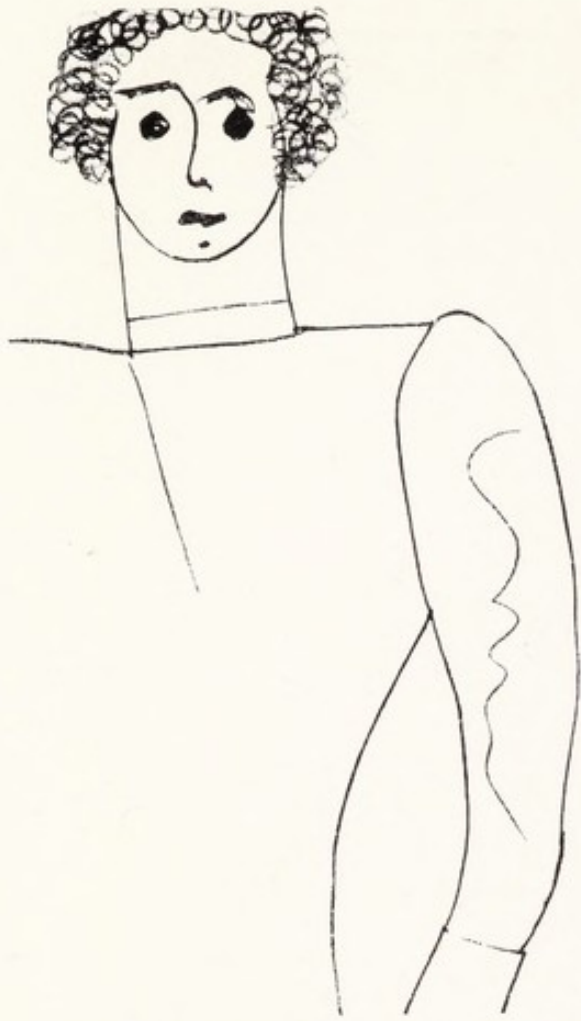


FIG. 20.—Drawing by "Old Nick."



FIG. 21.—Drawing by B 6, "Good creature."

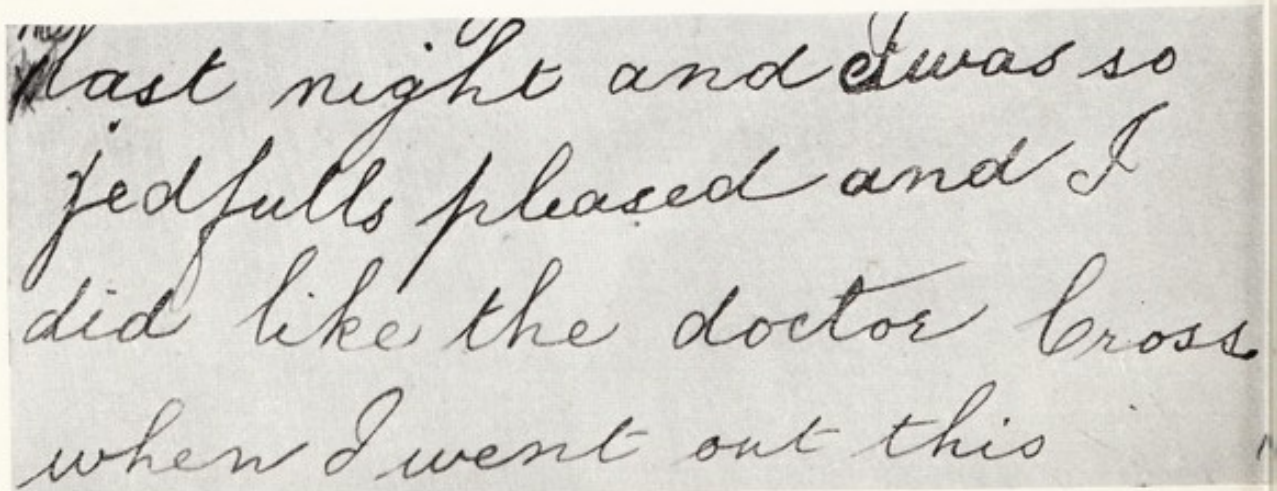

 Last night and I was so  
 jaded fulls pleased and I  
 did like the doctor cross  
 when I went out this

FIG. 22.—Writing by B 10, when not affected by blindness. Observe the baby spelling of "dreadful."

eyes is also practically normal, there being merely a slight degree of myopia in the left eye. The eyelids were widely open and seemed spasmodically retracted, as in cases of exophthalmic goitre. The child seemed unable to see anything at more than 2 ft. away, but she could read words of the smallest print (No. 1 Jaeger) at about 3 in. from the eye. There is, however, nothing in the eye to explain the peculiar nature of her sight.

“J. TWEEDY.”

There are two other drawings of interest, because they are so different to the artistic performances of B10. One (fig. 20) is hopeless and was drawn by “Old Nick,” B3. She took two days over the performance. The other (fig. 21) is a better production and was drawn by B6, the “good creature,” on May 13, 1897, about a month after B3 drew the other figure. B6 burst out laughing when she saw “Old Nick’s” drawing.<sup>1</sup>

### THE COMPARTMENT THEORY.

The following incidents are of interest in support of the compartment theory. On one occasion her father brought her, when B2, to my house to have a tooth removed. She suffered a great deal and did not appear to have the normal resistance, for she rolled on the floor in agony. At this early period A, the normal, used often to return and stay sometimes for a day, and sometimes for only a few minutes. A returned during the period of

---

<sup>1</sup>Anatomically we must divide sight into two elements, sensory and psychic. In this stage, B10, the area of sensory vision was quite paralysed. Extreme action of the sympathetic would cause dilatation of the pupil, and if it also constricted the circulation in the area supplied by the posterior cerebral artery, it would shut off the corpora quadrigemina and the lower part of the occipital lobe and calcarine areas, which are connected with sensory vision. Whereas, since she could draw, she must have been guided in so doing by her psychic visual centre, which is situated in the occipital area, this being supplied by the middle cerebral artery.



toothache, and A had no pain nor knowledge of the tooth being affected. The late Dr. Althaus, a German brain specialist, was at my house to lunch. It was a Sunday, and my assistant gave Mary chloroform and I drew the tooth. When she woke up she was free of pain and very pleased, and was still B2. For Dr. Althaus' benefit, I got Mary's father to coax her back to her normal state, A. She at once had an absolutely different physiognomy. Instead of the frowning, worried, confused face of B2, she had her natural, pleasant, smiling face and was very nicely-mannered to the stranger and myself. She also stood properly on both feet. It will be remembered that B2 was paralysed in her left foot. She suddenly noticed the gap in her teeth and the blood, and asked what had happened. She said she never had toothache, and, being told what happened when she was "asleep," the shock so upset her that she flushed, looked cross and confused, and, on account of the paralysis of the left foot, fell to the ground. B2 had returned.

When she was normal she was curious to know what these funny feelings meant, and was very anxious as to events happening that she knew nothing of. We therefore told her that she went asleep at times, and tried to pass it off, but she was always a little suspicious. As we tried to keep her name in front of her to keep up a self-identity, occasionally in a state like B2 she would say "Mary Barnes has gone"; or that she is "very cross with Mary Barnes for going"; or that she hates Mary Barnes because people like Mary more than herself. Being one of the first cases of the kind, we were in ignorance as to the probable result and were always striving to bring her back to her normal self, but after a few months the normal person, A, left and never returned.

Before this illness she had often seen the sea, but when taken down as B3, "Old Nick," she was not only surprised, but frightened. After a time she began to paddle, and later bathed. The following year she went, again as B3, to the same place and remembered it, and



this year learnt to swim. Later on in the same year she returned, as B6, "the good crittur," and was much surprised, for she said it was all quite new to her; in fact, she had not seen the sea before in that subpersonality, B6. She was induced to bathe, but could not swim. Her father taught her to swim, and it is probable that her previously educated muscles took it up more quickly, for she learned to swim almost in one lesson. Here is a problem for the psycho-physiologist.

B6 was always very intelligent, and was a near approach to the normal A. As B6 she saw the Diamond Jubilee procession and described it very correctly. Moreover, at any time later during B6 she could describe it, whereas in other subpersonalities she had no knowledge of it.

Here is another example of the continuity of the personalities. On December 29, 1896, she was B6, but in the evening changed to B10, the blind imbecile, changing about later to other conditions, chiefly B3. On the evening of May 13, 1897, B3 left and B6 came back. She was at once put back mentally to the last occasion when B6 was here, namely, December 29, 1896. She thought it was still December, in reality the morning of December 30. She said she had just "woked up,"<sup>1</sup> and remembered her father putting her to bed the previous evening. In fact, her father had put her to bed the evening of December 29, as he thought some change was approaching. Of course she could not reconcile what she found in May with what she left in December. She expected snow and lamplight and fires; instead, the evening was light and flowers on the table.

Yet one more instance which shows continuity of memory as well as giving support to the compartment theory.

One Sunday, in September, 1896, during dinner, about 1 o'clock, while she was "Old Nick," B3, she fell off her chair and was flushed, breathing heavily, and they

---

<sup>1</sup> In her normal state she would have used the proper word "awoke."



found that B6, "pretty dear," "Tom's darling," or "good crittur," had arrived. Matters followed their usual erratic course with different changes, and in the following April she went into B1, the trance condition. We really thought she was dying. Sir Thomas Barlow, who saw her, concurred, and we longed to end this painful illness. Her lips were moistened with Bovril, and on a Sunday morning, about noon, I thought it was only a matter of hours, and asked them to let me know when she passed away. Instead, an hour later, her brother came up hurriedly to say that "Old Nick," B3, had returned. She was sitting up, and wanted to dress and finish her dinner. She complained of being in bed, and they could hardly restrain her. Here was a transformation that required a good deal of explanation—a weak, comatose, almost pulseless child suddenly to throw off this condition and change into a noisy, strong, romping girl. Dare anyone have allowed her to dress and go downstairs and eat a big dinner?

This illustrates the continuity of her memory and experience. The September memory of B3 had lain dormant all those six months. She woke up again as B3 on Sunday, April 4, 1897, about 1 o'clock, out of a state of coma, and wanted to finish the dinner she left on the previous September 20, 1896, also a Sunday, when she was B3 for the last time.

Here is another curious fact that we never clearly understood, which showed that B1 and B2 each had their own preference as regards the back and front bedrooms. During phase B1 there had frequently been attacks of mania, which attacks always occurred in the back bedroom. Once, when lying in bed in the front room as B2 (with the left foot paralysed, as usual in B2), she slipped out of bed, went on her hands and knees to the back bedroom, climbed on the bed, and suddenly developed an attack of mania. The premonitory condition may have been gradual, for she had been ailing for two or three days, but the actual transition was



momentary. In this mania she threw herself about, tried to walk up the wall, screamed with fear, calling out "snakes," and had a most terrified expression. At first pale and cold, she later showed marked signs of rage combined with fear, being flushed and excited. The attack, after about three hours, ended in exhaustion, and after a sleep she woke up as B<sub>2</sub> and crawled back to her bed in the front room, which was her favourite room. At these times B<sub>1</sub> knew no one, and beating on cans and tins close to her head failed to attract any notice.

It is inexplicable how such an important part of the mind, the emotion of fear, could be switched off and on like this. Everything supports the compartment theory, ten separate lives, each absolutely disconnected from the other, but each life an entity in itself.

The late Dr. Charles Mercier, one of the greatest authorities on these problems, was at first supremely sceptical, but later was deeply interested in this case and examined her. He said it was the most remarkable case he had seen, and that it looked as if a man might commit murder in one personality and be hanged in another.

There are as yet but few cases reported, and none that I have read show such complete dissociation as this one. In many of these cases, as, for instance, in the remarkable case of Sally Beauchamp, described by Dr. Morton Prince, hypnotism and suggestion were used, and surely must have influenced the course of events. In Sally's case each personality had some consciousness of the others. In Mary Barnes, each subpersonality was entirely ignorant of each and all of the other subpersonalities. Sally was a regular scamp, teasing and laughing at her host, Miss Beauchamp. The three or four personalities came and went "in kaleidoscopic succession." This case, which was published in 1906, resembled my case of Mary Barnes in many particulars, but differed in that no one succeeded in hypnotizing Mary; whereas Miss Beauchamp and her other personalities were ultimately conjoined and cured by hypnotism.



DISTINGUISHING FEATURES OF A  
SUB-PERSONALITY.

We must distinguish between a subpersonality which is dissociated or shut off from the ego, and an obsession or possession which may be likened to an unhealthy or pathological psychic development.

In the case of Mary Barnes, she has grown up into a clever, intellectual woman, and leads a normal, active life, undertaking great responsibility, yet she cannot be the complete ego, or the same person that she was born. Her life before the illness is a blank, and her former friends have quite passed out of her memory. When she recovered she began life again as B6, a very perfect, clear mental condition and, but for those blanks, resembled her original self. I often wonder which of us is his real self, the original ego, for a slight damage to the brain in childhood may alter the whole life. The brain is such a delicate instrument, and so easily put out of order, that it behoves us in the great social struggle to give the closest attention to those cases that fall by the way. The cause of Mary Barnes' illness was meningitis or encephalitis in one form or another. Whilst the psychologist viewed Mary Barnes' case purely from the mental side, I viewed it also as a physiologist and regarded the base as pathological, a disturbance of the higher, more recently developed brain cells; and I think it is the same in other forms of encephalitis. Mary Barnes may be said to have recovered, but judged by her memory she is not the same person to-day that she was before her illness. Certain layers of the later-developed brain-cells were probably put out of action, and she was thrown back some years in her life and in her memory. In fact, the early years, before 1895, with their associated memories, were cut clean out of her life for ever. But once this throw-back was ended, she could begin afresh with vigour and build up a new life and new experiences. To her ordinary friends she was normal, with the exception of the blanks alluded to.



And what about ourselves? Some illness or some temporary arrest of development may have robbed us of the personality which God gave us at birth. It may be a kind disposition is now inclined to be peevish, suspicious or irate. A brilliant intellect may show a lowered intelligence. Do we remember that Mary was a remarkably bright and happy child, and showed it in her face? Suddenly, when B<sub>2</sub> came, which meant shutting off the blood-supply in the highest part of the brain, the prefrontal, she looked dazed, vacant and stupid. This is of added interest in showing the relationship of the higher frontal brain-cells to the facial muscles of expression; a Darwinian problem.

We must urge the importance of careful treatment of all children who have had any brain trouble, and the treatment must be rest, quiet, (?) ultra-violet rays, and non-stimulating food. The very best of children may, if neglected or misunderstood, drift in later life to immorality, dishonesty, or indeed to any crime.<sup>1</sup>

I have described the case of Mary Barnes to prove to the layman how it is possible for an individual of the highest character to be completely altered, mentally and morally, by pathological conditions, and then return to the normal, as if seized with a wild delirium. It is possible that B<sub>1</sub> was a case of *encephalitis lethargica*, although the disease was not discovered for another 20 years. This disease produces moral changes and mental deterioration, and so hampered is the profession by law and lawyers, that 76 were reported by Dr. A. C. Parsons as being sent to prison in 1926. Why are we so behind in our methods?

---

<sup>1</sup> For further particulars of this remarkable case, see the *Proceedings of the Society for Psychical Research*, Part xlix, October, 1904, vol. XVIII. The originals are in the library of the Mental Hospital, at Morningside, Edinburgh.



## Chapter VIII

---

### SUMMARY

A RECORD OF CASES : MARY REYNOLDS AND OTHERS.

AN AMERICAN LADY IN GOOD CIRCUMSTANCES.

EPILEPSY AND DOUBLE CONSCIOUSNESS.

Two Murderers.

DR. T. HYSLOP'S OPINION.

TRAUMATIC OBLIVION : A CASE OF MEDICO-LEGAL INTEREST.

### A RECORD OF CASES.

**D**DOUBLE personality is not a new phenomenon, though it may occur more frequently with the strain of advancing civilization. In searching records, the first case that I can find occurred in the early part of last century.

The subject of our inquiry was one Mary Reynolds,<sup>1</sup> born in 1791, in Birmingham, and who emigrated with her parents to the far west of America in 1795. She was "uncommonly well balanced," though a tendency to be low-spirited. When about 18, she became subject to hysterical fits, and was found one day lying, unconscious and in convulsions, in a field, where she had been reading. When she rallied she was blind and deaf, B1, but recovered in a few weeks. Three months later she was found in a profound sleep, which lasted about twenty-four hours, and when she awoke she had lost all recollection

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vide the Occult Review*, 1907, and *Transactions of the College of Physicians*, Philadelphia, April 4, 1888.



of her former life, nor did she know her relatives. This condition rendered her precisely like a new-born infant, except for the faculty of pronouncing a few words (B<sub>2</sub>). She rapidly learnt to read and write, and would argue as though her intellect was fully developed. One morning, five weeks later, she awoke in her original state, as if nothing had happened, and took up her ordinary life precisely where she left it when she became abnormal. She was surprised at certain new arrangements of things around her, occurring in what she thought was one night. In a few weeks the deep slumber returned, and on waking she took up her second life, B<sub>2</sub>, precisely where she had left it off. These alternations continued for about fifteen years. When about the age of 35, she settled permanently into her second state, and so remained for the last twenty-five years of her life. The periods of the normal, or A, condition gradually grew shorter, till A disappeared, while the abnormal, B<sub>2</sub>, state varied in time from a few hours to several months. The transition was quite easy from B<sub>2</sub> to A, but it occurred from A to B<sub>2</sub> only after prolonged sleep. She stated that previous to her transition from A to B she had a terrible fear as of death upon her, lest she should not return. Each period was unconscious of the other, forming corresponding blanks in her memory of the ruling period. The case resembles that of Mary Barnes in important points.

Dr. Dufay de Blois reports the case of a seamstress, R. L., who became subject to momentary unconsciousness, and thus passed into a second personality. The normal A had defective vision, whereas B could see perfectly. The abnormal B was more active mentally, and talked of herself in the third person. The condition lasted two or three hours, the normal A knowing nothing of the second personality, B, and vice versa.

W. Mesnet reported the case of a soldier, F., wounded in the head during the Franco-German war of 1870. He made his living in Paris by singing in cafés. He entered a second personality, B, after a transitory unconscious-



ness, during which there was very little change, except that he became a thief and was insensitive to touch, or anæsthetic. He knew nothing of this change, which occurred every two or three weeks.

M. Tissié published the case of a man, aged 30, who was a neurotic, and occasionally had dreams directing him to go to certain places in quest of work. He would rise in the morning in another personality, B, and obey the dream. In this way he lost his proper work, and was reduced to poverty. He was often robbed in the B state, and might tear up bank notes in mistake for ordinary paper, and unfortunately he was frequently put in prison for tramping. His case was specially interesting, for, though A, the normal, knew nothing of B, the abnormal, yet B knew of both states, and happened to be the more intelligent of the two conditions.

Camuset, in 1880, reported a case in Italy in which the normal, A, was wicked, and the abnormal, B, was good. V. L., the son of a drunken prostitute, was a beggar and a thief, in consequence of which he was sent to a reformatory at St. Urbain. Here one day, whilst working in the fields, he disturbed a snake among some faggots, and fell down in convulsions from fright. After this he became altered mentally, and paralysis of the legs, with wasting, developed. He was therefore sent to an asylum at Bonneval, where he was regarded as a respectable, well-behaved boy, and was gentle and grateful. On account of the paralysis he was employed in the tailors' shop. A year later he had a fit of hysteria which lasted sixty hours, and when it passed off he got up quite well, free of all paralysis, and wished to join his old companions of the reformatory in their field labour, as before. He did not recognize the doctors or nurses of the asylum, or know anything about the tailoring, while his kind, gentle nature was replaced by his old ruffianly manners and vicious instincts. The question is, whether the amiable B, which appeared to be abnormal to him, was what Nature intended, and the degenerate A, which was thought



to be his true self, was the product of an alcoholic and depraved parentage.

Bianchi reports other cases.<sup>1</sup>

A Jewish girl in Naples who, without any external manifestation, changed her personality from A to B. If she were conversing she would stop; or if doing embroidery she would leave it and go to something else, as house or kitchen work. When she returned from B to A, she would be quite surprised to find she had left her embroidery, or whatever she was engaged in, and quite ignorant of all that had passed in the interval.

A girl in Palermo every day at 4 o'clock changed from a sad, fastidious, torpid individual to a lively, active state, B. In the morning she was normal, A. One evening, as B, she was very lively and pleased to have a visit from her brother. In the morning, however, when she was A, she was surprised to see him, and quite ignorant of his visit the previous evening. Similar occurrences were frequent.

Professor Tomassi gives a case not unlike the recent notorious "Koepenich" case in Germany. A young man in Rome called on a policeman to assist him in searching the house of an advocate, at the same time representing himself as a superior officer. After the visit and search, he dismissed the civil guard and mingled with the crowd on the Piazza. A legal process followed, when it was found that the accused knew nothing of the event, and that he had many gaps in his memory and consciousness.

Dr. Lewis Bruce reported a case of dual brain action in the year 1897,<sup>2</sup> and he attributed the cause to the right and left brains alternately exerting a preponderating influence. He calls attention to "spurious duality," where a patient thinks himself inhabited by another individual, or when other similar delusions exist. Such appear to occur where a patient carries on a conversation

---

<sup>1</sup> *Psychiatrie*.

<sup>2</sup> *Scottish Medical Journal*.



with his supposed internal lodger; a casual listener would suppose two different people were conversing.

The patient described by Dr. Lewis Bruce had an English stage and a Welsh stage. In the English stage he was right-handed, and the subject of chronic mania. He spoke English but understood Welsh, and his memory was a blank to the Welsh stage; he was, however, in touch with the previous English periods. He was restless, destructive, and thievish, but he was in touch with his surroundings. He wrote in the ordinary way, but could also write backwards—mirror writing.

In the Welsh stage he was demented, left-handed, and spoke Welsh, and could not understand English, either spoken or written. He did not know the doctors or attendants, and could only write with the left hand, from left to right. Once, when he wrote with his right hand, he wrote backwards. In this Welsh stage he was quite out of touch with his surroundings, thus differing from the English phase.

#### AN AMERICAN LADY IN GOOD CIRCUMSTANCES.

In almost all reported cases the patients have been in poor circumstances, and no doubt physical sufferings and overstrain as to ways and means have contributed to cause this pathological state. It is for this reason that I emphasize in this case that the lady, who lived in prairieland, lived in comfort. Moreover, as a member of the Society of Friends, she ought to have been quite stable.

I received this remarkable account from her niece, who stated that every evening about 8 o'clock her aunt went through a remarkable change of personality. There were no outward signs of any disturbance, as occur in most cases; she simply did not know any of her own family. Following the family custom, every evening about 9 she conducted family worship. Nothing strange occurred



till all had retired, then sometimes she would leave the house in her nightdress and wander. Ofttimes she walked along the railway track close to the passing express trains, and the drivers were much alarmed, but could do nothing. In time they found out it was no ghost in white, but a lady, and why she wandered was a mystery to them as well as to her family.

On other occasions she would go into the kitchen in the dark, and without any signs of hesitation or confusion would cook a pudding or make a cake. Was this by sight or touch?

After the change occurred in the evening, as stated, she knew no one, but if she touched one of the family or one of her friends, either on the face or on the dress, she at once recognized that particular individual and behaved as if nothing had happened; but she was still a stranger to those she had not touched. Every morning she woke up in her normal condition and carried on as if nothing had happened.

This had been going on for twenty years, and her mental and spiritual natures were in no way disturbed. I heard recently that she remains the same. She is one of the best of women, a good wife and a devoted mother.

## EPILEPSY AND DOUBLE CONSCIOUSNESS.

Mental aberration may occur in epilepsy, and is in some cases termed *petit mal* to distinguish it from the convulsions or *grand mal*. Of late a new label—amnesic fugues—has been applied. I have watched a young man so affected for about four years. In these attacks, which would occur anywhere or at any time, his facial expression and manner changed, and if thwarted he would hit out, and sometimes did personal injury. Once, on his way home in this condition, he was robbed of a parcel of new clothes which he was carrying. He remained at home two hours in this state of unconsciousness, or subpersonality, before he came to himself and



discovered that his parcel was gone. The last thing he remembered was looking into a shop window in Commercial Road. On another occasion he left chapel just before the Sunday evening service began. Someone, who knew his complaint, followed him and, suspecting one of these fits, interrogated him, but as he answered rationally and seemed quite normal, allowed him to leave. Two or three hours later he returned to his proper state and was surprised to find himself four or five miles from home. He improved under hypnotism, sleeping for an hour at a time, and since his marriage, twenty years ago, he has kept quite well. This case had a strong resemblance to alternating personality.

We call such conditions by the name of post-epileptic automatism, and they frequently, under hypnotism, can reveal what has happened, but in the hypnotic state my patient had no knowledge or memory of his post-epileptic wanderings. We can easily see the awkwardness of his position, if he had committed a breach of the law in the unconscious state.

I have found an illustration in a criminal case where a man was addicted to alcohol, and received in all ten years' imprisonment for violence. Some years later a sentence of death was passed upon him for an actual murder. The case is of medico-legal interest, for he was abnormal from his youth, being subject to a violent and impulsive temper. He was in fact homicidal from his boyhood, though now a quiet, harmless-looking individual. When I examined him he wept over his past; yet, if not under kind but firm control, he might easily repeat the offence on but slight provocation. As a boy of 14 he would have killed a caretaker, who rightly interfered with him, if the man had not hastily retreated. A country lad and sportive, when annoyed he became like a wild beast, and always sought for revenge. He used to "drive himself mad" by drinking spirits, illustrating the lamentable necessity for supervision over young and untrained men which often obtains under



present drink-licensing regulations. When in this drunken condition he appeared to change to another subpersonality. His ego, a poor one at best, seemed at such times to vanish, for he was quite ignorant of these many serious acts. This case lends support to the idea that the ego is only present during normal consciousness. On one occasion he was arrested in a murderous assault on his employer in the nick of time, and solemnly affirms that he is even now quite unconscious of this particular act, for which he received five years in prison, his second sentence for violence. Very soon after his release he actually killed a man. He had been drinking spirits for two or three days, and was quite confused, yet his sub-ego directed him to hide for the first three or four days after the crime. This appears contradictory to the theory of unconsciousness of his surroundings, but he always knew confusedly after these occurrences that he had been in a row. He did not know that he had committed murder until charged by the police. We might in reality expect the alcoholized sub-ego, B, automatically to possess some self-protective instincts, as shown by his hiding after the murder. At the trial the details of his crime were quite a revelation to him in his sober, or A, personality. About eight months after the event, when in prison, the whole picture of the murder gradually unfolded before him, which might have been because he heard the story at the trial, or there may have been some subtle psychological awakening from a long somnambulism caused by alcoholic poisoning of the brain-cells. The brain might have taken in the whole picture at the time, but the alcoholic poisoning might have paralysed the mental associations which would connect up his memory of the event. It seems that under the injurious action of alcohol the normal ego is disjointed, and a fractional subpersonality appears to rule under those circumstances. Similar toxic effects are observed from the use of Indian hemp, where delirium and vivid hallucinations occur; or from opium, as is evinced in the writings of De Quincey and others.



In this particular case the murderer was ordered to be hanged for a crime of which he was ignorant, and he felt somewhat aggrieved that no excuse was allowed for his drunken state. This, of course, is a one-sided aspect of crime, but the moral is, that every case should be regarded as a psychological study, in order that both the criminal and the long-suffering public may have their claims fairly adjusted. If such a process had been observed after the first murderous assault, it would have been seen that the killing instinct in this man was so pronounced as to be an incurable disease. He would have been permanently located, after a term of punishment, in a refuge colony, there to be supervised and protected for the whole of his natural life. This is what actually happened, for the State placed him in charge of the Salvation Army at Hadley colony till he died.

A notable case occurred in 1911, in Nottingham, where a murderer paid the death penalty. He had complete loss of memory for six days. It was shown that he had no memory of his actions for two days before the murder and four days after the crime. The doctor found him very confused and vacant at the time of the crime. This may have been a case of epileptic automatism, as it used to be called, or a fugue; but in any case he had loss of consciousness of his surroundings. The sadness of this case suggests a court of skilled alienists to act as assessors. Law was actually poaching in the preserves of medicine. The two professions might well run in double harness, and in such a tragedy painless extinction would overcome many objections.

#### DR. T. HYSLOP'S OPINION.

In 1899, Dr. T. H. Hyslop, while he occupied the position of Medical Superintendent of Bethlem Hospital, read a paper on this mental problem at the British Medical Association.<sup>1</sup> He makes seven different types

---

<sup>1</sup> On "Double Consciousness," *Brit. Med. Journ.*, September 23, 1899.



associated with night terrors, somnambulism, loss of memory, epilepsy, insanity, hysteria, and mediumship.

The interest of his paper consists in the demonstration of the instability of character and the moral perversions which occur, involving questions of criminal responsibility.

Thus, Case 1 was a boy of 14, with night terrors and a propensity to steal money and stamps from other boys at school. When convicted and reproved he was much distressed, but appeared to have no memory of the circumstances.

Similar events are of daily occurrence in our police courts, but no allowance is made for the accused.

Case 2 was a precocious boy of 14, who had attacks of stupidity at school, and was found one night sharpening a knife with intent to kill a schoolfellow. He was with some difficulty overpowered.

Many of the cases reported were on the border-line of insanity.

### A CASE OF MEDICO-LEGAL INTEREST: TRAUMATIC OBLIVION.

Here is a case of fugue or dual personality, due to a cranial injury, with a decided medico-legal bearing.

A young man, aged 28, who was in charge of a business firm's office in a northern town, was attacked by the porter and struck over the head with a piece of iron. He was evidently knocked senseless, and events showed that he lost his memory. It is uncertain what time the attack occurred, but he later transacted some business at the bank in a normal manner. He left his lodgings for a month, probably sleeping out of doors at night, but he visited friends in different towns near. He said to them that he was looking for work, though he had not been dismissed. He was conscious that he had lost twenty pounds when he visited the bank, and this troubled him. Think of the legal position. Money had disappeared and



so had he, and outwardly he appeared normal. Some of his friends thought he was all right, others said he was worried or confused. Finally, his father was brought to him, and found him very ill and with complete loss of memory. He did not know his father nor any of the family, although he knew the friends he visited. The lawyer would say he was a humbug. After several weeks of nursing he gradually improved. In a week he knew his father ; later on his mother and other relatives, but he could give no account of what occurred after the assault. It was a complete blank, which has never been filled up. Otherwise to-day he is normal. He is greatly troubled by the loss of the twenty pounds.

Evidently the blow on the head affected the brain structure, destroying his past life, but during the fugue or dual consciousness he reacted correctly to his surroundings.

It may be left to the imagination what would have happened if he had committed serious crime during the lapse. He would have reacted like an ordinary person, and been treated as such. He might even have been brought to the gallows, and if he had returned to his normal self and shown surprise and distress, he would have been regarded as a malingerer. The *vox populi* would disregard his pleas and would not show any sympathy.

## Chapter IX

---

### *SUMMARY*

OBSESSIONS, WITH CASES.  
 PARANOIA.  
 PHANTASY.  
 JEALOUSY.  
 THE CRIMINAL LUNATIC.  
 THE FEEBLE-MINDED CRIMINAL.  
 STERILIZATION.  
 THE MORAL IMBECILE.

### OBSESSIONS, WITH CASES.

THE physiologist explains the machinery of the brain and the psychologist that of mentation, while the alienist describes its working in diseased conditions. In imbecility or feeble-mindedness brain structure is deficient, and crime may occur without any knowledge of wrong from right. General paralysis of the insane, from disease of the prefrontal cortex, leads to loss of control and free will ; crime follows, which is frequently of the sexual type. When we find obsessions and delusions, we may not detect any structural defect, but the brain-cells may be poisoned through disease in the blood ; sometimes by a mild, curable sepsis.

Obsessions play a great part in the criminal's mind. Take, for example, the case of the American doctor,<sup>1</sup> Minor, who arrived in London, in 1872, obsessed with the notion that the hand of every Irishman was against

---

<sup>1</sup> "Enemies of Society." By Charles Kingston.



him. In a very few weeks he shot a workman in Lambeth, fancying him to be an Irishman. He made no effort to escape and, when it was told him that his victim was a Cockney and not an Irishman, he expressed deep regret. Though found guilty of murder it was quite evident he was insane, and he was sent to Broadmoor Asylum. Can anyone explain a fixed idea? Can the neo-psychologist help? Is it a perverted photograph in the brain, or is it a phantasy caused by an incorrect association or perverted memory? In fact, is it free will inverted?

Let us follow this interesting case. Sir James Murray was compiling "The New English Dictionary," and seeking assistance where it might be found. In this he got much help by post from Dr. Minor, proving that the latter was a highly-educated person. Sir James sought him out to thank him, and discovered to his surprise that he was dealing with a dangerous homicidal maniac. After fifteen or twenty years the matter of liberating Dr. Minor was considered, but the old delusion remained that every Irishman was against him, and naturally the authorities dare not risk another murder. The obsession in this case is difficult to trace to either of the primary instincts, certainly not to the sex instinct; but might it not be associated with the instinct of self-preservation? The solution of these problems of incentive is both difficult and debatable, owing to our limited knowledge.

I have, in the chapter on sexual crime, alluded to the trunk murderer of Rochester Row, recently hanged, as an example of sadism. Instinct No. 2, that of self-preservation, produced an obsession in another murderer's brain, that of Devereux, which led him to murder his wife and twins and pack their bodies in a large trunk, placing it in a repository at Kilburn. Devereux was an attractive young man, a chemist's assistant, who caused a girl to fall in love with him. He thought she would bring him some money and thereby gratify his extravagant habits, but was disappointed, and, as there was no love



on his part, nor sexual attraction, his self-protective instinct worked up a grievance that he was an injured man from having made a false step. This grew like a snowball, until he resolved to get rid of her, which he did by poisoning with morphia. She was a good woman and starved herself for him and the children, for as he lost his situation he was in very poor circumstances. It was a cruel crime clumsily carried out. Is not an event of this character a strong incentive to continue with capital punishment?

Another possible example of instinct No. 2, self-preservation, leading to an obsession and ending in murder, is afforded by the famous moat murder. Dougall, the murderer, who had a bad record, put an advertisement in a matrimonial paper, which was answered by one of the many foolish middle-aged women who feel neglected and want a mate of any sort. His object was her money and, having no sexual or other attraction to her, made up his mind to get rid of her. He therefore took a house in a lonely part of Essex, near Clavering, and having, by will, secured her fortune, shot her from behind. Dougall got her fortune but did not enjoy it long. A relative of mine thoroughly investigated this drama, which had been most carefully planned. It was only discovered by Dougall cashing some of the stolen five pound notes. The murderer, my friend tells me, appears to have left many descendants to carry on his germ-plasm, which is one of the tragedies of most crimes.

When I was a medical student in Edinburgh, I knew something about a young woman who was brutally treated by her husband. He was a French teacher, and this young woman was seduced by him when in her teens, and later he was forced to marry her. They had four children, and all the time the home was an absolute hell. Finally, he poisoned her with laudanum, but that did not close the scene, for he was arrested and executed. There was no jealousy to account for the crime, and all sexual passion must have changed to hatred, as he had



so many lovers. Could it have been instinct No 2, self-preservation, that obsessed him with grievances, for he was unable to support his family? It is evident that a combination of ideas, grievances and phantasies build up the mind of the murderer. I was very struck at the time with the dandyism of the criminal, Monsieur Chantrelle, as he stood in the box, well-groomed and holding his silk hat in his hand in true Parisian style. When he went to the scaffold he was specially trim, and kept them waiting while he gave a final brush to his hat. He even objected to take off his collar and tie to make way for the rope. Truly gruesome, but are not these facts of some psychological importance?

### PARANOIA.

Though paranoia is a mental disease and belongs to the sphere of the alienist, in minor degree the searching for grievances is a very common trouble among all classes. Paranoia and other forms of morbid or diseased imagination are responsible for a large amount of crime, even serious crime, which on the surface looks stupid and unreasonable.

A man whose fondness for his wife is not fully reciprocated may have no cause for jealousy, but constant brooding makes a mountain out of a mole-hill, and in time a murder follows. The criminal may be of such a character that any violence on his part would seem to be an impossible act.

Among the poorer and less educated, morbid imagination and the manufacturing of grievances frequently provoke an aggressive attitude against their employers, and this, when affecting a group, may lead to a strike, in which they usually are the ultimate losers. We must not forget that there is always a mass of the population on the border-line of starvation, and these poor things are specially liable to look for grievances and injustice. In fact, they have grievances. It is then only a step over to



riot, revolution and crime. The poor are dazzled by the gaiety of the upper classes, and a chronic attitude of anti-social feeling supervenes. The labouring classes are most inflammable subjects to deal with, and a spark from an agitator may work up a big explosion. And when the explosion comes and we suffer thereby, have we not some responsibility concerning it, and if we suffer is it not just that we should? Ruskin wrote: "The rich are too rich and the poor too poor."

How are we to deal with paranoia? We meet it in the individual as a mental disease, and it occurs in groups by reason of the herd instinct, that is, among the masses. The individual requires medical treatment to keep him out of an asylum or even prison. The position is most serious, and the ordinary layman does not appreciate it. When once a man gets what we call a crooked idea into his head he loses balance and all sense of proportion. He does what we call mad things. He gets into difficulties and quarrels with his friends, who want to extricate him. Failing a mental rest and treatment, disaster swiftly follows; it may be suicide or crime of any magnitude.

When we have paranoia affecting a group, or the masses, it grows like a snowball. This we see in riots, great or small, such as recently in the general strike, which had the object of seizing the Parliament, and perhaps the Army. The common sense and the courage of the normally-minded section of the population defeated this mad revolution. It shows that in these mental troubles and social disorders the cool-headed and the wise must govern, even employing force.

As an example of paranoia, I reported the case of a man,<sup>1</sup> a Lincolnshire farmer, who was the object of some ridicule by a neighbour, a carrier. The farmer brooded so much that he resolved to kill the carrier, and did so, with poison. Unfortunately the innocent wife was

---

<sup>1</sup> "Unfinished Man," p. 88.



hanged for the murder, and twelve years later the farmer made a full confession on his death bed. Is it not very unfortunate that so many of us "let ourselves go," and magnify small grievances which overwhelm us, frequently to our regret when it is too late? Early self-control is the remedy, and it is the duty of every parent and teacher to cultivate it when the children are young, and to soothe attacks of excitement.

### PHANTASY.

Phantasy, commonly called fancy or imagination, begins in childhood. Children are very various in mentality. For the sake of comparison, let us consider two extremes. The one child is, if anything, morose, quiet and serious, showing interest and pleasure in its present surroundings; while the opposite type is restless, peevish if crossed, often sad and inclined to vivid imagination. The former is the more hopeful and will absorb knowledge somewhat readily. He enjoys fun as fun and then lays it aside. The nervous child is not of an inquiring mind, but is very introspective, and turns fun into fancies, dwelling in dreamland, and this condition grows with him, modifying his youth and even his manhood. To this child fancy becomes a source of weakness and robs him of application to the realities of life. Attractive objects, which are at the same time educative, should be gradually brought into the child's life, and thus prepare him for adult life. This is a great problem deserving the closest attention.

Phantasy is allied to paranoia, for the day-dreamer is very apt to suggest or foster grievances, and then trouble begins. The city man, who has had a very bad day, full of worries, takes whiskey to numb his overworked imagination, and enjoying the paralysis of his brain-cells he lolls in his comfortable chair and indulges in the phantasy that to-morrow, next month, or next year luck will come his way. Far better is it to be brave and face



facts. He has been a day-dreamer as a child, otherwise he would not be a speculator to-day.

In the upbringing of children much future evil can be avoided by switching on the "reality principle" early in their lives; starve day-dreaming, encourage dealing with realities and actual circumstances, not what might be. The reality principle expresses the act of teaching children that "life is real, life is earnest." It is the opposite of the pleasure principle or the "hedonism" of Freud, by which man's whole life is given to seeking pleasure and avoiding pain. At the same time a child's life need not be dull nor unhappy. A child must always be kept cheerful.

The way to avoid this mental weakness is to keep a child interested in realities. Occupy the mind with games, or music, or stories, and always combat day-dreaming. Nature study, by presenting fascinating realities, is one of the best methods of training children in the realities of life, and a sure incentive to right living.

By yielding to obsessions or to fancies which are unsupported by fact or reason, anyone may develop morbid phantasies about other people, and if these take an impulsive turn it may mean crime. It is only in early childhood that these disasters can be averted.

Precocity, the desire to be a man, plays a great part in juvenile crime. To this we must add the stimulus of morbid trashy literature, improper films at the picture palaces, and songs containing lewd suggestions.

In these long lists of tragedies the disasters are labelled as crimes; but in the light of further knowledge much of it is probably mental deficiency.

## JEALOUSY.

Jealousy and envy are two distinct emotions belonging to the instinct of self-preservation. They are normal and natural for the protection of the family and self.



It is when exaggerated and uncontrolled that they become criminal.

Envy concerns only two people. The less fortunate man envies the more fortunate. Jealousy is of a wider extension, as in a love affair where a rival appears. Jealousy yearns after the exclusive love and attention of another.

Jealousy is one of the strongest predisposing factors to crime. In fact, many obsessions arise from this emotion. It springs in each of us from unknown depths, and we can only eradicate it by patient reasoning and self-control, and unquestionably by the spiritual agency of religion.

Jealousy is one of the basest and most cruel of all our emotions, springing from the lower creation. Would that it could have been eliminated as our mental evolution advanced, for it is devoid of reason, logic or intelligence. All crime and every instance of jealousy may be traced to the two primary instincts—self-preservation and reproduction. Jealousy, which becomes an obsession, arises when thwarted in our desires, producing conflict on either of those planes; and conflict leads to complexes.

In love-making jealousy arises when an advance is rejected directly or indirectly through the competition of another. The emotion of love and affection, springing from the instinct of reproduction, has been thwarted, and all the forces of the individual are called up to overcome the opposition, which ends in blind fury and uncontrolled violence, and, as we know, too often in murder.

In the business world jealousy arises where one competitor is more successful than another. The struggle to become equal with a superior may sorely strain the finer instincts of the poorer man. He becomes blinded with jealousy, and if he fails may turn his energy into an endeavour to injure his rival, or even society. In many cases this is the origin of



socialism of a destructive character, strikes, sedition and riot.

There is no use in describing a disease without suggesting something on the lines of prevention. Jealousy may be something of a protective nature, which descends from parent to child, possibly temperamental; or it may be fostered in childhood by the incautious language of parents or others. Those who have the educating of the young should strongly endeavour to teach their children to be calm, broadminded, tolerant, and to look at a controversial subject from the other person's point of view. The Quakers of former years were most careful with children to obtain a good mental balance. To-day children are more indulged and less balanced.

### THE CRIMINAL LUNATIC.

We are faced here with a very difficult social question in regard to the "criminal lunatic" which is, to begin with, a contradiction of terms. We cannot have it both ways, for in such a crime as murder the perpetrator is either a criminal or a lunatic. The time is fast passing when a lunatic will be accused of crime. There are many homicidal maniacs in asylums who have actually committed murder, but we should never associate the word crime with them. Our present legal mechanism is out of date. What we require to be arranged is that where a homicidal maniac is permanently dangerous, we ought to be allowed to place him in the lethal chamber and explore his brain and subtle secreting organs. This does not mean that a few thyroid or pituitary tabloids would change a potential murderer into a saint, but it may induce us to pay more attention to the developing child, so as to exclude diseased conditions. These unfortunates are a danger to others and a misery to themselves, even when under asylum care. I remember going over the Criminal Asylum at Tournai, in Belgium, and could not see that there would be any unrighteousness in destroying painlessly this mass of depravity.



As regards worldly conditions, they were well treated by a group of good-natured and hefty priests. Is it not a question of educating public opinion to transfer our care and goodwill from the hopeless, whom nothing can relieve, in order to help the under-dog, who, if given a chance, would make good?

I have had the interesting experience of knowing several murderers, and I would not pass any as normal beings. There was poor old Tammas, who did eighteen years for murdering his little 4-year-old son, Willie. Tammas as a boy was a shepherd and had a yearning to kill lambs to see the blood flow, which abnormal craving he constantly satisfied. He had what perhaps I might term a "bloodthirsty complex." His wife died and he was fearful that Willie would be neglected, so he closed the scene one lovely Sunday morning as the valley resounded to the church bells. When he was released he was always sad and despondent, and, alas! drink took such a hold of him that no one could help him. He told me that he went into prison a vigorous young man. During the eighteen years he never saw a looking-glass, and when he came out he was shocked to see what a grizzly old wretch he looked. Now, poor fellow, his mortal clay is at rest. Can we speculate what sentence the Great Judge will pass, if any?

There was another case, that of an epileptoid man who knocked down and killed his mate with a spade. He said that a very little alcohol sent him mad. When up for trial he did not remember what he had done, but as evidence was given the picture unfolded itself. In the epileptic temperament there are lapses of consciousness, and evidently this poor man committed the murder in this condition. Epilepsy is often associated with uncontrollable violence. I felt satisfied it was not a case of dual personality. It was what we call to-day a "fugue," what used to be called epileptic automatism.

Another example was the poor man whose brain I have described. His "missus" was a "nagger" and



drove him mad. It was a momentary impulse, not of passion or sadism, but of revenge.

Tammas, the north countryman, was undoubtedly a moral imbecile from birth, and probably the epileptoid murderer also. The Mental Deficiency Act, 1913, defines the moral imbecile thus: "That is to say persons who from an early age display some permanent mental defect coupled with strong vicious or criminal propensities on which punishment has had little or no deterrent effect."

We are hampered by law so that we cannot place such cases in an observatorium for careful analysis, physical and psychological; nor have we sufficient powers to rope them in before they commit crime. Is painless extinction ever to follow?

It is quite evident that it is almost impossible to reduce the criminal ranks among either the rich or the poor unless we can educate the children to self-control. Education has been wrongly interpreted by the State as filling the brain with a lot of useless information. To educate is to bring up the child intellectually, morally and spiritually. It is a big task, but the victory is not to the strong, nor the race to the swift, but to the faithful.

### THE FEEBLE-MINDED CRIMINAL.

As mental analysis proceeds, it may yet be proved that every criminal is weak-minded, but this decision will have to wait until we know what is normal. Mankind is in the stage of mental evolution, and it is impossible to foretell when it will reach completion. As we are to-day, some families have advanced while other families, and even groups, seem in process of devolution. The feeble-minded criminal cannot be described as a sport, an unusual, unexpected arrival, like a genius; he rather comes into the class of degeneracy. He is, in fact, a degenerate, being insane from birth, from a scientific point of view, but unfortunately the law does not allow this. Medical science is up against an obstruction, public opinion; and it becomes difficult to classify the degenerate or weak-



mind criminal till he breaks the law. Even then he cannot be dealt with until proof arises that he has been weak-minded from birth, or from an early age, and lawyers have yet to satisfy themselves as to what an early age is. This emphasizes the importance of all medico-legal affairs, whether physical or mental, being assisted by a medical committee.

The Mental Deficiency Act of 1913 defines this complaint as "mental defectiveness not amounting to imbecility, yet so pronounced that they require care, supervision and control for their own protection or for the protection of others," &c. Taking this as a warning of what surrounds us, ought we not to get a move on?

The problem of the "feeble-minded" is a connecting link between insanity and crime which will occupy our attention for years to come. We are all aware that there are two underlying principles in the making of incurable criminals—heredity and environment. In the potential criminal there is an impetus to do what is wrong, to gratify his animal passions, and to take what does not belong to him. These crimes are stimulated by the two normal instincts alluded to,<sup>1</sup> which exist in every animal. Those of us who are of good heredity can exert a proper control, while those who are of diseased heredity fail to do so. A good environment assists in developing self-control; whereas, unfortunately, in the case of the feeble-minded there is usually a bad environment.

It is estimated to-day (1927) that there are at least 160,000 feeble-minded individuals in this country requiring care. Of these about 50,000 are school children. There are many more of the weak-minded who do not come under official notice, but who have so little resistance that in the journey of life they will usually take the wrong turning.<sup>2</sup>

Here is an instance of the many unthought-out

---

<sup>1</sup> The instincts of reproduction and acquisitiveness.

<sup>2</sup> Fig. 23.





FIG. 23.—A group of feeble-minded and degenerate criminals; what we term "juvenile adults." Such wreckage can only be prevented by less venereal disease and more of birth control; hence the value of sterilization to check the flow of such degeneracy. This type is very prolific. These were in a colony at Merxplas, in Belgium. We keep our "juvenile adults" in prison or at a Borstal institution.





irregularities of the law, which case was mentioned in Parliament (March 22, 1927). A man, aged 36, was convicted forty times between the ages of 21 and 34, and twenty of these times was for indecent assaults. He had been imprisoned in all five years for these special assaults. The cost to the country of his imprisonment and prosecution was more than £2,000. He was the terror of his district, and no female was safe when he was about. The magistrates could not order his detention in an institution, as his history before the age of 14 was not known. The Act of Parliament which gave power to detain young people of this class for sexual offences decreed that "mental deficiency" must have existed "from birth" or "an early age," and failing proof as to the date of first symptoms observed, no proper restraint under the Act dealing with mental deficients could be applied. In addition, as aforesaid, no lawyer can define when "an early age" ceases. A new law is to be introduced untrammelled by these fantastic conditions.

It must not be supposed that weak-mindedness and criminality are interlocked. Criminality is a small circle inside the larger, for in truth half of us are slightly weak-minded. I call to mind a boy, aged 18, who physically and mentally was only 10 or 12 years of age. Morally he was absolutely sound. Under medical care he rapidly developed in both directions, and fifteen years later, after considerable distinction, laid down his life in the Great War. In this case I put down his deficiency to syphilis in the father. The truth is frequently very unpleasant, but let us have enough patriotism to face it.

Then there are other causes of feeble-mindedness, such as alcohol in the parent; without actual excess the dose or measure of alcohol may be more than such a person can support. In addition, functional affections of the endocrine glands may affect either parent. There are many causes, and much that we do not yet know of, but at present the two great race poisons are alcohol and syphilis.



## STERILIZATION.

There are two different opinions as to the treatment of the feeble-minded criminals or moral imbeciles ; in fact, all degenerates. One school entertains ideas of segregation in colonies or asylums, but to be effectual as regards the multiplication table, the males must be shut up for life and the females to the age of 50. This will cost a minimum sum of £200 a head per annum, or £20,000,000 per 100,000 cases. Think what this means, and how useful such a sum would be to the honest and thrifty poor in sickness or distress. It is a matter of favouring the hopeless as against those who have led proper lives. It is offering a premium on bad living and bad breeding, and makes for the rapid and certain devolution of the Empire.

The other school are out to stop the steady increase of degeneracy. It advocates sterilization and then freedom, for however immoral they may be, they will not be able to pass on their kind, or their curse. The operation for sterilization requires that the Fallopian tubes be tied so that the ovum cannot pass into the uterus and pregnancy cannot occur. In the male it consists in division of the spermatic cords.

There would be no objection to returning the sterilized neuters to conditional liberty. One thing would be certain, that the stream of degeneracy would be finally stemmed. As half the girls on the streets are feeble-minded, there would be a decrease in prostitution. The State would be relieved of a great responsibility, and there would be every probability that a section of these neuters would follow useful lives.

Our prisons contain a number of insane youths. The disease is called *dementia præcox* or adolescent insanity. It is associated with, perhaps caused by, disease of the sex glands. An operation for sterilization would probably effect a cure when the symptoms first appear. Though they are imprisoned as criminals, they are really insane patients, and most of them have got into trouble through



sexual irregularities. All right-minded persons should whole-heartedly support this effort to purify society and arrest the growth of the worst possible evil which attends society.

The same treatment, sterilization, might be carried out with chronic, evil-minded, incurable criminals ; and most certainly in cases of violent men.

The time cannot be far distant when consideration will be given to the sterilization of social derelicts. If that be done, the better people among the poorer classes would give up restricting their families, and these are the people we want to breed from to raise a healthy, virile race.

### THE MORAL IMBECILE.

As our knowledge of the criminal world advances, a new class, "the moral imbecile," has been created. The moral imbecile may lack nothing in physical development ; he may even be of respectable appearance and of normal intelligence ; but he is deficient in will-power and self-control, so that he may yield to any impulse or emotion. This may mean salvation from prison and even from disgrace for the wealthy criminal, but it is unsatisfactory that it has to be fought out in a law court rather than decided by a committee of alienists. Here the rich man has an advantage in comparison with the poor man, until a Public Defender be instituted. We get many such examples of uneven law. We always have juvenile murderers in prison. Out of lust, or sadism, some have killed girls ; in Wales, a boy of 15 or 16 killed two female children, otherwise he appears normal. The murderers usually behave well in prison, but there is probably no cure for such cases, and it seems a foolish philanthropy to turn them out of prison after fifteen years, which is a life sentence, while their mental condition cannot improve.

In recent years there has been great dissatisfaction with the administration of justice, or, more correctly, law. An Italian boy murdered a lady in a west-end hotel. The



lady had not locked her door, and he entered during the night and killed her with a coal hammer. The Governor of Pentonville described him as but a child, clean and attractive, but there can be little doubt that he was a moral imbecile. Was he not a clear example of Freudian determinism—responding to his surroundings; the temptation and opportunity to steal money? He was duly executed, and the only regret could be that his brain was not sent to a laboratory.

Several other cases have occurred where young men of good position have murdered girls more cruelly; where they have taken every precaution to hide the crime; and they have been dealt with as moral imbeciles. Doubtless the judgment is quite correct, but was not the Italian boy of 18 likewise a moral imbecile, in fact a degenerate?

Far be it from my purpose to urge a supra-sentimental mercy, though they absorb my pity. Further research would show that in most cases the father should be placed on the gallows. Is it not too frequently the case that these tragedies are the result of the father's dissipation in his youth—alcohol and venereal disease? These persons are equally dangerous on discharge, whether from prison or asylum.

We are only interested in the moral imbeciles who commit serious crime, but there are many who pass through what appears to be a normal career; yet are they not a danger to society, by keeping up a diseased stock, for they may breed criminals for the next generation? They are cunning and clever, sometimes intellectual, and may achieve their evil ends without discovery. Many unsuspected persons, who exhibit a weakness of morality in financial and sexual affairs, may be accounted for or explained on these lines as moral imbeciles in slight degree.

It is difficult to make very fine distinctions in crime, but moral imbecility seems to-day to offer an outlet to criminals with influence. Some day the outlet will allow poor as well as rich criminals to be regarded as weaklings.



The relationship of crime to insanity and imbecility is so difficult and involved, that it should be placed unreservedly in the hands of alienists. It is only on sentimental grounds that the lawyer retains his interest.

This covers the grounds very fairly, but as no one is quite normal it leaves much to be desired. The effort must be towards educating the young how to think. Grant that a child is morally weak and has a weak brain, much can be done in the way of training to make him careful and sufficiently resistant to keep just out of trouble. Those emotions which lead in the wrong direction must be suppressed, and every emotion and moral feeling which leads forward must be fostered. We must work on the intelligence, what we term "apperception." We understand perception, by which we receive information and knowledge, and it is of the greatest importance to know how to use our perception profitably and wisely. By "apperception" we mean spontaneous thought and the power to adapt ourselves properly to our surroundings, or in expressive slang, as the young men say, "how to keep our end up."



## Chapter X

---

### SUMMARY

#### FREUD AND HIS DOGMAS.

- The Unconscious Mind.
- Its Urge.
- A Complex.
- Hedonism, or the Pleasure Principle.
- Conscience.
- The Self-regarding Sentiment.

#### THE VIEWS OF THE NEW SCHOOL ON MIND CRITICIZED.

##### MIND AND BRAIN.

- Its Mechanism.
- The Association Centres.
- Aphasia.
- Ferrier's Researches.
- Hughlings Jackson's Views.
- Temperaments.

##### THE NEO-PALLIUM.

##### MEASUREMENTS OF THE GREY CORTEX.

- The Longevity of Mind.
- Raising the Masses.
- Ancestral Units.

##### PHANTASIES IN PSYCHOLOGY.

##### IMAGINATION.

##### BERGSON ON MATTER AND MEMORY.

##### PSYCHO-ANALYSIS.

##### DR. BOLTON ON PSYCHO-ANALYSIS.

##### SIR ROBERT ARMSTRONG-JONES ON PSYCHO-ANALYSIS.

##### FREUD'S DESCRIPTION OF PSYCHO-ANALYSIS.

##### RELIGION AND MATERIALISM.

##### MAN AS A REACTION.

- The Immortal Lister.

##### QUAKERISM.

## FREUD AND HIS DOGMAS.

SIGMUND FREUD, of Swiss birth, was a follower of Professor J. Breur, who was creating a sensation in Vienna many years ago when I studied there. Hysteria and almost the whole of our mental machinery were referred by Breur to the sex organs. This is not to be wondered at, as the Prussian and Russian people, who were chiefly his subjects, have always been steeped in sexual diversions and perversions because they are Mongols.

When studying in Germany and Austria I was impressed with the immoral social degradation pervading all classes. I cannot think that any nation with vicious tendencies will ultimately rule. The Prussians reveal their Mongolian descent by their broad flat heads also the hinder part of the skull being cut off vertically. Saxony, Hanover, Hamburg, and some parts of the Rhine were probably penetrated by the Phœnicians, who according to Waddell<sup>1</sup> colonized the shores of the North Sea. Antiquarians cry down the Phœnicians as savages and pirates, but any maritime people that visited our shores for metals, and built Cadiz and founded other colonies could not have been so despicable. This is not the place to enlarge on the totally different mentation of the Prussian from our own, but statesmen and even politicians ought to go through a course of what the Germans call *Welt politik*. If this subject were mastered we should not be caught napping again as in 1914.

It is deplorable that our psychologists, having no settled opinions, rushed so wildly after Freud. They learnt from him the psychology of Bismarck and similar

---

<sup>1</sup> "The Phœnician Origin of the Britons, Scots and Saxons." The author has not enough knowledge to give an opinion either for or against Dr. Waddell's theories, but they are worth considering. No one else appears to pose as an authority on the subject.



Germans,<sup>1</sup> and of men like Rasputin,<sup>2</sup> and have been trying to fit us into such primitive types. It is wrong. We Britons are Aryans or Sumerians and are more sporty and fair, less cruel, never treacherous and blessed with a sense of humour which brings us through many troubles. Our racial record is cleaner than that of the Mongols, as is shown by comparing Bismarck's treatment of France in 1870 and afterwards, with France's and our generous treatment of Germany to-day.

Freud's doctrine is that all our mental energy and impetus come from an overflow of sexual energy, which is a physiological impossibility. Every form of energy has its own special functions to fulfil and cannot be moved about like army corps in the field of battle. It is on this fundamental error that so many psychological theories are built.

### *The Unconscious Mind.*

Jung first started the theory of the "Unconscious Mind"; but Freud added to this by saying that mind is built up from the earliest infancy, even before the brain is developed *in utero*! This somewhat fantastic, illogical hypothesis was essential for his new theories.<sup>3</sup> The unconscious mind is said to determine the course of our lives, and deep-seated in this new kind of mind there is perpetual conflict. We are thus in a helpless and hopeless condition.

All the dicta about emotions and instincts as driving forces, new labels for conation, conflict, repression, projection, wish or libido are as old as the hills, but differently expressed. The new psychologists depart from fact in denying the functions of the brain, what they term the "structural" mind, and also in laying the main emphasis on the sexual urge. This last idea is an

---

<sup>1</sup> Might *v.* Right; scraps of paper, &c.

<sup>2</sup> Freud's "Pleasure Principle."

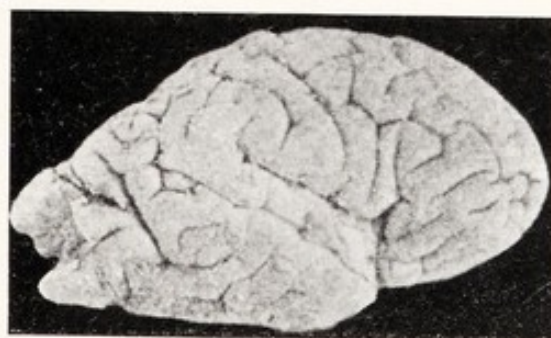
<sup>3</sup> *Vide* fig. 24 of foetal brains.



A



B



C

FIG. 24.—A shows the outer surface of the left hemisphere of a human foetus about the sixth month ; it weighs 55 gm., about 2 oz. ; the main fissures are appearing. B shows the developing grey cortex in the foetus at the fifth or sixth months, with total inability to exhibit any function. Freud considers the unconscious mind is built up in the foetus about this period, which is an impossibility—a *reductio ad absurdum*. C shows the outer surface of the right hemisphere of a human foetus at the seventh month. The fissures are complete except the more delicate (higher functional) fissures. It is a good convoluted pattern. See Dr. Bolton's Goulstonian Lectures, *Brain*, 1910, xxxiii.



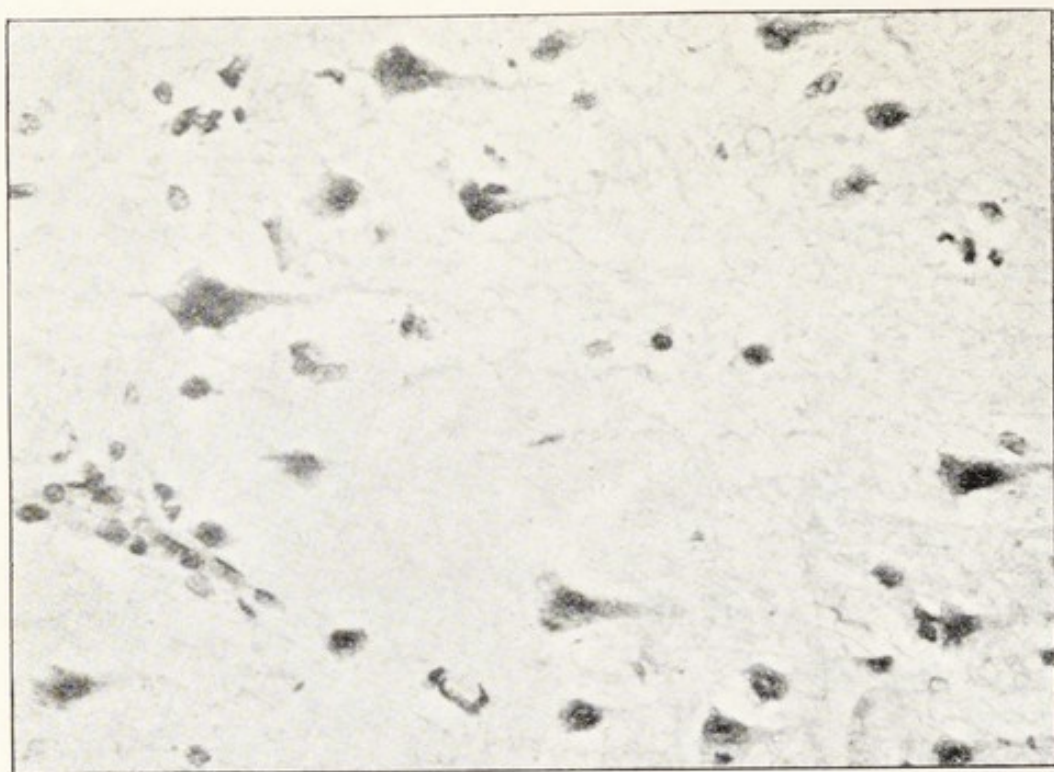


FIG. 25.—These are the normal prefrontal brain cells, often called Bolton's area, in consideration of his research. I am indebted to him for these two photographs.

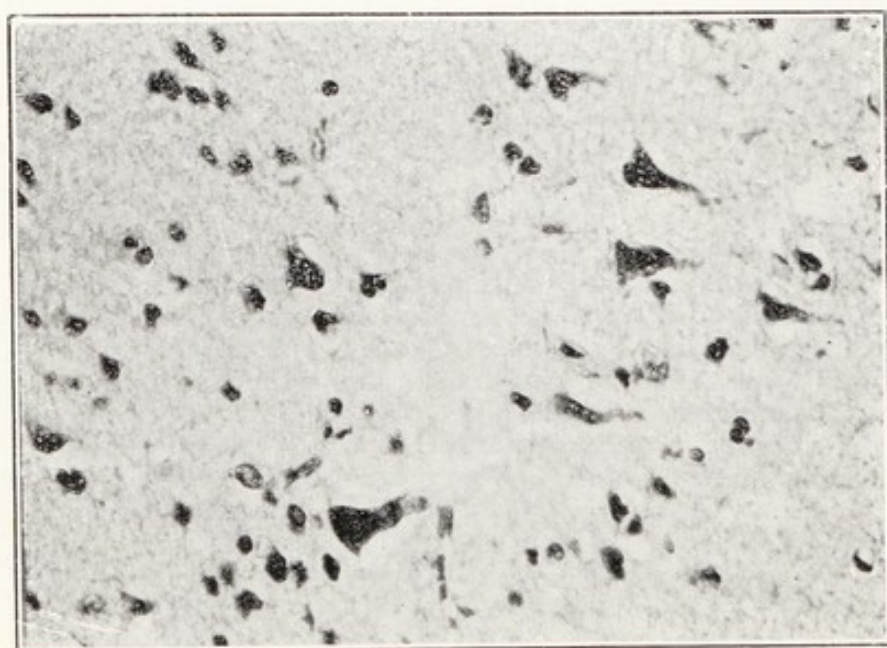


FIG. 26.—This is from the same area, but from the brain of an idiot. Observe cells are few and shrivelled.



obsession with them. Look at this particular urge fairly and consider the sensations brought into activity. The large nerve ganglia in the lower part of the body transmit messages to the brain. Here the mental activity associated with the grey cortex decides the course to be followed. One man commits a serious crime. The Neo-psychologists excuse him as he is following his dynamic urge and is ruled by determinism and the pleasure principle. But the real reason is loss of inhibition through non-development of his brain.<sup>1</sup> This true aspect of the picture they never recognize. The man with normal brain development employs reason, and says NO ! Why? We know by many cases that the sinner is deficient in brain cells, though we require many examinations to strengthen our case. I have two interesting photographs lent by Dr. Shaw Bolton showing the brain-cells in the prefrontal area in two opposite conditions, normal and imbecile. The criminal often is imbecilic.<sup>2</sup> The Neos<sup>3</sup> are not only extravagant in their ideas but unreasonable, and the object of this book is to put matters correctly and without prejudice. At the moment we are waiting for their opinion as to the source and location of their urge and conation, and whether it has any connection with flesh and blood or is immaterial, say spiritual.

As we proceed it will be clearly demonstrated by the researches of Ferrier, Bolton, Sherrington, Head and many others both here and abroad that there is an intimate relation between the brain and mind.

It is very unfortunate that so many English-speaking modern psychologists, the Neo group, should have strayed into the regions of phantasy in following the German school.

There is not the slightest foundation for the phantasy

---

<sup>1</sup> The prefrontal or Bolton's area, called so because he so ably described its functions.

<sup>2</sup> See figs. 25 and 26.

<sup>3</sup> Abbreviation for the new school.



that the undeveloped foetal brain can receive any impressions from the outer world (*vide* fig. 24). The brain-cells are not ready. It is clearly understood that memory varies in different people. I once examined a hooligan in the docks, whose age was 18. He remembered nothing before the age of 12, and then he was taken up by the police, which was of course a great event in his life. In normal persons infantile memories are retained if they are important. Generally speaking the majority of commonplace incidents in childhood are forgotten, never to be revived. The lasting impression which we call memory depends on the force with which the impress entered into the life of the child. The analogy of photography is often introduced in this problem; the under exposure which fades and the normal exposure which remains.

If a markedly sad event occur in childhood, it may quite alter the character as youth and adolescence progress; but Nature is kind, allowing forgetfulness of many of these. Though some events that the psycho-analysts are hunting for appear to be forgotten, the event searched for may be reached by a chain of memories working backwards. It has not been exhumed from an unconscious mind as Freud suggests. It is a matter of removing the dust of time. Where the Neos go wrong is in attaching every psychic trouble to some sexual aberration, instead of taking an intelligent view of the atmosphere that has surrounded infancy, and the risks of disordered endocrine functions, which in a gradual, subtle manner may modify the mental growth from infancy.

The present psychology usually disputes any connection between brain and mind, but Professor Hadfield, of King's College,<sup>1</sup> goes so far as to allow that "mind originally developed as a function of physiological process," but later "has developed an independence of its

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* "The Mind," p. 136. Published by Longmans.



own, and that it is governed by its own laws." If this idea be correct we should have a gradual atrophy of the brain from disuse, and mental operations could continue in demented with atrophied convolutions,<sup>1</sup> and there would be no reason why this independent and disconnected mind should not continue after death. This would logically explain spiritualism and indeed a future existence.

Professor Aveling<sup>2</sup> states, "The *method* of psychology is, in the first place, introspection pure and simple. It must not transcend experience. The *problem* of psychology is to examine and give some account of known experience within itself. The *subject matter* of psychology is for you your known experience, and for me mine." A very sorry foundation to build upon.

#### *A Complex.*

The deep-seated conflict which Freud says is constantly happening in our "unconscious minds" is called by him a complex. The unconscious mind is regarded as a system of emotions which are repressed because they are of a disturbing character. This is Freud's definition: "A 'complex' is a constellation of psychical elements, having their centre in a common emotion, and functioning as a single whole with a definite conative trend." We are grateful to Freud for giving us a new label although each psychologist defines a complex differently, as it is all a question of opinion.

It shows itself in curious ways. Thus a man steals a ring and the reason is said to be that he is secretly in love and the association gives him some relief. He is trying to repress his lust, but must have some vent, and he gets it by stealing the ring. He would not get relief by stealing a loaf, as it has no symbolic value. He does

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* fig. 27 for photograph of a lunatic's brain.

<sup>2</sup> *Loc. cit.* p. 86.



not know why he stole, but the psycho-analyst says it is a sexual complex.<sup>1</sup>

Complexes, which are allied to obsessions, or fixed ideas, are supposed to affect us all. Thus there are political complexes; vanity complexes, where the successful man suffers from pride; with the opposite—humility complexes; while sexual complexes are almost universal and the strongest of all. We are liable to inferiority and anxiety complexes; to religious complexes and many others. The *nouveaux riches* are liable to superiority complexes.

Complexes are caused by opposition to the fulfilment of wishes and, Freud says, this struggle takes place deep down in the affective or emotional system, and if unchecked directs our active conscious lives. In this way the psychologist considers that he gets rid of freewill, and places the responsibility of our misdemeanours on our unconscious minds.

The so-called complex may originate in this way. First there is shock occurring at any age, but most penetrating in childhood and in nervous subjects. If there is no mental recovery, no balance and but little control or reason, there follows morbid unreasonable imagination, conflict, obsessions and possibly crime.

One of Freud's chief complexes is Hedonism, or the pleasure principle, namely that we only live for pleasure and to enjoy ourselves. In fact unbridled lust, or Rasputinism, is justified. This most unwholesome doctrine is now rejected by the majority of neo-psychologists, for it was only the Herd Instinct that made them all blindly follow Freud.

Conscience, Professor William McDougall says,<sup>2</sup> is a "false psychological assumption and belongs to an organized system of emotions centred about one's self." Freud, to his own satisfaction, exploded the idea of con-

---

<sup>1</sup> See "The Young Delinquent," by Cyril Burt.

<sup>2</sup> "Social Psychology," p. 7.



science some years ago, when he suggested that it is the product of a diseased mind or imagination: "The perception of objection to definite wish impulses." He said it was only discovered by studying hysteria in neurotics !!!

Though conscience has been definitely disallowed, being a nervous disease, yet as an example of the many differences in the camp, one writer has recently produced an ego-ideal, or over-ego, the conscious part of which supplies conscience as the social organ of the mind.<sup>1</sup>

MacDougall writes that "moral intuition, a conscience and a moral sense or instinct formed a trio of false psychological assumptions on which ethical systems were based."<sup>2</sup> Even "character," according to MacDougall, appears to be a fraud as it only seeks to attract admiration. Philanthropy and good works are done in order to satisfy the desire for public esteem.

"There is only one sentiment which by becoming the master sentiment can generate strong character in the fullest sense, and that is the 'self-regarding' sentiment. There is a lower, imperfect form of sentiment, ambition or the love of fame, the ambition to become publicly recognized as a man of this or that kind of ability or power. But it is not properly a moral sentiment, and though it may generate character, the character formed through its agency is not a moral character."<sup>3</sup> The "self-regarding" sentiment stimulates or develops the ego-centric complex, which is a dangerous mental attitude for anyone to adopt, and there does not seem much to choose between it and the morbid love of fame.

Instead of warning us, especially the young, against cultivating self, the ego-centric complex, he writes:—

---

<sup>1</sup> "Mind," pub. Longmans Green and Co.

<sup>2</sup> "Abnormal Psychology," p. 7.

<sup>3</sup> "Social Psychology," p. 224.



"Moral advance and the development of volition<sup>1</sup> consist . . . . in the development of the self-regarding sentiment, and the improvement or refinement of the 'gallery' before which we display ourselves . . . . or in the last resort, one's own critical self standing as the representative of such spectators." "The will or the moral instinct or the conscience"<sup>2</sup> are not factors, and he instructs the moral man's imagination to make "ideal spectators" as a "phantasy."

These ideas appear to carry their own refutation, and the man of worldly experience would hardly tolerate his offspring being brought up on that morbid, self-regarding or ego-centric principle. MacDougall and his many confrères have no proof to support these curious phantasies.

#### THE VIEWS OF THE NEW SCHOOL ON MIND CRITICIZED.

MacDougall writes concerning Mind: "The adult human mind is the product of the moulding influence exerted by the social environment, and the strictly individual mind, with which alone the older introspective and descriptive psychology concerned itself, is an abstraction merely, and has no real existence."<sup>3</sup> In this way MacDougall, through the study of *Behaviour*, which appears to be his source of inspiration, arrives at mind without brain. It is then only a further step backwards to refer behaviour to the instincts.

This is how the whole of Mentality works :—

First : Instinct, or emotion, which indicates behaviour.

Then : No brain, except as a mechanism of behaviour.

<sup>1</sup> Volition, or the power to will, in fact free will is repeatedly described as non-existent by all the Neos, including MacDougall.

<sup>2</sup> MacDougall elsewhere denies the existence of conscience and speaks of it as the "nursery idea of conscience." Loc. cit., p. 164.

<sup>3</sup> Introduction to "Social Psychology."



Finally: No mind, except as verbal means of describing behaviour.

The psychologist notices the behaviour of animals, invertebrates and vertebrates, from insect to bird, that is, animals without cerebra, the higher brains of the mammals. He sees purpose in all, with occasionally an image or simulacrum of ourselves, which is intelligent volition; then, instead of appreciating that it is merely a result of creative evolution, and does not indicate intelligent volition any more than does the closing of flowers at night, he rushes to the double false conclusion that such behaviour is purposive on the part of the agent, and that since such behaviour is seen in animals without cerebra, and even in plants, he says that the cerebrum is not essential to intelligent and purposive behaviour. Do not the professor and others confuse these issues as soon as they trace to one source similar behaviour?

MacDougall's source is mind and purpose, quite apart from brain. To say so he sacrifices the brain, or, at any rate, accepts the thesis that thought, as, for example, in insects, fishes, or birds, can occur apart from the brain.<sup>1</sup>

It is the old story. Philosophy is concerned with *why* we are. Psychology is merely concerned with *what* we are, and *how* we think.

By this absence of logic and clear thinking the attack on mind fails, and with it collapses a large portion of new psychology. Above all things in psychology accuracy and reason must prevail, and the goal which we must all aim at is happiness and efficiency.

### MIND AND BRAIN.

The Neo, or new school of psychologists, build on a wrong premise, namely, that mind is independent of brain. The Neos even acknowledge that they are building on mere speculative philosophy, but it becomes necessary

---

<sup>1</sup> "Outlines of Psychology," pp. 152 304.



to understand the mental functions of the brain when dealing with psychology.

Man's intelligence is largely associated with language. Second in importance is the use of the hand. These two qualities raise us above our poor relations, the apes. Nature has so arranged things that the left side of the brain, which happens to be the more active, directs the right side of the body, and vice versa. It has to be remembered that we can only learn by experiment, or by examining the brain when damaged by disease, but by now we have a fairly extensive knowledge of the variety of symptoms and their precise location in the brain. War injuries have also contributed their quota of information. Our knowledge of the functions of the brain was largely anticipated by the clinical studies of that learned physician and philosopher, Hughlings Jackson. The various causes of epilepsy and loss of speech or aphasia were prominent in his researches.

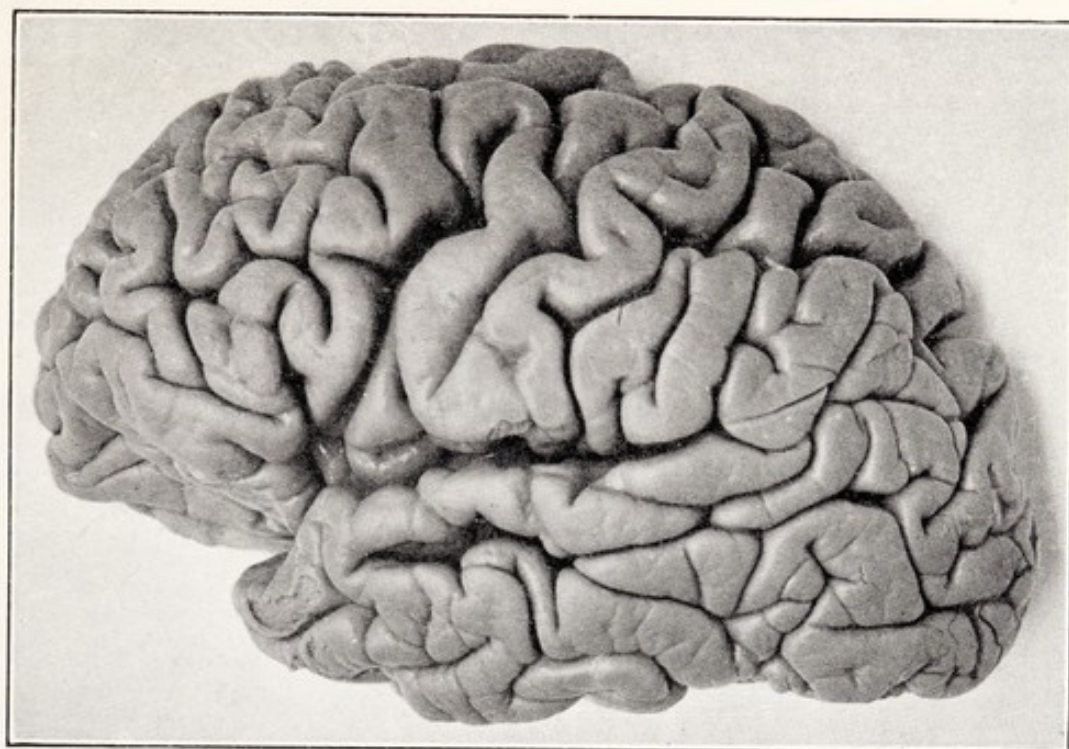
Aphasia, or loss of speech, due to injury to the motor centre, was first described in 1861 by a French neurologist, Paul Broca. In fact, this convolution is now called Broca's convolution. This was a new event in science, and forthwith further discoveries were made by Hitzig, Flechzig, Ferrier, Horsley, Henry Head, and others, concerning the convolutions of the brain. By experimentation its surface was accurately mapped out into motor and sensory areas. Nerve-fibres lead from five perceptive organs—the eyes, ears, nose, tongue, and skin, carrying their sensations to different convolutions, the cells and fibres of which transmit messages to the motor centres in the cortex or in other convolutions, and thence to muscles. Flechzig, in the year 1898, discovered certain areas among the convolutions where no response was given to galvanism, and these he called the silent areas and the psychic parts of the brain; later the association areas. He thought that they analysed the perceptions and directed or restrained subsequent action.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Fig. 28.



PF



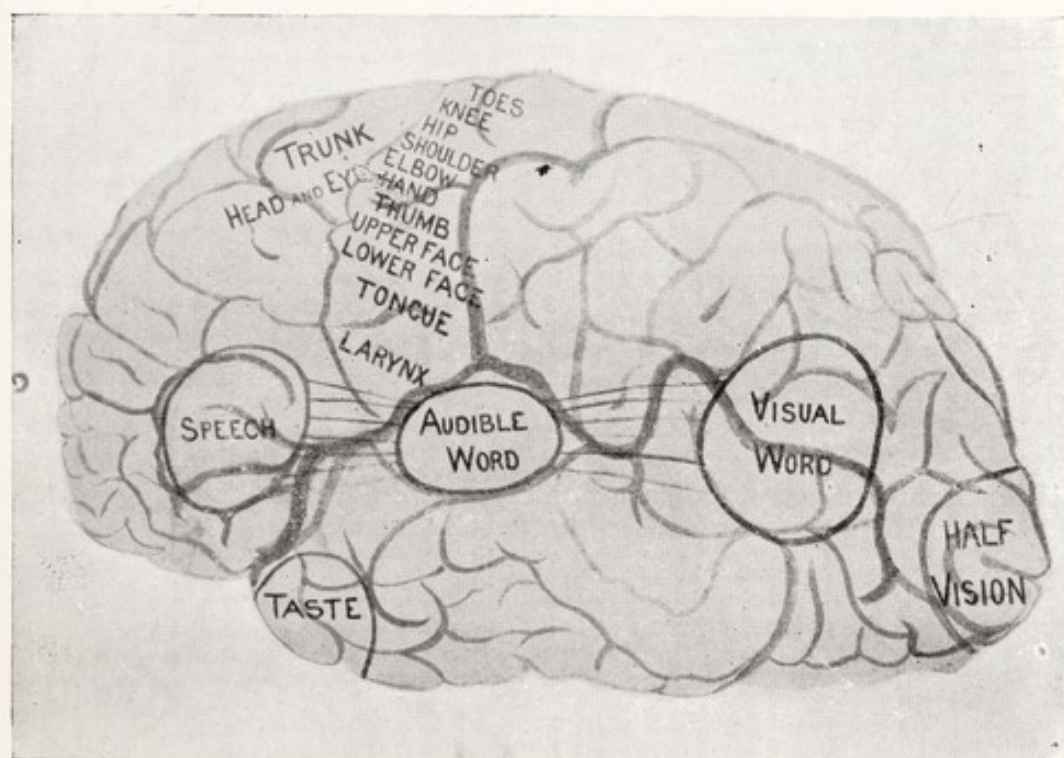
T

FIG. 27.—The brain of a female dement, aged 53. Note the great wasting in the P F or prefrontal centre, in fact all over. O, is the occipital pole, visual. P O, is the parieto-occipital association area ; T, is the temporal or auditory association area ; and M, S, are the motor and sensory areas.

Motor Sensory Parietal

Pre-  
frontal

Smell

Occipital  
visual area

Temporal

FIG. 28.—This photograph of the left hemisphere illustrates the sensory motor areas. The association areas are clear. In front is the highest psychic area, the prefrontal. Below in the middle is the hearing association or temporal area ; while the large area above and behind is the great visual association centre. (Lent by the late Dr. Mott.)



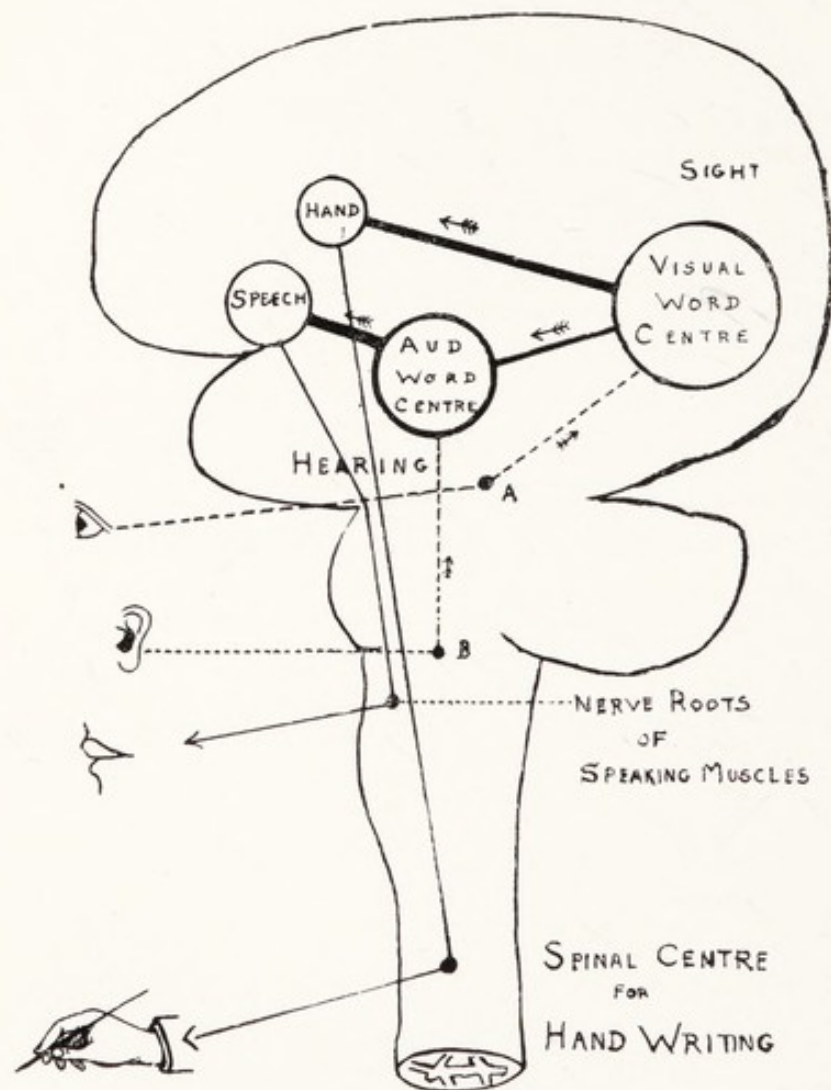


FIG. 29.—This diagram explains the mechanism of writing and of speech. It is apparent how messages are conveyed from eye and ear to their centres and thence to the motor centres of speech and writing. This shows how thought is carried on. Arrows show the directions of the various nerve impulses. If either the auditory or visual word centres are destroyed, as in apoplexy, it is clear how speech is interrupted.

Formerly, the association areas were supposed to be the storehouses of mental pictures or images, but now we know that images, or more correctly representations are in every part of the grey matter of the cortex.

Though the new school denies the fact and existence of the association centres, yet Dr. Aveling writes <sup>1</sup>:—"Thoughts are linked together objectively into a coherent system as being the thoughts of a self; we tend to evoke immediately from any two or more mental items a knowing of relation between them." A distinction without a difference!

In regard to mental phenomena and Freudian theories concerning the unconscious mind absorbing ideas before birth, I place here a plate showing foetal development from the sixth month to the ninth month, which reduces this proposition to absurdity (fig. 24).

To illustrate the mechanics of the brain and the connection with speech and writing we must return to the subject of aphasia. It is fully proven that when the sensory centre of hearing or the visual tract is damaged, as by hæmorrhage, the stimuli which they send to the motor centre of speech necessarily cease.<sup>2</sup> All power of speech or writing is gone; yet other parts of the mental machinery carry on in a very confused manner. Those who have had slight attacks of aphasia and recovered, describe their experience as one continued confusion. How could it be otherwise, when all thought passes through these particular centres in the form of unexpressed speech? We can prove this on ourselves, how our thoughts are spoken internally and subconsciously.

Another brain affection, amnesia, or loss of the memory of words, may be temporary from anæmia or debilitating causes, but in old age it is a misfortune which persists, due to cells disappearing or falling out of

---

<sup>1</sup> "The Mind," p. 98, pub. Longmans.

<sup>2</sup> Fig. 29.



action. This is painfully realized in old age by the loss of skill in the hands and fingers and their frequent misdirection in trivial things. It shows the decay of the well trained post-natal cells, those that develop in infancy and childhood.

When hæmorrhages occur in the brain, destroying the sensori-motor centres of hearing, vision, speech, reading, and writing, it happens that the muscles and the lower nerves are in working order either for speech or writing. It may well be asked why they do not act, and this is the crux of the situation. They cannot act until they get orders to do so from the higher sensori-motor centres in the grey cortex. The grey cortex of the brain is the captain of the ship. If he be killed the crew and ship are helpless, for there is only one possible captain in this case. It proves that except for reflex action it requires the intellectual operations of the higher brain to evolve ideas or to give directions.

*Ferrier's Researches.*

It is interesting to refer to the writings of Sir David Ferrier, going as far back as 1886.<sup>1</sup> He writes: "That the brain is the organ of the mind is a universally admitted axiom. We have no proof of subjectivity or modification of consciousness apart from the action of the cerebral hemispheres. Between the simplest reflex action and the most complex cerebral process there is a continuous unbroken gradation." This last truth is not sufficiently realized in the scientific world. Many speak as if Nature made jumps.

Ferrier perhaps did not distinguish sufficiently between the emotions and psychic processes. Sherrington by experiment showed that emotions originate and persist in the lower brain, or paleo-encephalon, after the removal of the cerebrum or neo-encephalon. This is where the

---

<sup>1</sup> "The Functions of the Brain," Chapter XII.



new school of psychologists, the Neos, fell out of line, attaching too much importance to the isolation of the emotions, instead of regarding mind and brain as one and indivisible. They are in fact a sect, and like religious sects build on one or two texts. Emotion, urge and sexualism form their texts, while they have no use for reason.

Ferrier forty years ago wrote that "volitional movements and the organic cohesion formed between the sensory and motor centres, persistently enduring in these centres, is the physical basis of our intellectual and volitional acquisitions in all their manifold range and complexity."<sup>1</sup> "All truly volitional action is the result of education."<sup>2</sup> When this is carried further we get free-will. Such is the physical basis of this psychic phenomenon. If spiritual phenomena intervene, they come in as a new force.

We got on fairly well on these data, but the new school of psychology would not tolerate physiology, especially as much remained unexplained.

MacDougall playfully called us the "brain staining psychologists," on account of the methods employed; while for himself and his party his Scotch humour reserved the dignified title of "the purists among the psychologists."<sup>3</sup>

Research is advancing rapidly as so many workers are busy, both here and in France, Italy and Germany.

We are obliged to arrive at the conclusion from scientific evidence that mind, thought and comprehension are associated with the cerebrum or upper brain.

#### *Hughlings Jackson's Views.*

Dr. Hughlings Jackson divided the brain into three levels or departments; the grey cortex, the basal ganglia

---

<sup>1</sup> Loc. cit., p. 436.

<sup>2</sup> P. 433.

<sup>3</sup> "Abnormal Psychology," pp. 41-43.



and the medulla, or as he called them, the parlour and the kitchen. So far we have been in the parlour ; when we enter the kitchen we meet parties of the new psychologists, who are exploring the emotions, instincts and tendencies. It is here that we possibly get our impulse or urge, perhaps our energy, but these thalamic and other deep-seated ganglia communicate with the cortex. Messages arrive in the parlour from the kitchen. If the impulse is right all is well, but if experience, wisdom and judgment disapprove, then the cortex inhibits the ascending emotion with the NO of free-will. This is just where the criminal comes in, or more correctly, falls out. Would we have these brutal murders of policemen, bank clerks and others if the criminals' grey cortex were sufficiently educated to say NO ?

Unfortunately, Dr. Hughlings Jackson never wrote a book, but his essays were voluminous and greatly prized, as he was always ahead of his time. It was my privilege to meet him frequently during the last twenty-five years of his life.

#### *Temperaments.*

There is a rather ancient system in psychology called temperaments. It has many undoubted merits which commend it not only to the physician but to everyone who is engaged in handling men. It is too extensive to dilate upon here, but it has an influence on many branches of psychology. We cannot explain the source of a temperament. All we can say is that it is constitutional, a part of a person as much as his blood, but as to how and why, we can answer nothing. When a marriage bureau is started, and run by the pick of the medical profession, the subject of temperaments will play a great part in deciding unions. Ignorance of temperaments keeps the divorce courts very busy.

There are four main Temperaments : the nervous, the bilious, the lymphatic and the sanguine. These probably live in the kitchen, the paleo-encephalon, and it is possible





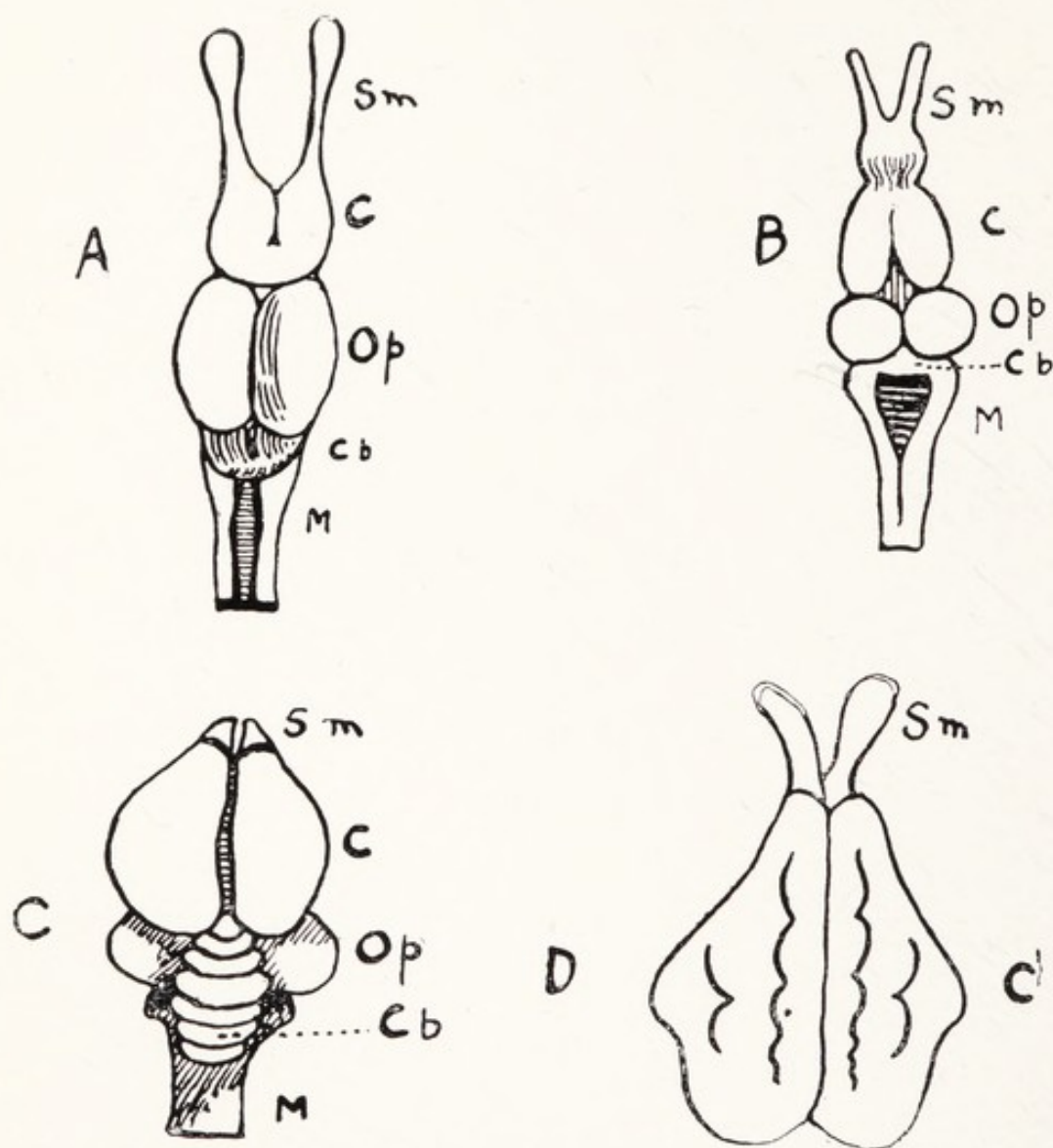


FIG. 30.—A is a diagram of the fish brain ; B, that of the frog ; C, of the pigeon ; and D, of the rabbit. There is a steady advance from simple lobes or ganglia to a neopallium or grey cortex in the mammal, c. Sm is the olfactory nerve ; C, the cerebrum(?)—so-called, except in the mammal, C ; Op, the optic lobes ; note how small in the frog ; Cb, the cerebellum, large in birds to guide their flight ; M is the medulla oblongata, the vital centre.

that they have a great bearing on conduct and perhaps give the particular shade of colour to character.

The nervous temperament is energetic and always to the fore.

The bilious type, dark eyed and sallow, sees everything through smoked glass and is not very amiable.

The lymphatic or phlegmatic people are clear but slow thinkers, acting deliberately.

The sanguine individual, with his ruddy hair and eyes to match, is almost youthful in his expectations. Even in trouble he still smiles and outdoes Mr. Micawber.

### THE NEO-PALLIUM.

The cerebrum has been called the neo-pallium by Professor Elliot Smith, as it appears first in mammals as a folding over the older brain and ganglia such as occur in birds, fishes and other lower vertebrates.<sup>1</sup> The cerebrum is also termed the neo-encephalon as distinguished from the more ancient paleo-encephalon below.

When the neo-encephalon or cerebrum with its grey matter is removed in apes, cats or dogs, leaving the paleo-encephalon, the animals continue to live, to feed, and carry on all their functions. They are deprived of intelligence, but if teased show signs of anger, spite and hatred. If stroked they show signs of pleasure and satisfaction. This indicates that the emotions and instincts, which are termed the affective organizations, lie at the base of the brain, below the grey cortex.

It must not be thought that a primitive brain is a useless or incompetent structure. If it were, there could be no survival.

Birds form the connecting link in brain architecture between reptiles and mammals. Birds have the paleo-encephalon but are more wonderfully equipped than any of the lower orders beneath them, especially in smell and

---

<sup>1</sup> Fig. 30.



vision. They have large optic lobes at the sides, and olfactory lobes in front. It is no wonder that the vulture's power of smell extends for 60 or 70 miles; or that the eagle from its giddy height espies the smallest prey. The part of the brain which naturalists call the cerebrum in no way corresponds to our cerebrum, although it has layers of well-formed brain cells. But this is a subject requiring further research.

Referring to fig. 30, the last picture (D), of a mammal's brain, shows an indented pallium or true cerebrum covering over all the ganglia. Intelligence of a lowly kind seems to dawn in this rabbit's brain, but it will take a clever man to draw a line between instinct and intelligence; no one as yet has succeeded in defining the terms.

### MEASUREMENTS OF THE GREY CORTEX.

We are constantly advancing in our knowledge of brain machinery, which discoveries upset the modern theories of psychology. A great advance came when Dr. Shaw Bolton divided the grey cortex into five distinct layers of cells and fibres.<sup>1</sup> It is too elaborate for a popular work, but suffice it to say that the middle or third layer is sensory. It is built up of small round cells and is called the granular layer. The external or upper layers, 1 and 2, are what might in popular language be termed the intellectual or thinking cells; pyramidal in form. Below the granular layer are two layers, 4 and 5, containing cells of varying shape, and these serve the many instincts of the body. They are the last to decay. Layer 1 of fibres shrinks first, then layer 2, which is mainly cellular. There is always a full complement of fibres.

Dr. G. A. Watson elaborated the subject and lent me a remarkable diagram which he prepared to demonstrate these conditions, giving careful measurements. In this

---

<sup>1</sup> Figs. 31 and 32.



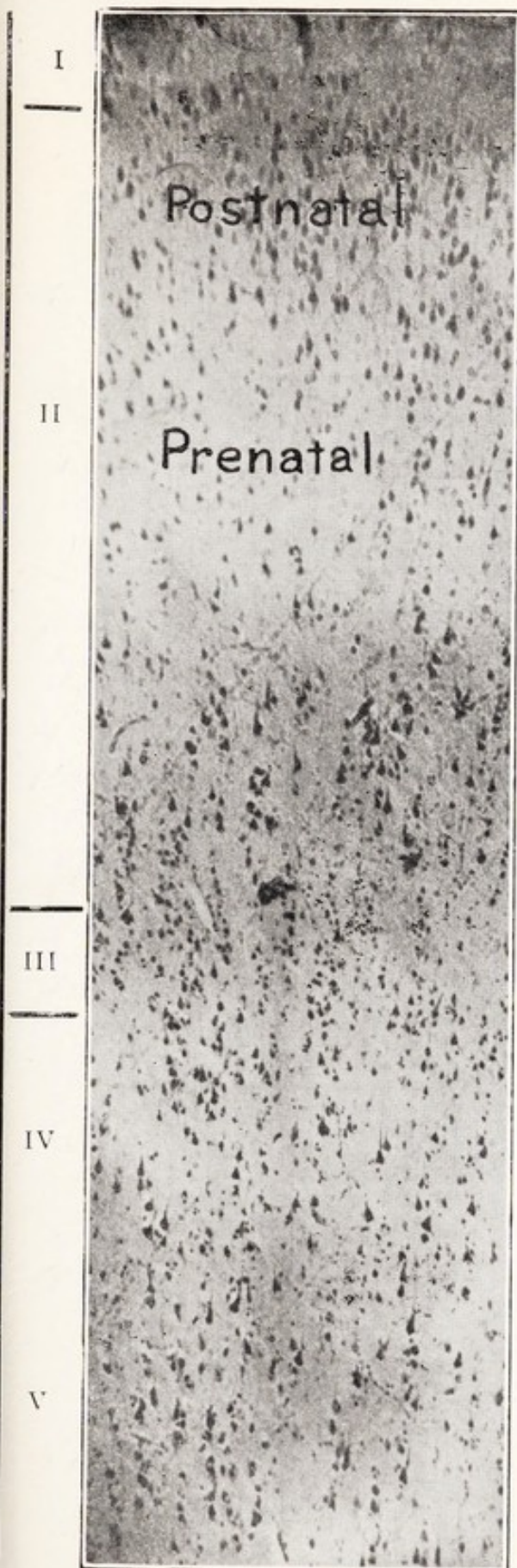


FIG. 31.

FIG. 31.—This is a low power (50 diam.) photograph of the temporal convolution of an intelligent man, only about half of layers IV and V can be shown. Observe the great depth of layer II, the pyramidal or "thinking" layer, to speak in popular terms. There are no undeveloped cells.

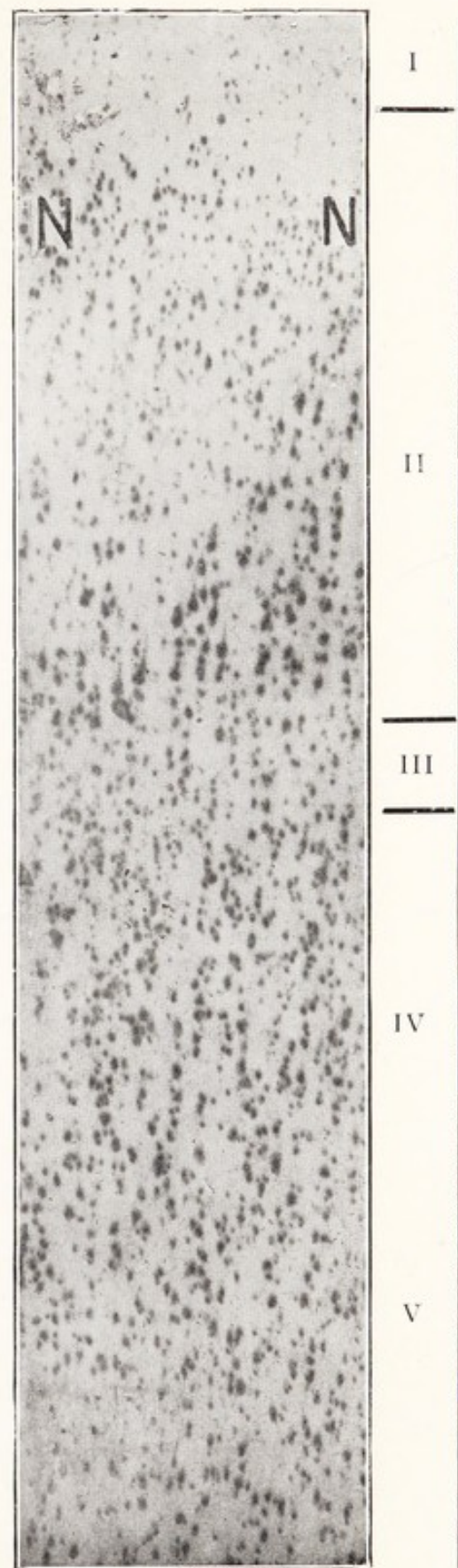


FIG. 32.

FIG. 32.—The same layer from the brain of a degenerate, a murderer. The layer of intelligence II is much shallower than in the normal or average man, hence a criminal. Compare the difference in height above figure or layer III in each case; normal on left.



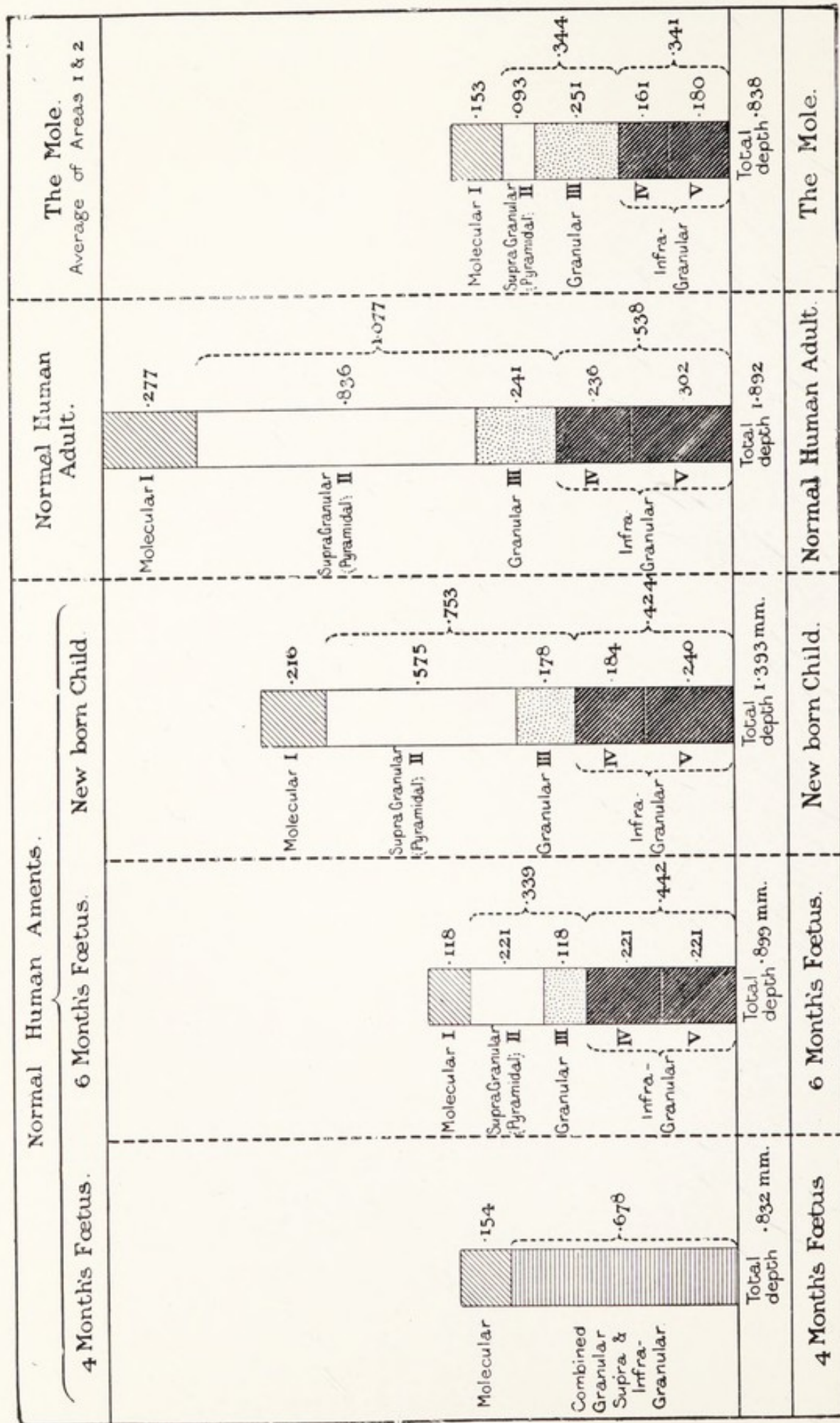


FIG. 33.—This very able research diagram was given to me by Dr. G. A. Watson through the courtesy of the Royal Society.



diagram,<sup>1</sup> the intellectual layer is left clear for easier perception, and when we compare the depth of the adult with that of the new-born child, we find the latter is only about two-thirds of the adult stage. The six months foetus, which Freud thinks is gathering mental impressions to carry it through this world's experiences, is a quarter of the adult depth. On the other hand, when we compare the layers related to instincts, we find the new-born child and the six months' foetus overtake the adult form in having a depth equal to four-fifths, while the instinct layers in the mole are equal in depth to sixty per cent. of the adult human being. So the mole's instinct is high in proportion, while man is rather starved in his instincts in favour of his intellect. The mole's pyramidal or intellectual layer is negligible.

Let us mentally arrange a diagram and see a column of ten rows of pyramidal cells arranged vertically. Layers one, two and three at the bottom relate to childhood, to what is learned and experienced then. Layers four to nine continue the learning and experiences of youth and early manhood. The remaining one, perhaps two layers, pick up the varying events till about sixty. All the time the cells and fibres throughout the brain are interwoven and they spell life and knowledge. As age advances and senile decay sets in, naturally the first cells to go will be the last developed. Layers ten and nine are unstable and disintegrate. Memory is going. Decay advances, the mind fails, but layers four, three, two and one are the oldest and persist, bringing back the memories of early youth and childhood. Such is mental dissolution and second childhood.

Let us consider the same mental picture of ten rows or planes of brain-cells, but substitute the word character for intellect. When the upper three or four layers are put out of action, not only has so much intellectual power disappeared, but also so much force of character. The

---

<sup>1</sup> Fig. 33.



individual is now governed by layers which were built up, as to character formation, in boyhood and early manhood. What these layers of cells were trained to then, they repeat in old age. If early youth were gay, selfish, or immoral, so do those forces return and govern the old dotard to the dismay of his friends. Dr. Shaw Bolton<sup>1</sup> showed that the prefrontal association cortex, the area of self-control, is the latest in development and the first to undergo retrogression. Here is something for parents to contemplate, especially if any pride of offspring. *Verbum sat. sapienti.*

### *The Longevity of Mind.*

It is generally recognized that the age at which mind fails and the brain decays varies greatly. Some few retain their mental powers well into the nineties, while among the poor and labouring classes their minds frequently begin to fail in their forties. It is a question of family vitality and breed. Few of the poor would be where they are if they had any good breed in their composition. The herd instinct, which is so much puffed to-day, is injurious rather than helpful to the masses by holding them down.

### *Raising the Masses.*

Those who are interested in raising the masses must be prepared to meet with disappointment, as they watch many of those they have raised fall back to their own class.

Longevity implies power of endurance, and the masses who have only been supplied with a limited endurance lose their mentality at an early age. I have been consulted in many such cases; thus a manager of a yard had charge of forty men and sixty horses, and broke at fifty years of age, completely played out. At thirty he was a great success in charge of only two horses. That was his level,

---

<sup>1</sup> "Amentia"—a series of articles in the *Journal of Mental Science*.



and the increased responsibility broke him down. But that man's son, aged twenty, will do much better, having been raised in better surroundings and educated, giving his ancestral units a better chance.

It is thus that we raise the people step by step, and the position is by no means hopeless. Indeed there are many examples which are the opposite of the case quoted. Successes are due to the meeting of some good ancestral units in each parent.

There are many exceptions on the other side, where presumably some good ancestral units were conjoined in poor working class parents. Dr. John Clifford, son of poor lace workers, retained clear mentality till he reached eighty-seven, and he died in harness. As a child of six he had to rise at four and go to the mill. He said his father would lift him out of bed and stand him on the cold stone floor, to encourage the departure of Morpheus. Dr. Clifford obtained the B.Sc., M.A., and LL.D. of London University. Is it any wonder that the masses should cry out against the hardships of poverty. On the other side of the picture consider the national wastage by losing so many good men and women through poverty.

David Livingstone was also of a very poor family, where twelve slept in one room. He had a brilliant intellect; Scotch, of course! Abraham Lincoln was a rail splitter, and worked through an examination in law.

I have known many distinguished scientists and doctors who have come from the very depths of pauperism. Thus a railway porter (Scotch, of course) became a doctor, and his brother a Professor of Greek at Oxford; and so on. Character and personality, what we label the soul, play a great part in these successes. Freudian principles, if applied, would not only be irrelevant but ridiculous.

### *Ancestral Units.*

Each parent offers a mosaic of ancestral units and it would appear almost a matter of luck whether good or



bad prevail. Certain it is that good living must predispose to successful breeding.

We have one unit of mosaic from each parent; four from our grandparents; eight from our great grandparents, and going back to the tenth generation 1,024 units. From all these mosaics we have many chances. In a poor man's son there may be a union of good ancestral units or determinants and he becomes a great success. Conversely some very bad units meet in a good family and we have the dishonest company promoter, the degraded man and even a murderer. In examining cases for certain apparent qualities we often find they carry the hidden traits of some ancestor.

As a psychological example some puzzled parents asked me about an artistic and theatrically-minded boy, aged 4. The father carried an artistic unit and his grandfather likewise. Among the maternal mosaics I traced a great-grandfather to be a noted actor. Needless to say that the boy's future was assured. He distinguished himself for art and for valour in the War.

In another case there were two young sisters, one fair the other dark. I took all their finger-prints, including those of the parents and four grandparents. Inspector Battley of Scotland Yard analysed them. The dark girl's prints favoured the paternal side which was dark, and the fair girl favoured her mother's side. I observed the ten finger impressions in the fair girl were similar in pattern to her maternal grandmother. That is of the ten impressions in each, both have six whorls and four ulnar loops, but the respective patterns are to be found on different digits. There were other similarities, but one family does not supply sufficient evidence; nevertheless it indicates a minor factor in inheritance.

The problem of ancestral units is of great psychological importance. I was interested when attending a young lady, whose father was a young peer of good birth and her mother a healthy servant girl. A lady adopted this illegitimate child and the protégée never knew her



parentage. It was evident about this young lady that she was in no way common. There was nothing of the lower class about her. She was not very intelligent but her father's family were not clever. She showed her paternal units in many ways, especially when she was annoyed. At these times her commanding manner showed great hauteur and temper. Her maternal units were negated, which might be partly environmental, as we see how much better the Barnardo children are than their parents. I think she was mainly built up of her father's units.

### PHANTASIES IN PSYCHOLOGY.

There are a good many intelligent people anxious to understand the why and wherefore of character, behaviour, urge and other mental phenomena. They are frequently attracted to the new psychology, largely because the Neos write *is* when they should write *may be*. The writers do not realize that the new theories are vastly more speculative than the old; nor do they divide psychology into the normal and the morbid states.

Here is a phantasy: A lady psychologist, a follower, not of Freud, but of Jung, states the following case.<sup>1</sup>

She explains the emotion felt by most of us when listening to the National Anthem and says this is an inherited character or emotion. "The glory of the past handed down through the generations, is in the collective unconscious." If this be so and a British infant were moved to Germany, will he when older sit through the German National Anthem, or stand, when it is played, and be enthusiastic only when the British Anthem is played? This phantasy falls to pieces, for the environment of the infant will decide whether its immediate sentiments are German or British.

One of the phantasies that I most object to is

---

<sup>1</sup> "The A B C of Jung's Psychology," by Joan Currie.



MacDougall's "neurokyme." He writes that "stimulation of a sensory nerve liberates chemically stored energy in the substance of the neurone." This fact is eighty years old. He then employs phantasy to differentiate the potential energy stored in the neurone from the active energy liberated by the call or action of the sensory nerves. This liberated energy he calls "neurokyme."

He adds: "This distinction is of the first importance for neurological speculation," and this neurokyme is worked off "by thought or mental activity of any kind." Nerve energy is a physiological problem and there is nothing to warrant his phantasy of two kinds of nerve energy. MacDougall now poses as a mechanist after playfully accusing the late Professor Mott, M.D., F.R.S., as being "an uncompromising advocate of a purely mechanistic and materialistic conception of mental diseases."<sup>2</sup> Would it not be dangerous to teach medical students these curious ideas or phantasies? It is indeed a very confused position because according to the Neos we do not think and have no minds in the ordinary sense, we only respond like automata to our environment.

To revert to the case of the man who stole a ring to satisfy a love-lust, I would remark that such perversions are common and the cause is pathological. Phantasy is often engaged in explaining symptoms. We require the aid of the alienist to solve the problem why this man was a thief; why he did not act as a normal lover? We must speculate that he is not an ordinary thief in order to give some psychological colour to the problem. The alienist finds mental instability as the true cause. Clever at school, he was very solitary in his habits. He suffered as a child from sleep-walking and night terrors. As he strolls through the street he touches each gate, *folie de touche*; and he goes back three times to see if he fastened the door behind him, *folie de doute*. The

---

<sup>1</sup> "Abnormal Psychology," pp. 103-105.

<sup>2</sup> *bid.*, pp. 41-43.



physician probes further and finds the mother to be hysterical and neurotic ; the father is very short-tempered and frequently very unreasonable. That is sufficient. It is not necessary to go further to decide that the man was a thief because of bad heredity. One day he steals a ring, another day he may steal a loaf as circumstances demand. Two or three years later a fresh love-lust may overpower him and he may commit a murder. To describe the ring incident and leave it there is not sufficient and seems yielding to phantasy, instead of asking for a full investigation which requires an expert, in fact an alienist.

The psycho-analyst follows a very dangerous course when trying to revive repressed and long forgotten sexual incidents. Dr. T. Savill, in a lecture, agreed with Aschaffenburg, Janet and others in stating "that there is a good deal of danger both to the patient and the physician in undertaking such investigations and such a line of treatment."<sup>1</sup>

It seems to me that east of the Rhine psychology swarms round the sexual emotions ; west of the Rhine that is, in France under the leadership of Pierre Janet, M. Didot and others, psychology follows up mental analysis scientifically ; not to mention M. Coué who aimed at putting the grey cortex in greater control of the ganglia and emotions.

### IMAGINATION.

The new school of psychology takes great liberties with words, extending their meanings without justification. They have made a generic term of phantasy to represent a fixed condition in psychology. This is wholly wrong, a fixed phantasy is a delusion, and as such is dealt with by alienists. The dictionary says a phantasy or fantasy is "a phase of the intellectual faculty of a lighter

---

<sup>1</sup> *Lancet*, February 13, 1909.



cast than the imagination ; something that pleases or entertains without real use or value ; an impression, a supposition, a conceit or a false emotion." We have there enough to choose from. The new school mix up phantasy and imagination. They act as if phantasy is a thing to cling to, while imagination is a thing to put down, and thus reverse the order and value of things. The dictionary says of imagination : "The faculty by which we can form a mental image of anything, and bring absent objects and perceptions forcibly before the mind, forming new combinations from memory." Fantasy and imagination may fuse into each other, but while fantasy is like a flash or shadow, imagination is a deeper quality, belonging to every intellectual mind. Imagination is at the base of art, literature, scientific discovery, machinery and even in the building up of a business, and last of all in morality and religion. It is the fruit of a good brain, and has as a foundation knowledge, experience, judgment and association.

Imagination is spoken of as creative. To this there is some objection as most dictionaries state that to create is to bring something into being from nothing, which is impossible. It was by previous knowledge that George Stevenson invented the steam engine ; likewise all Lord Kelvin's discoveries ; likewise Lord Lister's researches on wound treatment ; but in every case it was knowledge plus imagination.

Some may object that these clever men had knowledge and logically arrived at their conclusions, but it is not absolutely so. They made mental pictures of possibilities and probabilities and then put these into practice. Imagination is the capping stone of intellect.

At the same time, in the uneducated and the criminal, imagination may and does just lead them down the wrong turning. When the criminal has no imagination then he is a dud, in and out, not doing any great harm and more suitable for confinement in a colony than prison.







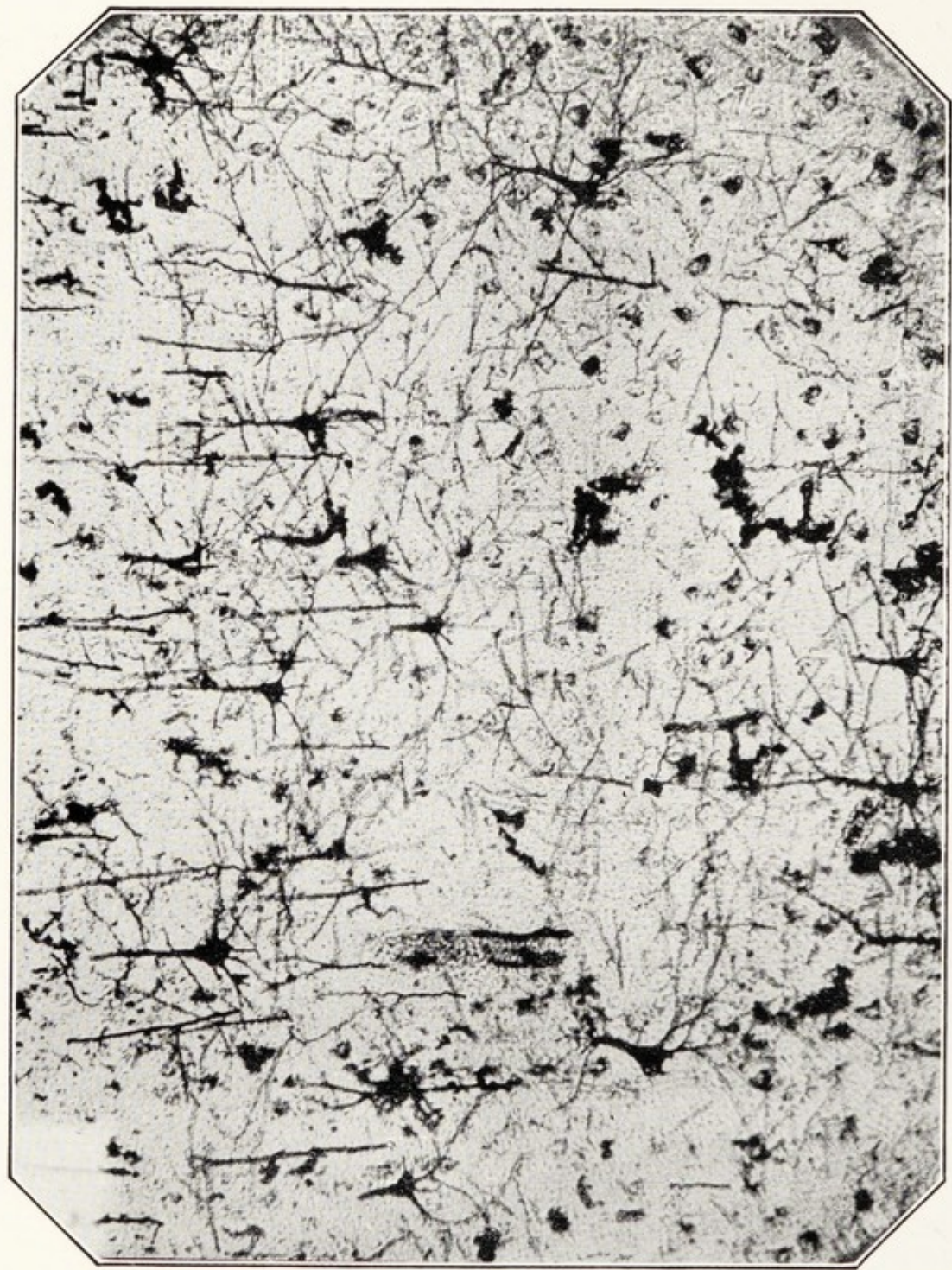


FIG. 34.—This beautiful photograph, given to me by my friend, the late Sir Frederick Mott, M.D., shows the actual cells and fibres of the brain. It is as well to remember, when discussing psychological "truths," or more correctly phantasies, that we are dealing with living machinery.



## BERGSON ON MATTER AND MEMORY.

I make a short criticism of Bergson's theories merely to show how a very great philosopher may go wrong by relying on phantasy instead of on physiology.

On the first page of his Introduction Henri Bergson defines matter as an "aggregate of images." And "by image we mean a certain existence which is more than the idealist calls a *representation* but less than the realist calls a *thing*; an existence placed half way between the 'thing' and the 'representation.' The conception of matter is simply that of common sense."

In speaking of "images in the vaguest sense of the word," they can be divided into the external, which are received by perceptions, and the internal, which are felt by affections. "The affection is within our body; the image or perception is without our body."<sup>1</sup> Each affection, by which Bergson would appear to mean emotion, "contains after its kind an invitation to act, with, at the same time, leave to wait and even to do nothing."

This is only another way of expressing cerebral action, which, through memory and association, in other words thought, can act, or wait, or decide to do nothing. The emotions by themselves have no choice but to act reflexly, but they can be held up by action of the cerebrum.

Bergson defines the brain thus: "A kind of central telephonic exchange; its office is to allow communication or to delay it. It adds nothing to what it receives." This is of course a fiction.

Speaking of memory, which is "an image," Bergson says that perceptions are not in the brain; "it is the brain that is in them." The brain is an image, it is not a reality as we understand it. In fact it is a "hyphen"; it cannot give birth to a representation. Perceptions act as exciters to motor mechanism but have "the power of choice, reflected from things, as though by a mirror."

---

<sup>1</sup> "Matter and Memory." Introduction.



Bergson says there are two kinds of memory : the first, such as learning a subject by heart, he calls a "habit of the body," a representation which "the body acts" ; the second kind of memory is "the above habit interpreted by memory, rather than memory itself."

"Our body is an instrument of action only. In no degree, in no sense, under no aspect does it serve to prepare, far less to explain a representation."

He compares our body, with all its functions, to the reflex action of the spinal cord. "Our perception is the virtual action of things upon our body, and of our body upon things ; and the state of the brain exactly corresponds to the perception. It merely continues it, the perception being our virtual action and the cerebral state our action already begun."

It would seem as if Bergson starts with a wrong premise, that the brain is a mere "hyphen"—a telephone exchange, which can add nothing and is an image outside the body. If this be incorrect then his whole argument falls to pieces.

Bergson affords the reader a clearer and more pleasurable idea of psychology in his work on metaphysics, than in the confusion of ideas that occurs in his book on "Matter and Memory." In fact he assumes a contradictory attitude, for in his "Metaphysics" he writes of personality and consciousness that they contain "a variety of qualities, continuity of progress, and unity of direction. It cannot be represented by images."<sup>1</sup> "But it is even less possible to represent it by concepts, than is by abstract, general or simple ideas. It is true that no image can reproduce exactly the original feeling I have of the flow of my own conscious life."

But in "Matter and Memory" (p. 64) he defines "personality" differently. He writes : "There is then in the aggregate of images a privileged image, perceived in its depths and not only on the surface—the seat of

---

<sup>1</sup> Introduction to "Metaphysics," p. 13.



affection and at the same time the source of action ; it is this particular image which I adopt as the centre of my universe, and as the physical basis of my personality." Does he adopt this image, or does the personality adopt him ?

The author is unable to unravel such involved propositions, and must leave it to the more intelligent reader.

Later Bergson somewhat unintelligibly adds—"Psychology proceeds like all other sciences by analysis. It resolves the self, which has been given to it at first in a simple intuition, into sensations, feelings, ideas, &c., which it studies separately. It substitutes for self a series of elements. But are these *elements* really *parts* ?"<sup>1</sup>

It all reads like a delightful picnic into dreamland.

## PSYCHO-ANALYSIS.

There is a popular idea that the new school of psychology, with its system of psycho-analysis, will help to solve the criminal problem. Has it done so ? Has it reformed one jail-bird or induced repentance in a single prisoner ? The new school is busy relabelling, pointing no way of cure in the subject of crime, but rather advocating fatalism by the doctrine of Determinism.

Saint Paul was a great psychologist, and he had no place for Determinism. On the contrary, he told us all about conflict, repression, free-will, sublimation and the theories of the "complexes."

A new label, "sublimation," has been applied by Freud. By this process a hidden trouble in the so called unconscious mind is brought up into consciousness, and then the trouble goes. It is the opposite of concealing or carrying our own troubles, which brings on depression,

---

<sup>1</sup> Introduction to "Metaphysics," p. 22.

<sup>2</sup> Galatians v. 16-26. Romans vii. 14-25. Also Proverbs xxvi. 2.



conflict and the worry which is called a complex. This treatment by psycho-analysis takes weeks and months, the cure being effected by allowing the patient to talk and ramble for hours at a time. The subject then becomes as clay in the hands of the psychologist, which is a great responsibility. Doctors have been doing this all their lives in their own way without any mysterious cult; helping people out of hidden or suppressed troubles and difficulties; while religious agencies are doing the same, sometimes awaking the sinner in a few hours, and it is then called "conversion."

Emotional religion has its place among the weaker vessels, aments, degenerates, and those sunk deep in immorality. The author is second to none in his dislike to emotional religion, but as medicine to the fallen he approves. We must be unprejudiced and judge by results. It is a question of suggestion to the unstable, with a view to rousing or cultivating self-control.

The author is far from wishing to depreciate any man's religion, the tendency is rather to join out of sympathy.

Sitting one day on the golden sands of the Sahara at sunset surrounded by beautiful flowers, near the Tombs of the Kings, the author observed an Arab busy lighting the oil lamps. His duty finished, he took off his grass shoes and standing barefoot, facing Mecca, recited his evening prayer in earnest tones. After a short pause he knelt on the sands still reciting and bowed towards Mecca, touching the ground with his forehead four or five times. The gun fired, the daily fast of Ramadan was finished; he completed his toilet and went off to relieve his hunger. Is not such faith and piety received in Paradise on equal terms with a gorgeous service in a cathedral or a more lowly one in a village chapel? Who is to judge? Saint Augustine, bishop of Hippo, said:—

"Si non Deus non bonus."



## DR. BOLTON ON PSYCHO-ANALYSIS.

In an excellent article in the *English Review*, Dr. J. S. Bolton proves that the theory of the Unconscious mind cannot exist.

Freudians say "we are actually mere conscious ghosts, who think and act as the conscious marionettes of a dread power, whose existence and influence date from infancy—nay from pre-natal life."<sup>1</sup>

Freud provides an endo-psychic censor<sup>2</sup> "in cases where this interesting mechanism goes wrong," and Dr. Bolton adds: "The psycho-analyst is called in to exorcise the censors, and under his suggestion to allow the conscious mind (say of a young girl who is under treatment) to become flooded with a stream of primitivity and sex knowledge, which, in his opinion and under his explanations, will cause cure. Education in the fruit of the tree of life is given by the psycho-analyst, and his mature experience is at the disposal of the patient in order that the needful mental adjustments may be performed."

Any thoughtful parent can appreciate the harm, perhaps ruin, which might result in placing a youth or maiden in the power of a non-professional operator or psychologist.

Among Freud's curious theories Dr. Bolton alludes to one where a servant accidentally breaks china. It is really intentional. Some message from the unconscious mind has slipped past the endo-psychic censor, who has not been able to stop it. The girl does not understand why she breaks china, but it is at the bidding of the unconscious mind, in order to lessen labour and to have revenge on her employer!

Bolton points out that psycho-analysis is a "new

---

<sup>1</sup> *The English Review*, November, 1926.

<sup>2</sup> After reading the previous section the reader will be unable to admit this bogey or evil spirit.



discovery of vast import to numbers of specialists, who have never seen the inside of a mental hospital !”

They seem to ignore the knowledge and treatment associated with these difficult cases requiring the life work of the alienist. The author has met cases which would have been ruined if this treatment were persisted in. Dr. Bolton, to the satisfaction of his readers, pricks the bubble, and his article ought to be published far and wide.

### SIR ROBERT ARMSTRONG-JONES ON PSYCHO-ANALYSIS.

The position of psycho-analysis is well summed up in a letter to *The Times*, by Sir Robert Armstrong-Jones, whose friendship I have enjoyed for thirty years. I know of no greater authority on mental diseases, and he is at present Lord Chancellor's visitor in lunacy.

“To the Editor of *The Times*.

“SIR,—In consequence of your leading article (*The Times*, December 31) upon psycho-analysis, which followed upon comments made at a recent inquest, various views have been expressed as to the value of psycho-analytic treatment in mental healing, and perhaps you will allow me, as one who has some degree of intimacy with the procedure, to make a few comments.

“The bodily disturbances associated with abnormal mental states are so distressing to the patient, and as a result the sufferer feels so despondent, hopeless and useless, that he is sometimes taken for relief to anyone who can pretend to explore the cause of his trouble however inexperienced in medical matters he or she may be. It is generally acknowledged that psycho-analysis is not treatment but only a method to ascertain the origin of mental and nervous disorders, and this fact has led some wise physicians who have observed the results to remark that the chief need in mental therapy is a healthy synthesis, not a morbid analysis.

“It is too readily assumed that the instincts, and not the reason,<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Those who follow the writers on new psychology must have been amazed at the omission of the term “reason” in their writings. MacDougall (“*Social Psychology*,” pp. 323, 326) writes : “It is therefore a grave error on the part of some authors to say that reason may create a desire for a moral quality.”



are the main agents in 'getting the direction' of subsequent conduct, and the view as regards *behaviour* in animals is too frequently and loosely applied to human conduct. It is well known that the instincts are the 'Kinetic-drive' in the lower forms of animal life; insects will create architectural structures of elaborate types, birds will build nests, the beaver will dam the brook, the duckling will swim, and the newly hatched chick peck, without any previous experience or examples to copy, and if there is intelligence to guide the instinct, it is unconscious. It is presumed by the Freudians that the instinct of sex is the governing tendency in all human beings, and that all mental and nervous disturbances of whatever kind are traceable to an origin in some abnormality of the sexual life. The psycho-analyst regards the human mind as an unalterable complex, without plasticity or latitude, and makes little allowance in conduct for the reason and less for the will which to him is only secondary to an ordained fatalism, and thus tends to favour an irresponsibility for all wrongdoing.

"The psycho-analyst admits that he is most successful with the young; elderly folk being regarded as impenetrable, because the libido, or the direction of interest, is less sexual, the emotional reaction or transference is less complete, the diversion from one form of attention to another, or sublimation, is less easily attained, and the resistance to be overcome is more potent, i.e., the reception accorded to the examiner is less welcome. Nevertheless, the more mature in age often obtain satisfaction in viewing their sins at a distance, the painful episodes of their lives having been forgotten or compensated for in other directions. The interest of a somewhat cryptic inquiry involved in the measurement of mental reaction periods, the so-called 'free association' (which consists of inconsequent words), and the presumed interpretation of dreams by a rigid code, deeply impress many mental and nervous cases, and I have seen those who rejoiced in the exposure of their errors, ills, and imagined fears; but I have also seen several instances where prurient suggestions have so overwhelmed young persons that they have, through psycho-analytic-methods, been precipitated into the ranks of the certified insane in mental hospitals.

"The method of laying open the past life of thought in a young sufferer is, in many instances, profoundly injurious. To unravel the tangled growth of the sexual life in an ill, sensitive, and suggestible adolescent is to cause the most prejudicial changes in the whole outlook and manner of life of the boy or girl; and, as your leading article suggests, if competent persons can be found to inquire into a practice which has been known to prove permanently detrimental



to the mental life of young persons, it will be a public satisfaction if they will undertake the task.

"I am, sir, your obedient servant,

"ROBERT ARMSTRONG-JONES, M.D.

"*London,*

"*January 10, 1925.*"

## FREUD'S DESCRIPTION OF PSYCHO-ANALYSIS.

The methods of psycho-analysis are certainly most unscientific. Freud describes the process thus :—

"The patient talks, tells of his past experiences and present impressions, complains and expresses his wishes and his emotions. The physician listens, attempts to direct the patient's thought processes, reminds him, forces his attention in certain directions, gives him explanations, and observes the reactions of understanding or denial thus evoked."<sup>1</sup>

We have to remember that this is not an examination of a few hours, but a daily process continued for days and even months and years. During all this time the physician is suggesting and dictating, unconsciously pushing his own mental attitude into that of the patient.

Freud ignored all these outside factors which must distort the mind. He is detecting intra-psychic conditions and for this purpose regards phantasy as more valuable than genuine memory. That is to say, if you are going to reach the basal level of a patient's mentality, a tissue of falsehoods and fancies does not affect it. Freud's explanation is that the distortion or falsehood shows the direction in which the mind works. Clearly the psycho-analyst must all the time be influencing this misdirection or perversion of thought and consciousness. It follows that the weaker the patient the more easily can he be analysed. This is exactly what the psycho-analyst says, and why he experiences so much trouble, in fact, usually failure, in analysing older people with more stable

---

<sup>1</sup> Freud's "Introductory Lectures on Psycho-analysis," p. 13.



mentation. Thus it is somewhat of a "cooking" operation. The junior psycho-analyst gets poor results and gathers up but few "observed facts"; while the older examiner, when dealing with a weak vessel, gets all the facts he hoped for.

### RELIGION AND MATERIALISM.

As a strong advocate of emotional religion for the weakminded, uneducated and the degraded, I am prepared to justify my position. With a Quaker heredity and upbringing I cannot be accused of emotion, or instability in religious problems. We little realize the importance of raising the masses from the low level of to-day, emphasized by post-war conditions.

Experience shows that religion alone can attack this deplorable evil. Those with low-grade intellects are reached through their emotions, as the undeveloped upper brain is valueless. These people can only react through their lower brains, in fact their emotions. We must by rhythm, music and reiteration induce a condition of semi-hypnotism, a fixation of what little attention they possess. During hypnotism the pupils dilate, indicating that the fore-brain is passive, leaving the subconscious mind dominant. The subconscious mind is the keystone of hypnotic treatment, and when full consciousness returns the subconscious directs conduct in the suggested channels. Let us take the two main instincts, acquisitiveness or self-defence and reproduction; pictures are drawn of the horror and ruin of evil doing, contrasting the happiness of going straight. Saint Paul says that those who sin without law<sup>1</sup> perish without law, and these poor degenerates never had any sense of law. *Perire* (Latin) is not torture, nor yet destruction, but a simple disappearance. Let us try to help the poor things and make them happy. It is better for them and better for the community.

---

<sup>1</sup> Epistle to the Romans ii. 12.



Intellectual religion is on quite a different plane and appears as a real living force, in touch with the highest sentiments and aspirations of humanity. We have already discussed imagination as a super-intellectual faculty, and it is reasonable to ask if it helps to explain spiritual life. Are there not three super-imposed planes : animal, intellectual and spiritual ? We have argued that normal, healthy imagination is the capping stone of the intellect. We are not here concerned with abnormal or deficient conditions, when the imagination can only lead to selfishness and possibly to crime.

The self-regarding sentiment which MacDougall and others constantly advocate, surely acts in the reverse way to what they imagine. Alienists and other physicians know the great evil of introspection, self-centering or self-regarding. The subject is so well understood that I am surprised that the Neo group still commend it.

Can we propound the theorem that normal imagination is the bridge between the higher human intelligence and the spiritual world ?

Are we justified in expecting a higher plane above the intellectual plane—the spiritual plane ? Every day brings us evidence of spirit manifestations testified by men whose word cannot be doubted. Neither reason, nor logic, nor biological evolution destroy this claim. Good and holy men, saints, musing on the evils of humanity are led by their imaginations to give us suggestions as to right living. In this they profess to be in touch with a supreme Being, and indeed some say they have communications. There is something within us which responds to their communications. We have never been able to locate or even describe what the nature of this response is. There is a yearning to know what happens after death ; to know something of the Great Hereafter ; but it still remains and perhaps will ever remain a closed book.

It seems impossible to reject a life after death or a spirit world around us ; and we can infer much from the



lives of spiritually-minded men and women as contrasted with those who lead purely selfish lives. There is no false sentiment in asking the question where some of these good people have gone. Their personalities cannot become nothing. Is Elizabeth Fry dead? Are not Lister and Cardinal Mercier, and Queen Victoria still living personalities on the other side?

It would seem to be a very limited mental outlook which would place a boundary around the Great Unknown. Are we not infants in science and knowledge? Appealing with due respect to the Free Thinkers, many of whom are serious in thought and good-living men, I would ask them, how can they be so illogical as to deny the Great Hereafter? Do they know anything about it? They explain all we see and feel in physical terms, but what about the unseen, the Ego or Personality? Is it not a something, and something may be continued or changed, but it cannot turn into nothing. Can anyone explain the spiritual nature of man, which is a force that none can measure, for it is known only by its fruits—love and happiness.

What did the great Agnostic, Huxley, think about a future life? Concerning Life after Death he wrote to Morley: "It is a curious thing that I find my dislike to the thought of extinction increasing as I get older and nearer the goal. It flashes across me at all sorts of times with a sort of horror that in 1900 I shall probably know no more of what is going on than I did in 1800. I had sooner be in hell a good deal, at any rate in one of the upper circles where the climate and company are not too trying. . . . I wonder if you are plagued in this way?" Huxley was a good man from every point of view, but being so great an authority on positive science he dwelt little on the unknowable. It was the privilege of the author to be one of his students, imbibing the basis and impetus towards clear thinking, and at the time fascinated by the doctrine of agnosticism. Agnosticism is the only logical attitude of the materialist.



## MAN AS A "REACTION."

From the foregoing résumé of Neo-psychology there is no escape from the conclusion that it does not allow man to be what we thought, a thinking, responsible, spiritual being, but merely a Reaction. Our idea has been that in the last seven or eight decades we were commencing to understand the functions of the brain, but we are told that we have no brains, nor yet mind as we imagined it.

We are informed that there is no higher psychic platform to rise to; nothing of what we fancied was a spiritual world. There is no soul as we understood the term. We have according to modern psychology reached the end of evolution, and man with his Freudian sexual urge represents the highest point of evolution. What a sorry and limited outlook! And so it goes on, no two leaders agreeing. What does William James say?<sup>1</sup> "A string of raw facts; a little gossip and wrangle about opinions; a little classification and generalization on the mere descriptive level . . . but not a single law in the sense in which physics shows us laws, not a single proposition from which any consequence can be causally deducted."<sup>2</sup>

James is well balanced and writes that will power or conscience is "action in the line of greatest resistance" and illustrates with a scheme:

I Ideal impulse.

E Effort of will.

P Primitive instinct.

The struggle consists in I and E against P. If I and E prevail the victory over wrongdoing is won.

Freudians do not encourage conventional morality, or the sacrifices and strain which it involves. It is only permitted as a window dressing; otherwise Free Love is recognized as legitimate.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Principles of Psychology."

<sup>2</sup> Loc. cit., vol. ii, p. 549.

<sup>3</sup> Freud's "Lectures."



How do the Neos explain the murder of the constable in Essex, the brutality exhibited having placed it among the classical crimes? According to the theory of Determinism the one or perhaps two murderers could not have acted differently and are not willingly guilty of any crime. Therefore, it is wrong to punish them. It would be interesting if the Neos could explain the mental operations which work up to such dastardly acts. Is there anything in the character or actions of criminals corresponding to what we used to call wickedness? We have been taught that these criminals had no brains, only minds, and those were built up by instinct, without the influence or use of reason or choice. What pre-historic superstition seized them, in the belief that the poor man's open eyes would retain an impression of their faces, and to what end?

Let us no longer whip a dead horse, but consider the opposite of the new psychology, wherein we pin our faith to the researches on the brain, to the employment of reason, and to the belief that there is a great deal beyond our knowledge, which we perhaps never understand. As one example of what I mean let us go back to the Scott Expedition in the Arctic regions, and contemplate the action of Captain Oates, when, so ill as to handicap the possible escape of his companions, he walked out of the tent to certain death in the raging blizzard. It would be almost blasphemous to put that self-sacrifice alongside the doctrines we have been discussing. In that brave man we see psychic character soaring high above anything that psycho-analysis or modern psychology can explain.

The Freudians get the idea that everyone is actuated by base ideas, and kind or noble acts are a demonstration of weakness, lust or vanity. Apply the Freudian measuring rod to Captain Oates' passing, and we see how far out modern psychology is. We see in healthy mentality a basis of heredity or breed and mental development. There are many of the well born, rich or poor, to whom the Freudian code is a sheer impossibility and negation.



After mature consideration, is man a mere passing reaction on the surface of the creation ?

Yes, man is in some respects a reaction. In another chapter I have playfully remarked that you cannot turn a criminal into a saint with a few thyroid or pituitary tabloids. But this is only a part of the truth, for these endocrine glands, when out of order, seriously affect development and sometimes the brain. Dr. Langdon Brown mentions the case of a young man whose pituitary gland was disordered and he became a thief, a liar, and probably an incendiary.<sup>1</sup> In another case a woman had a fear of becoming a man : a brilliant example, the Neos would say, of Freudian sexual urge. She had a cortical tumour of the adrenal gland.

The adrenal secretion increases virilism, and is also defensive against fear. If it fails, then anxiety and similar neuroses develop. The layman knows a good deal about the diseases of the thyroid and the mental effects following such derangements.

The whole subject is complex, far-reaching, and only partially explored, and it is quite evident that the modern psychologists have missed fire. They ignore physiology, and disconnect the mind from the brain. The brain is a delicate machine, and a very little puts it wrong. The moral is a healthy body, which demands much care and thought, especially of the offspring to give them a fair start. Man should be, and is, something better than a reaction ; but if there is reckless breeding and lawlessness, then he may be reduced to a mere reaction.

Sir Clifford Allbutt wrote once : " It is for science to extract the living kernel of truth from the perishing fruit of experience." The new psychology is all a question of experience.<sup>2</sup>

I will pass from morbid psychology, which is a good deal in the air, to describe some of the features of one

---

<sup>1</sup> " The Endocrines in General Medicine." (Constable), p. 113.

<sup>2</sup> *Vide* Professor Aveling on Psychology. " The Mind," p. 86.



whose perfect mentation was conspicuous, who has left deep imprints in the sands of Time, the late Lord Lister.

*The Immortal Lister.*

I think back half a century to the period when I was so closely associated with my immortal chief, Lister. He taught us to fight the "self-regarding sentiment," and all morbid introspection, and to enucleate self-interest in favour of those who placed their confidence in us.

Everyone will admit that Lister was our greatest scientific surgeon. When he began his career, operations, even the simplest, were usually fatal from septic poisoning. He and Pasteur brought in a new world. Lister banished septicæmia, and if it occurs now it is a sad reflection on the man in charge. Not one fiftieth part of Lister's discoveries have been acknowledged, although we are working and building on them every hour.

It falls to the lot of very few to live in proximity to a man who so nearly approaches perfection. With a total disregard of self, Lister possessed knowledge, ability, wisdom, mental balance, benevolence, and a supra personality; besides being a great classical scholar. Though some rivals were envious and unfair, he never returned ill-will, but was courteous to all. Unfortunately his confrères would not elect him President of the College of Surgeons when it was his turn, but there was no bitterness on his part; though there may have been much anger with the College group in our loyal and impulsive hearts. It could not be denied that at times Lister was grieved, and even sad, at the opposition, because it all meant unnecessary loss of life. His followers and visitors were, however, a great cheer to him. It was not admiration only that bound us to him; it was affection, and this, as he said at the final banquet, was fully reciprocated, and encouraged him in the fight.

With all his ability, and the respect and honour shown to him by the leaders of the profession and by crowned heads, both at home and abroad, he never neglected



detail or avoided the trouble of a kind act. I must give an anecdote of something which occurred in one of my wards. The Chief entered, followed by three distinguished European surgeons, and stopped at the bedside of a young child who showed some distress. Dolly's arm had come off, and she held it up to him. Lister called for a needle and thread, and with elaborate care sewed it on. Her tears dried up, and one of those kindly smiles crossed his face.

There were many kind deeds to poor patients, for Professor Lister was never lacking in goodness, and only those who were in close touch knew or guessed the source of generosity. That foolish, vain, self-regarding sentiment, which we are asked by the Neos to cultivate as an aid to character, was conspicuous by its absence.

Professor Lister was a very handsome man, and of a commanding personality. He was tall, with a large well-shaped head, a thick shock of long hair, and an intellectual face with blue, penetrating, kindly eyes. He shaved, wearing side whiskers, turning grey. The amount of confidence he inspired was amazing, which was largely induced by his far-seeing knowledge of his subject. He knew his principles were true, and that created the same feeling in ourselves. His lectures were always interesting, and he had an exceedingly pleasant voice. In Edinburgh he would lecture to more than a hundred students, sometimes to four hundred, and there were always visitors from all parts of the world. Some of these would attend his lectures and operations for two or three months. Those were grand, phenomenal days. In London he seldom had more than eight or ten students at a lecture. We always considered his journey south was a mistake, but he thought the Londoners would take up his methods of surgery, and till he arrived there was no clinical surgery taught. He established the first chair. Clinical surgery consists in teaching surgery from the patient, that is, seeing the actual case instead of learning only by books. We often asked our Chief why he would



not write a book to spread the truth far and wide. His modest reply was that both science and surgery are continually advancing.

Professor Lister was very free in conversation and discussion with his students. Professor Huxley was then in Edinburgh, as Sir Wyville Thompson was away with the *Challenger*. Student-like, we admired Huxley immensely, and absorbed not only his teaching but his Agnosticism. Asking our Chief on this question, he replied that he would not practise another day if he had not full belief in a higher power and in a future existence. That settled the matter for us. We evidently went by brain value. Lister never talked religion, but it was in his life. Quakers are particularly reticent on religion, and he belonged to an old and talented Quaker family. He had to leave the Society of Friends when he married Miss Syme, who belonged to the Church of England. It was a very narrow rule, but those born into the Society can never get the Quakerism out of the bone.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> It may interest confrères to know that while I was with Professor Lister he introduced the following operations: the removal of the thyroid (I gave the woman chloroform); he wired the fragments of a fractured patella, leaving a useful instead of a stiff joint; he drained and cured spinal and other bone abscesses; he opened joints freely; he indicated the treatment of empyema by incision instead of puncture, Mr. John Chiene actually operating on the first case so treated. He held up aseptic surgery as the ideal move beyond antiseptics and performed the first aseptic operation. It was a bone operation, in which the blood-clot organized, forming new bone and new skin without a drop of pus. No antiseptic was allowed to enter the wound. We unfortunately do not always succeed to-day.

Lister very much improved the methods of operations for cancer and had better results than are obtained to-day. He defined one principle that if cancer could not be successfully operated upon, it should be left alone, as he demonstrated that once disturb a cancer with the knife, and it advances rapidly. To-day there is a fight between surgery and biochemistry concerning cancer, in which the latter must win in time. It will be a great day for the



## QUAKERISM.

When searching for light in psychic phenomena and ideas, I often think there was a great charm about the old Quakers, with their simplicity, intelligence, accuracy of detail, and absence of affectation. Unfortunately they have been swallowed up by what they called "the world." Their great value was in the education and character-training of the young. They taught duty with an absence of fear, strict probity, extreme tolerance, and calm, clear thinking. It was this sense of duty that made Cromwell say that one Quaker was worth seven ordinary soldiers. They fought for him as against Royalty, but about 1670-80 decided not to fight at all. They were anti-Royalist till Queen Victoria came on the throne, but it was a passive resistance. Their anti-feelings were caused by the bond between Church and State, which led to a great deal of persecution. The Quakers were very pleased with the goodness and high character of the young Queen, and in consequence proposed a loyal deputation. This was a very quaint episode, for Quakers never took off their hats as a mark of respect. Imagine, therefore, about ten fine-looking men, attired in knee-breeches and buckle shoes, swallow-tailed coats without collars, white silk neckcloths, and broad-brimmed hats. They slowly, in dignified style, ascended the royal staircase, hats on, but as they

---

surgeon when we can relieve him of so much anxiety, but a still greater day for the patient.

He made new principles in the operation for hernia ; and the treatment of varicose veins by injections. These principles, being true, persist and guide us to-day ; and so on *ad infinitum*.

Lister's monumental work was on blood-clot, and on the introduction of catgut and the banishment thereby of secondary hæmorrhage. Futile efforts are made to improve on a system so carefully perfected. During the Great War much of his technique was changed, but with disappointing results. We must not forget that he was the first to perform suprapubic lithotomy. I happened to give the child chloroform. He thus opened a new vista in surgery.



reached the top the hats were politely removed by the servants. There was no court dress, nor swords, nor knee drill, nor kissing of hands. After this the Queen always received the Quakers with kindness and respect, and they were among her most loyal subjects. If a Quaker were presented at Court, the Queen always excused him wearing a sword, or anything he objected to.

The Society of Friends was founded by George Fox between 1640 and 1650, and being broad in their religious principles, interfered with no man's creed ; consequently they never aimed at conversion. Following healthy lives and occupation, they did a great national service in breeding good stock and thereby greatly improved the race. Even though the descendants of the old stock have left the Society, there is always something by which they can be distinguished ; let it be a little touch of breed or refinement or extra learning.

A great deal is said to-day in the depreciation of religion, and religion has itself to blame. The psychology of Quakerism was more rational and tolerant than other religions. It professed truth and eschewed all dogmas, sacraments, and material sanctity. It led to clean and wholesome living, and there it ended. There was no pressure as to beliefs in Trinity or Unity or even as to future life. Each individual could follow his own conscience without criticism or interference. They had to live religion and not parade it.

They did good work among the very poor, attending to education and health, and teaching proper habits. They raised their poor to a spirit of independence and self help.

In their personal conduct there was a tremendous lot of repression, and that, with intermarriage, may have been concerned with their high percentage of insanity. The excellent standard of education attained, the moral behaviour, temperance, combined with mental balance, were responsible for breeding such a choice selection.

Though very few went into professions, the hours after



business were spent in study. The man in business might be an astronomer or naturalist. Lord Lister's father advanced science immeasurably by the discovery and introduction of high-power lenses. But for his researches science would to-day lag far behind. Dalton, who discovered the Atomic Theory, was a Quaker scientist. Both were elected fellows of the Royal Society. Many others attained great distinction not only in the scientific world, but like Thomas Hodgkin, B.A., LL.D., took a high place in literature and art. As a class Quakers were well educated and slightly above the general average of intelligence; thus being in the past a distinct national asset. To-day Quakerism is *passé*, as the Society has lost most of its best families, and taken in the uneducated masses as members. In olden days in commerce they were industrious and comfortably off, and extremely honest; but not so keen and wealthy as to-day. The chase for money entirely alters a man's disposition, motive and ethics, and thus the whole picture of Quakerism is changed. Formerly the substance, to-day \* \* \*



SECTION C

HOW TO DEAL WITH THE  
CRIMINAL

CHAPTERS XI—XV







## Chapter XI

---

### SUMMARY

THE THEORY OF JUSTICE.

An Abuse of Power.

The Malformed Brain of a Murderer.

AN OBSERVATORIUM.

PUNISHMENT.

THE ECCLESIASTICAL COURT.

The Black Cap.

Class Legislation.

### THE THEORY OF JUSTICE.

JUSTICE rests primarily on the emotional plane as an act of readjustment between right and wrong. In experimenting on the decerebrated<sup>1</sup> cat,<sup>2</sup> if the animal be teased, it spits and sets its teeth, assuming a defensive or self-protective attitude. It has been assaulted and is seeking justice; but the emotion would not stay at justice, it would if possible carry it on to revenge. We can realize how an injury which demands justice rapidly proceeds to revenge, and this is well exemplified in uncivilized communities, and even among ourselves in past years when we were less civilized.

Justice is a complex quality; while influenced primarily by the emotion of revenge, it is activated on the intellectual side by the weighing up of wrongdoing and the

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* Chapter XXVII on "Brain Machine."

<sup>2</sup> "Decerebrated" means removal of the cerebrum or higher brain.



administering of restitution or redress, and, if possible, restoration to normal conditions. A surplus follows, called punishment, to check the repetition of the offence. The criminal regards the basic principle of justice as revenge, with a view to repression ; whereas the lawyer regards it as defensive as well as repressive, for the adjustment of the disturbed condition of injured society. We all fear and hate the criminal, and the lawyer is engaged as agent to keep him under, but it cannot end at mere repression.

Fifty or one hundred years ago not justice, but injustice, was administered, and it was then a matter of persecution rather than prosecution. Even a few years ago I met in a prison a bright-eyed youth of seventeen, who was condemned to twenty-seven months for stealing eighteen-pence from his employer. Compare this sentence with five years for appropriating many hundred thousand pounds, and justice looks unequal. The youth was an errand boy with three younger brothers and sisters. His mother was in an advanced state of consumption, and five shillings a week, the boy's wage, did not go very far. She died before he came out of prison and the children were sent to the workhouse. Was there much justice in that case ? Yet that was only one example out of thousands. It does not require much imagination to understand the attitude the poor assume towards the administration of justice, or more correctly law. The mental attitude of the poor boy was very striking. He was a delicate, refined lad, and showed no rebellious spirit, nor yet did he seem to accept the position of a criminal, or lost sinner. It was rather an atmosphere of submission, not to the will of God, but to the brutal forces of the rich, call it society, over the poor.

### *The Malformed Brain of a Murderer.*

The theory of justice requires further consideration in cases of murder. Most murderers whom I have met are as they call themselves, balmy. They have served time







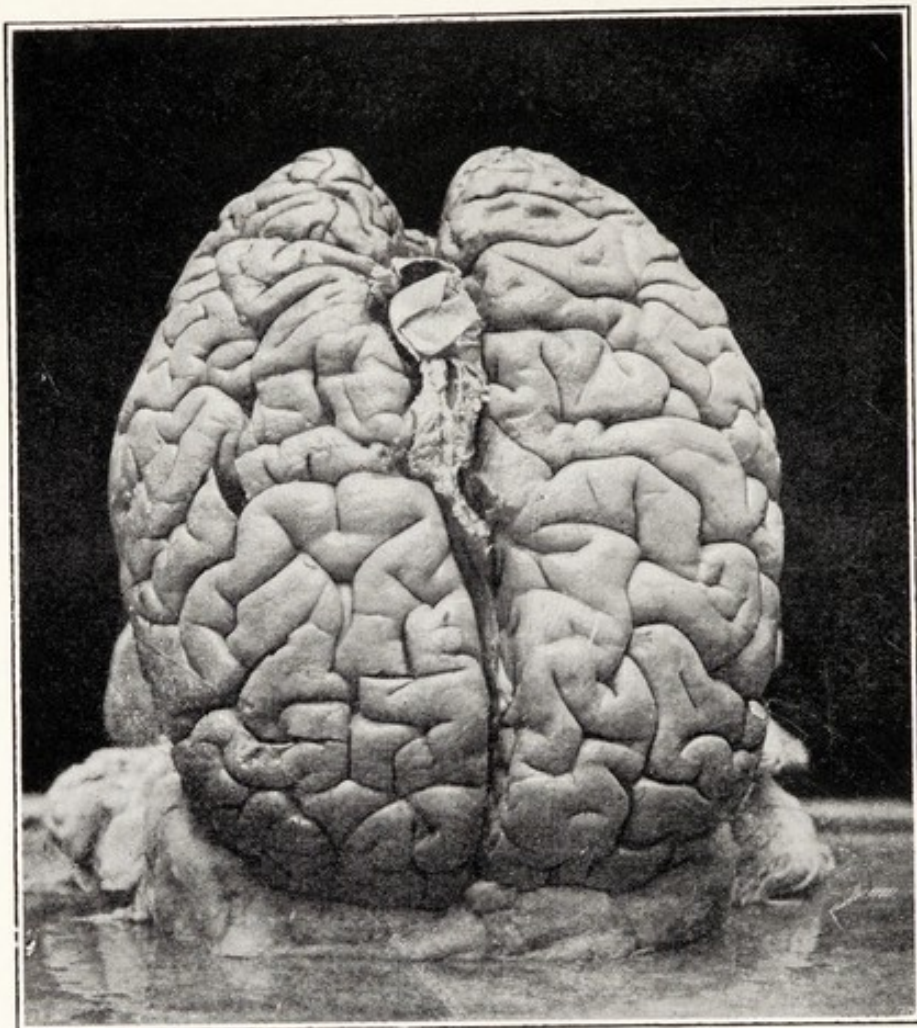


FIG. 35.—A murderer's brain built on the anthropoid style. The occipital poles are shrunken and wide apart instead of meeting. The convolutions are coarse and shallow.



FIG. 36.—The same brain, posterior view, showing the anthropoid character, exposing the cerebellum below because of the shrivelled visual areas.



instead of being hanged. The psychologist can make his own analysis and may trace which particular complex ended in a murder. I have a more precise exposition to make in case of a murderer of low mental grade, "Missus, she never stop nagging"; a chopper was lying on the table and everything was finished quicker than one could write it. "Me, I was not a bad tempered fellow, like. Drink, why yes of course I drank. So did the missus." His parents also drank heavily. After leaving the comfortable warm prison cell with the good hot food, he wandered about Bermondsey and soon died of influenza. I was rewarded for my trouble and journey to get him released by procuring his brain. He was a short, rough-looking man, with many stigmata including crumpled up ears. He had a fairly large head,  $7\frac{1}{2} \times 6$  in., index 80, mongolian type. His skull was not too thick, with a large, very plainly convoluted brain, weight  $49\frac{1}{2}$  oz. There were none of those short wavy turns seen in well-convoluted brains. The striking feature was at the back of the brain; a shrivelling up of the occipital poles, the visual area.<sup>1</sup> This man had not proper psychic vision. He could not analyse correctly what he saw; nor could he associate his ideas. He was a hopelessly degraded and ignorant person.

When one meets cases of this character one realizes that only unthinking individuals, impelled by the herd instinct, cry out in favour of democracy. Why should this degenerate have as much influence in the country and its government as I have? Rather is this man's brain an argument in favour of selection as to qualification for the franchise.

A microscopic analysis showed that this man's grey cortex was only two-thirds the proper depth, showing a great diminution in his thinking powers.<sup>2</sup> Comparing his brain with an average brain, he had only five or six

---

<sup>1</sup> Figs. 35 and 36.

<sup>2</sup> See figs. 31 and 32, Chapter X.



cells where in the average brain there would be twenty cells. Scattered through his brain were round cells or nuclei, which should have developed into normal cells during his infancy and childhood.<sup>1</sup>

Does the theory of justice lend itself to hanging this type of man? It is only by the mercy of the occupant of the throne that justice is obtained. Law is not so fragile as to yield to mercy. Justice demands that such degenerates suffer painless extinction. If that course were adopted one would not feel so anxious about the hanging of innocent people, as occasionally appears to happen. Justice also cries out for the sterilization of all degenerates, for their procreative powers are enormous.

In a former work<sup>2</sup> I have reported some ten or more instances of brain examination in cases of murder. All these brains show abnormalities, and in some cases atavism or reversion to the apes. The brain I have just described was built like that of an ape.

I have alluded on two previous occasions<sup>3</sup> to the endocrine glands and how they affect the development of both body and mind. Recent experimental physiology tends to show that even mild disorders of these closed glands may lead in the direction of crime. As disorders may occur at any age, it follows that even in childhood a life may be wholly recast, and a promising life changed to a criminal.

Clearly it is quite impossible to suppress revenge and rely on pure justice: but justice to citizens does not mean liberty for the criminal and a cancellation of the debt. Justice may mean the lethal chamber when cure is impossible.

Few great crimes are the products of novices. The criminal of 50 has probably been a criminal since the age of 5. Justice can only be arrived at by an assembly

---

<sup>1</sup> See figs. 6, 7, 8 and 9, Chapter V.

<sup>2</sup> "Education, Personality and Crime," pp. 224-225.

<sup>3</sup> Chapter V, p. 66. Chapter X, p. 166.



of experts, sincerely anxious for truth. The present judicial system may lead anywhere, and is the tool of law, good and bad.

Recently I noticed that a boy of 16 was sent to penal servitude for a small theft, as it was thought that the education and kindly supervision of prison would give him his best chance in life. If he had had the luck to have been Dutch or Belgian, he would have been examined by experts in a laboratory, and his future treatment would have been parental, rather than judicial.

### AN OBSERVATORIUM.

The truth is that Justice is on the wrong lines, for we still live in the feudal spirit of the Middle Ages. We are guided by ancient rules and ideas, by incorrect tradition, called precedent. A new era of scientific psychology must be invoked.

Do we think that there is too much pomp at our law courts or too theatrical display at important or interesting trials? Physicians no longer wear hood and gown when attending patients. The day is past when pompous physicians, like the Dutch obstetrician, Leuwenhoek, made his visits preceded by a bell ringer and two men carrying the sedan chair adapted to his special purpose. A trial must leave the theatrical arena with its morbid excitement and be dealt with as a clinical case. Life and liberty are no longer a fair quarry to the intellectual sportsman. Knowledge and science are out for fairplay and justice.

Let us step into dreamland and anticipate twenty years. There is the criminal; you have to probe his secret intentions; you have to inquire into his childhood and family history. The legal attitude of the prosecution must be replaced by psychological inquiry. It may be a cruel murder for a paltry gain of a few pounds, and the physician, putting the accused through mental tests, finds him very deficient. His age may be 20 or even 30, but



his mind may be only 10. The family history is bad. Mother had fits ten years before he was born. One grandfather was in an asylum. Enough! It is not necessary to enlarge on the fact that the two paternal uncles were in prison for burglary, and a distant cousin came to the gallows. The present-day counsel exclaims: "No fits in the mother for ten years. Bah!" and rules it out of evidence and regards the other events as too remote. He does not admit in law the term "genetics"; nor the scientific term "germplasm," which spreads far and wide; nor the common phrase "in the blood" as applied to crime. I am not pleading for pardon, nor for undue mercy, but we must modify vindictive treatment and treat crime as a mental problem, and if advisable substitute painless extinction for the theatrical "rope."

Those who say that our lives are guided by emotion are partly right here, while dealing with this undeveloped, unfinished section of humanity, lacking in brain power and resistance. But they say none of us are responsible for our actions, that the circumstances determine them each time; and here they are wrong, for the weak-minded subject or criminal is suffering from a congenital or inherited brain defect which cancels all sense of responsibility. A long imprisonment is expensive; an execution is unscientific and semi-barbarous. A theatrical display with a black cap is bad taste and has been out of date since Ecclesiastical Courts ceased.<sup>1</sup>

True, we are afraid of the violent criminal, lest he repeat the offence. What about painless extinction? What about religion? Has the seed of the Spirit, that is the Soul, ever germinated? Does the degenerate know right from wrong? Nature has not "finished"<sup>2</sup> his brain development; he is intellectually deficient. This is not the seat of Vengeance, but the seat of Judgment,

---

<sup>1</sup> See p. 185, *re* "Black Cap" which has no meaning to-day, as the Judge has no tonsure to hide.

<sup>2</sup> *Vide* "Unfinished Man," by the Author.



and how difficult it is to hold the scales of Justice evenly !

The next case in dreamland is a young thief and murderer, only 18 years of age. He has no history to relate, for no parents or relatives can be traced. But he has his whole family history distinctly written in his teeth—"the sins of the fathers." The physician reads that ; but is the learned judge qualified to mete out vengeance ? It is indeed a sad case. The boy has been raised in the slums, surrounded by hooligans, thieves and prostitutes. He is hardly responsible, and, from his acts, is commonly, though incorrectly, described as a born criminal and liar, the worst that can be imagined. The education test of Binet places him at 10, but that is not accurate for all cases.<sup>1</sup> It merely shows lack of scholastic opportunity. A more accurate method is to see how far back his memory and experience carry him. If he remember his young life to the age of 3, his brain is an intelligent recording machine.

We shall place this lad in an institution, put him through anti-syphilitic treatment, for his Wassermann reaction is positive ; and call in an expert to test his endocrine functions, his pituitary and adrenals. With the patient care of young, enthusiastic graduates and religious agencies, his Ego or personality will improve, which is better than five years in prison. He will abhor wrong and his past life will fade as an unpleasant dream, for we are equipped mentally with the power of repressing what is disagreeable.

In the Observatorium at Le Fôret in Brussels, the author watched the psychologist, Dr. Vervaeck, deal with cases. Taking one, a boy aged 20, a thief, the psychologist diagnosed him as mentally deficient, because he was born when his mother was too old to bear fruit ; the

---

<sup>1</sup> Education and mental tests are far from being reliable. It could not be otherwise in trying to fix a numerical ratio to a variable and unstable quantity like the Mind.



mother was 43 and the father was 45. In contrast to city life he was placed on a farm, in a prison-école, where his brain could lie fallow.<sup>1</sup>

### PUNISHMENT.

Punishment shows an evolution from revenge, just as law and order developed gradually, in a more or less crude manner. Chiefs and their appointed officials awarded punishment of a revengeful character. Thus the Kaffirs used to kill a robber; the Polynesians would slay an adulterer. The Tibetans more mercifully would fine a robber and, if he could not pay, would fine the relations. Cannibals, in addition, cook and eat criminals. Rulers among primitive races always visited heavy punishment for offences directed against their own power or persons. This is only natural as the outcome of the self-protective instinct, but it is strange how this individualism has predominated amongst civilized people.

In ancient days, and even now among savage races in Africa and America, animals which kill human beings are tried and punished, usually with death. It is rather important to refer to this because the same disposition is frequently observed among children.

Casati<sup>2</sup> narrates the occurrence in Central Africa of a goat killing a dog. The goat was tried, sentenced to death and executed. The superior people in the tribe ate the goat and gave the dog to the conquered race.

In another case a sow killed a child, and with the help of the young pigs ate it. The sow was tried and executed, but the young pigs were let off on account of their youth.

Likewise the Maoris kill an animal that strays over a sacred place.

In our own islands this childish revenge was not

---

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter XVIII for the mental tests at the Observatorium in Brussels.

<sup>2</sup> "Ten Years in Equatoria," p. 176.



unknown, for there is an old Irish law tract which ordained that if a bee caused blindness by its sting the whole hive should pay the fine.

It is, of course, only a low intelligence that can carry revenge to such a point, yet Plato,<sup>1</sup> following Attic custom, suggested that if anyone were killed by an animal it must be tried and slain. It looks as if the spirit of revenge were associated with a lower civilization.

As religions developed, with their belief in gods and spirits, and in the true God, punishment for offences became a religious duty—in fact, an expression of wrath on the part of an offended deity.

This is seen to most advantage in the Old Testament under the Jewish theocracy. A study of Leviticus and Deuteronomy fully bears out this idea. Punishment indeed was vengeance. According to our present ideas punishment was too severe, yet the reckoning up was eugenically sound for the purpose of purging the race of unwholesome families. Quite different is it nowadays and we trace the change to the Roman period, when there was a great distinction made according to the social status of the offender. A man of rank and position might slay a poor man, or appropriate a poor but chaste girl for immoral purposes, without being called to account. The same spirit has travelled into our own law systems and persists this very day, not officially, of course, but it takes form under what is really secret influence.

### THE ECCLESIASTICAL COURT.

In our own land, in early times, there developed a mixture of the theocratic and regal elements. Thus in the period following the Normans until about the Reformation, there were two great powers in the land, the King and the Barons, and the Ecclesiastical

---

<sup>1</sup> "Leges," ix, 873.



authorities, which included the monasteries. The monasteries controlled everything which was for the good of the people. They supervised the leper hospitals, the schools, the almshouses, managing them at a minimum cost, the revenue being drawn from the tithes and Church lands.

The monks lived apart and were the only educated people. They could not possibly be tried in the ordinary courts which were brutal and depraved in their methods. They were therefore tried by their bishops and archbishops, just as nowadays a soldier is tried by his officers.

These were called Ecclesiastical Courts. They did not, however, require to punish with mutilation or death, considering the class of offenders. If a monk were very bad he could be deprived of religious position and would then be an outcast from society altogether. Every one who could possibly claim to be sufficiently connected with the monastery endeavoured to be tried by the Ecclesiastical Court, because he was more likely to obtain a fair trial and less brutal punishment than in the ordinary civil court. Thus, people such as barons, who had given land to monasteries or exerted their patronage, would claim this privilege; also the pupils in the monastery schools and all those who were in minor orders. This was termed claiming the Benefit of Clergy. The fact that a man could read was evidence that he was well educated, which necessitated his connection with a monastery school.

There were also certain offences which were only dealt with by the Ecclesiastical Courts, irrespective of the rank or position of the offender. These were perjury and adultery, or any other sexual offence. Divorce was but little known, being a luxury limited to the baronial class. Sacrilege and a few other special crimes were dealt with by this court. Improvement, religious and moral, was one of the objects of the court.

Occasionally, when a man was found guilty by the Ecclesiastical Court, it was decided that his crime was



such that it should be dealt with by the civil authorities. He was then handed over to them for a fresh trial, and if no civil authority could be procured, the ecclesiastical judge, who was usually a bishop or an abbot, took upon himself the civil functions. To show that he had ceased to act in his ecclesiastical capacity, the abbot covered his tonsure with a black cap while pronouncing the civil sentence. Such cases were usually, but not necessarily, those requiring the death penalty or mutilation. The black cap is now the only relic of the ecclesiastical administration of crime. It is not quite clear why this custom of putting on the black cap should have survived in the courts, after it has lost all meaning.

### CLASS LEGISLATION.

One of the earliest treatises of English law was written by Glanvill in the reign of Henry II, in 1187. There were then three different courts: the Communal; the Curia Regis; and the system of private jurisdiction. The last was the origin of feudalism, in which the lord was responsible for his dependents. It was a healthy system, but like most human systems degenerated into what we now term "class legislation." With the great increase of population, rapid means of transit, education, public opinion and the *tout ensemble* of civilization, there is now no place for class legislation. Nevertheless, traces of class legislation occasionally appear in a small degree, for whatever concerns the property and the pleasures of the rich is carefully guarded. Not so many years ago a poor peasant might be transported for destroying the pheasant which ate his corn, or the hare that nibbled his crops; minor offences, such as sheep stealing, were likewise visited by transportation and treated just as severely as the more serious offences of forgery or coining. Even to this day the law of trespass is carried to an unreasonable extent.

Many criminals have thus been fashioned by a thought-



less, pleasure-seeking and powerful ruling class. Some of these criminals whom we transported were the backbone of our land, and have since built up a sturdy nation in the Southern Hemisphere. Can the lawyer properly understand the why and wherefore of the criminal groups, unless he becomes acquainted with the surroundings in which they have been fostered and developed? It will then be quite apparent that they are not of their own making. Criminals have partly evolved out of the system of class legislation, class distinction, and the holding down, not to say oppression, of the poor, weak and helpless. The poor are kept poor, and there is no regular machinery or sustenance to raise the helpless, or support the weak. Thus it follows that many resort to crime as a necessity for bare existence.



## Chapter XII

---

### SUMMARY

THE PRE-VICTORIAN PERIOD.

The Maladministration of the Law.

The cases of Kangaroo and others.

SIR MONTAGUE CRACKANTHORPE'S VIEWS ON SENTENCES.

The Opinions of Jabez Balfour and others.

*Truth.*

THE OLD LAG ON THE JUDGE.

### THE PRE-VICTORIAN PERIOD.

THE inequality of sentences has agitated the public mind for years, though in the very barbaric period no one troubled what sentence was given. "Justice" was rather a matter of morbid interest and depraved sport, but in the semi-barbaric period which is almost past the public have thought seriously on these matters. About a century ago (1818), nearly all crimes were punishable by hanging. When the list of capital offences stood at about 300, the Solicitor General<sup>1</sup> was asked if he could not add to the list. He replied that it was impossible to do so.

Sir Samuel Romilly, remembered as an eloquent lawyer, worked continually for criminal reform, and laboured hard to reduce the capital sentences. He sat for Parliament from 1808 to 1818, and he succeeded in getting the death penalty repealed for picking pockets, that is "stealing privately from the person of another."

---

<sup>1</sup> Or the equivalent official.



He also carried an Act through the Commons that a person could not be hanged for stealing anything of less value than five shillings, but the Lords threw it out.<sup>1</sup>

When Queen Victoria came to the throne there were only about eight capital offences, if so many, and through her noble influence the death penalty was limited to murder. Forgery, coining and theft and similar crimes were eliminated from the list.

### *The Maladministration of Law.*

Logically one might have inferred that the killing off of all criminals would produce a race of puritans in the succeeding generations. Experience shows that the opposite effect is produced. The people as a whole become more brutal, antagonistic and antisocial, while those in power become more insensitive to their own cruelty and severity.

The Jews were rather free with their death penalties, the method used, stoning to death, being more frightful, if possible, than our method.

To-day the pendulum has swung a little too far in the opposite direction. Certain crimes of violence, and certain incurable dangerous sexual evildoers, would be better disposed of permanently.

There can be no question that in administration of law, even to-day, there are many miscarriages of justice. This means that many normal and useful citizens are destroyed as far as this world's career is concerned. But what must it have been even since the Victorian period began? How many men I have known who, if their fall had been to-day, would have been restored to society, and they would have followed the lines of correct living. I shall select four quite ordinary cases of men who would have made good if they had been treated humanely at the outset.

---

<sup>1</sup> In the *Evening Standard* of July 18, 1827, several hangings or executions are recorded for trivial offences, of which the most trivial was the theft of sixpence.



*The Cases of Kangaroo and others.*

Thinking backwards, I picture to myself a handsome, tall, country lad, endowed with good intelligence, who alas ! has had to spend over forty years in prison. Left an orphan at eight years of age, he was handed to the care of a rough-and-ready uncle. Having a hard time and being of an active, energetic turn, he slipped into the avenues of crime and became a specialist in house-breaking ; in fact, at one time a pupil of Charlie Peace. As he sat in an armchair in my study I wondered how it was possible that he could really have been the terror of the neighbourhood in which he was "working," and that the police were armed when expecting to catch him. Had he been differently placed he would have been a second Joe Chamberlain. He had only one enemy—his country ; yet in the war, writing from prison, he was all for king and country. I marvelled that he should be loyal to the country that had tortured him physically, as for many a weary month he had been heavily chained to the wall or the stone floor of his cell.

One of my latest acquaintances was Kangaroo, such was his *nom de plume* in the profession. My old friend Barratt, the king of silver thieves who had "done" thirty solid years, brought him to see me one fine morning, and I photographed them together in my garden. It was some six years ago, and Kangaroo was 84 years of age, two years older than Barratt. Christened the day Queen Victoria was crowned, he was by no means a startling personality, quite an ordinary man, standing about five feet four inches. As a boy of 15 years of age, he got four years for stealing a watch. He spied the watch through an open window on the mantelpiece, and quickly made himself the possessor. When he came out he joined various criminal gangs, living in Golden Lane, which was then a thieves' quarter. Altogether he was the guest of the country for fifty years. While still in his teens he was transported to Australia, working in a chain gang, and so liked the country that he



returned there for two years, and had better have stayed where he had plenty of room. Free open space is a preventive of crime. It is the squeeze of town life that predisposes to mischief. In the early 'sixties he was again transported. The treatment of the convicts was very brutal, being flogged without mercy for the slightest offence, but he personally had nothing to complain of, except the chains, which were uncomfortable to live in day and night.

Then there was the late Williams the Second, who spent forty years in prison. He was quite a swell in my frock coat and silk hat. He used to come up periodically to go through my wardrobe. I ultimately got him a situation as caretaker in one of the L.C.C. schools. He was by no means a soft-hearted individual and had rather a contempt for one "old lag" who was doing my garden, and also for Barratt, who had called to have his tea. In fact etiquette demanded that the servant should give Williams his tea in the pantry, surrounded by the silver, which, of course, he would not have touched. He got into bad company as a boy, a racing gang, and was arrested with others and sent to prison. As he was innocent, this soured him and he took to burglary and was a very violent character.<sup>1</sup>

A very intelligent man, who attended to our garden, spent thirty years in prison. As a country lad in Shropshire, he was a beekeeper and bought four hives for £1, as it were in the open market. He was with a party repairing telegraph wires and a man drove up with four hives for sale. These had been stolen and the boy was charged with the theft, but this being disproved by witnesses, he was charged with receiving and was sentenced to ten years penal servitude. From a fine, high-principled lad of 18 years of age, he became an enemy to society, and no wonder. The vicar and Lord A. did all they could to save him when he came out, but he

---

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter I.



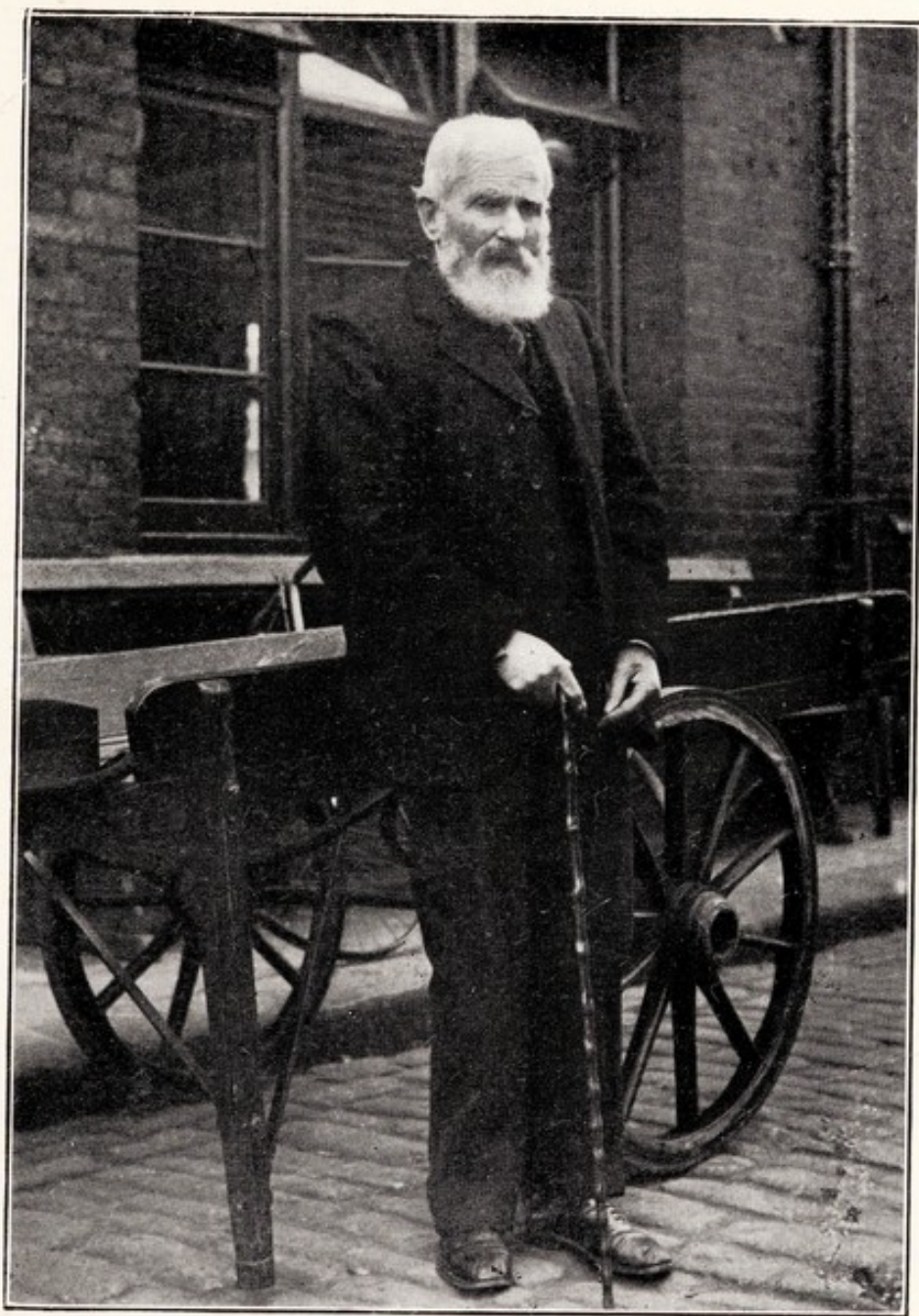


FIG. 37.—This poor old man, aged 90, was driven by the potato famine in Ireland to criminal practices, coining. He has spent forty years in prison and is still under police supervision till he is 94, but the police leave him alone knowing he is safe in the hands of the Salvation Army. He is a Catholic but regularly escorted by a S. A. Officer to services.







was so embittered with the gross injustice he had suffered, that he sallied forth into the ranks of crime as a common thief. Then followed three more sentences of five, ten, and five years. In his fourth accusation, after he had been out of prison some years he was charged with stealing two pairs of braces, of the value of 3s., from the pavement outside a shop door. His counsel, since deceased, charged him £8, which was all he had saved, and to economize the valuable time of the court, doubtless in good faith, pleaded "guilty," although he had been told where the accused had been all day. Five years! No one worried, the man would get food and shelter. As it happened he spent a good deal of time in hospital, very kindly tended by the prison doctor, with whom he was a favourite. The man's word may be regarded as worthless by many, but the facts of his innocence have been carefully substantiated.

Are there not thousands of similar cases? It also shows that something is wanting in our legal system to prevent the tramping up and opportunity of making false charges. Many a dozen ex-convicts have given me sad histories on similar lines. This poor man was happy in the care of the Salvation Army till the end of his days.

#### SIR MONTAGUE CRACKANTHORPE'S VIEWS ON SENTENCES.

The late Sir Montague Crackanthorpe, a wonderful man, eugenist and lawyer, furnished several similar instances bearing on the inequalities for similar sentences<sup>1</sup>:

A was sent to penal servitude on his first offence, which was embezzlement. Sixteen years after he received seven years' imprisonment for stealing some candles.

B had received two minor sentences. He got seven years' penal servitude and seven years' police supervision for stealing money. Later he received the same heavy

---

<sup>1</sup> *Nineteenth Century*, January, 1900.



sentence for stealing three shillings. To show how illogical and stupid law is, compare these events with the nominal sentences of five years given to our specialists in fraud.

C had been four times in gaol for minor offences. He later stole a garden fork and was sentenced to ten years imprisonment and five years police supervision.

Jabez Balfour, who did not take kindly to prison, gives several cases. Of two men who killed their wives, one got a life sentence and the other only two years. In the latter case the wife followed a bad husband to a gambling club to induce him to come home. The judge considered she deserved her fate, for he described her act as showing the abominable nature of her provocation. He therefore gave him the minimum sentence. This judge was still the advocate and played his part as prosecuting counsel, which comes from the system of raising advocates or barristers to judgeships. The two offices demand different education and mentality. The advocate is a fighter, and will, in some cases, sacrifice truth and righteousness to gain his cause. The judge is supposed to be a well-balanced man who can look fairly on both sides.<sup>1</sup>

Lord William Neville gives a case where the "Church complex"<sup>2</sup> affected the sentence. Two men were up for bigamy, of whom one remarried at a registry office, and was practically acquitted. He had only sinned against the laws of man. The other was remarried in a church, and he got five years. The judge, who died recently, declared himself a strict Churchman, and considered he had to deal with a breach of the laws of God as well as of man. Poor Churchman. What a limited outlook!

Thomas Holmes, that lovable man, who lived in a poor neighbourhood among his foster children, never locked his door at night, and left food on the table for convicts

---

<sup>1</sup> See the Belgian system in regard to judgeships, Chapter XVIII.

<sup>2</sup> "Penal Servitude," by Neville.



and others during the night, records a case in 1906 of a young carpenter who was charged with burglary. He stole a golden locket and ten spoons and some farthings. He was guilty, but it was his first offence. The judge gave him fourteen years. Holmes commented on it thus: "Fourteen years for a man of 22, for a first offender! It requires an effort to make oneself believe it, but it is a fact."

*"Truth."*

English justice still contains the feudal spirit, the sporting instinct of crushing the helpless. Law and justice hold the reins so they are independent of all criticism. Here are some more extracts from *Truth*. *Truth*, as many know, was the property of Labouchere, a very wealthy man, who after exposing dishonest financial transactions was quite able to stand up against libel actions, which are usually the final resort of swindlers after exposure.

Here are some of Labouchere's *collectanea*. A man, for breaking his wife's leg in two places, was only fined ten shillings. That justice of the peace regarded a wife as a chattel, which is legally correct. At the same date a man was sentenced to seven years' penal servitude for stealing a shilling. Perhaps the former culprit was a novice and got off lightly, and the latter an old hand deserving seven years for all his previous offences, which may be law but is not justice. The chronic offender must be dealt with on more intelligent lines, such as placing him on probation or in a colony. All this means change, and as a people we are too conservative and apathetic to be easily reconciled to a change, and to dislocate a system of such long standing.

In a recent paper there was a report of a man who was sentenced to twelve months for receiving. No one can object; but listen to his pathetic history. At the age of 11 he was sent to a reformatory for four years for stealing a shilling. When he came out he was homeless, as both



parents had died in the interval. Naturally he was soon in trouble and was sent to Borstal, which in this case failed to cure him. He joined up in 1914, and fought to save the country, which would not trouble to help or save him. Can we wonder at anarchy, socialism, or communism? To continue: A man was fined forty shillings for indecently assaulting a child of 6; while another man got three weeks in gaol for sleeping under a boat. The law as to "sleeping out" is very curious. If a man has no money on him he goes to prison; but if he is possessed of fourpence he cannot be arrested. How grotesque! It is the law that is at fault, old and rusty, adapted to conditions three or four centuries ago, and the administrators can only act as the law directs.

### THE OLD LAG.

The "old lag" is a psychologist, not of the Neo-school, but well experienced. Listen to what he says:—

"The judge ain't on very good terms with his missus this mornin'. It's all a bit of luck this weighing off business. If that judge 'ad 'av 'appened to've been married yesterday instead of fallin' out wi' 'is old Dutch this mornin', that chap as 'as just come down would a only got six months instead o' three years." <sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> "A Holiday in Gaol," by Frederick Martin.



## Chapter XIII

---

### SUMMARY

FALSE SENTIMENT.

BERRY, THE HANGMAN.

THE UNCERTAINTY.

JUSTIFIABLE (?) HOMICIDE.

REMOTENESS OF DAMAGE AS A DEFENCE IN A CASE OF  
MURDER.

INFANTICIDE AND THE DEATH SENTENCE.

THE INFLICTION OF THE DEATH SENTENCE.

### FALSE SENTIMENT.

THERE is a great deal of false sentiment about capital punishment, expressed by people who do not think clearly, and who never seem to have sympathy with the victim. In olden days the process was carried out with extreme brutality and for about 300 serious and even petty offences. But our good Queen Victoria stopped hanging as a punishment for stealing or forgery, when a Quaker was hanged for misappropriating £10. After that painful incident hanging was reserved as the punishment for murder.

William Tallack, a level-headed Quaker, who visited prisons all over the world, took a broad view of the situation.<sup>1</sup> He said that the weak point of capital punishment as a deterrent is its uncertainty, for there are so many sporting chances of escape, such as failure to be

---

<sup>1</sup> "Penological and Preventive Principles" (Wertheimer, Lea and Co., 1896).



caught, disagreement of the jury, not to mention the effect of plenty of influence in those days.

A great deal of the opposition to the death penalty would disappear if the rope were replaced by the lethal chamber, which is painless and not so repulsively theatrical.

Let us look at the other side of the picture. Tallack quoted a coroner who writes<sup>1</sup>: "When I think of the many corpses of the victims of violence, which I have had to look upon . . . poor little children maimed; to say nothing of their violation and ruin of purity; when I think of these terrible outrages, I feel indignation, whenever the law, or morbid public indifference, cruelly relaxes the rigour and certainty of just punishment against barbarous men, who have wrought such awful misery upon lives and homes."

The public never seem to realize the amount of inconvenience and suffering a murder may cause, apart from the crime itself. If the victim be single there may not be much trouble, but if a breadwinner it may be a catastrophe from every point of view. Then consider the murderer; his execution or long imprisonment must seriously disarrange affairs at home. It may mean general poverty, and I have heard of cases where the wife and children have been literally thrown on the street, without anyone to help. Poor souls, they merit the greatest sympathy, probably being in no way responsible for their father's crime.

Mr. Cecil Chapman, a man of good breed and education, gives us a very level-headed opinion on this vexed problem. He writes<sup>2</sup>: "I am constantly asked whether I am in favour of abolishing capital punishment. My answer is that I am in favour of retaining it when a murder is deliberate, sordid and cruel, such as it was in this case (Chapman, the wife poisoner, who was hanged); but I

---

<sup>1</sup> Loc. cit., p. 184.

<sup>2</sup> "The Poor Man's Court of Justice," p. 184.



think that juries should be allowed to distinguish between murders of this character and those of passionate impulse or other motives, which are not sordidly selfish. I would allow them to find a verdict of guilty in three degrees as deserving of : (1) capital punishment ; (2) penal servitude for life or a long time ; (3) some lesser punishment."

To show the eccentricity of law and juries, he then narrates the case of a husband, who, while in drink forced some methylated spirit down his wife's throat. She fled, half clad, to a neighbour's house next door. Later in hospital she developed pneumonia and died. The husband was charged with manslaughter, but the jury took the view that she caught the pneumonia from the short exposure to cold, ignorant that pneumonia may be caused by irritants. "The judge discharged him with some words of sympathy for the loss he had sustained." The idea of his causing grievous bodily harm never entered their minds !

M. Gabriel Zarde, a French criminologist, wrote at the close of his brochure "*Philosophie pénale*"<sup>1</sup> : "After all, in penal measures, we have but the choice between these two equally efficacious modes of repression : to put to death without causing suffering, or to cause suffering without putting to death." He considered that if the death penalty were more humane it might reasonably be extended, and the repugnance to the present barbarous methods would disappear.

Another aspect presents itself, which is that the violent dangerous criminal is not of his own making. He is the hopeless representative of some tainted forebear. In many cases we ought to hang the father as well, or instead of, the murderer, but we can never reach that stage of perfection. It is extraordinary how far a taint or spot may be traced back. Homicidal mania may exist as an instinct, with just sufficient intelligence and control to carry on until the opportunity or temptation occurs. Then the



tragedy follows, but the criminal has been a murderer in intention since the day he was born.

### BERRY THE HANGMAN.

I once had a call from James Berry and a long chat with this interesting hangman. What troubled Berry most was that where he lived in Bradford he was not treated "as a gentleman should be." His "profession" went against him. As a young man he was in the police service, and he told me that his first experience with death was when one night he helped to carry a dead judge out of a brothel. It was a practical demonstration of how we live mentally in compartments. The judge was living in a very unlucky compartment that evening when he made this *faux pas*. The neo-psychologist would say he must not be blamed, being governed by his emotions and devoid of free will. It would be described as an instance of Determinism. At all events, poor man, like the majority of us, he did not live up to his reputation.

Berry finally gave up his profession because he had hanged two innocent people. His description of these scenes was not only pathetic but revolting. One of the victims was Mary Leffley of Lincolnshire, who was accused of poisoning her husband with arsenic; being a very devoted wife, it was a double tragedy. Berry told me that she would not go to the scaffold or get out of bed, for she persisted in her innocence. The wardresses, who believed in her innocence, were hysterical, so he and the governor and the matron managed to dress her as best they could, stifling her screams and carrying her to the rope. Berry thought she was guilty and had no pity at the time, but he regretted it bitterly later.

This case demonstrated how easy it can be to get a conviction on insufficient evidence, if the voice of the people is against the accused. When the real murderer confessed on his deathbed, twelve years later, it was too late to mend matters. The details of the case were as



follows: Mary's husband, John, a carrier, had a quarrel with a farmer in a public house and the latter, being held up to ridicule, was determined to be revenged. Fantasy, that mental plague, added much to the wounded feelings of the farmer. Bent on revenge, he watched his opportunity when Mary had gone to market with the eggs, and entered the lonely cottage with arsenic powder, intending to put it in the teapot. Seeing a milk pudding cooking, he slipped the white powder into the saucepan. John ate his pudding, and was dead when Mary got home in the evening. No evidence was produced as to Mary ever having any arsenic, but the jury were led by the *vox populi* and brought her in guilty. After twelve years the murderer was dying of cancer, and confessed to the police inspector. The purchase of the arsenic was proven by the chemist's book, the murderer having said it was required to kill rats in his storeroom.

This case may well be used as an argument against capital punishment. The poor woman would have had her character cleared at the end of twelve years, but it would have been a long time to wait, even if prison were comfortable.

Berry was a stout man, looking like a farmer with a ruddy, pleasant face, and he seemed of a kindly nature. He always shook hands with his clients, asked for their good will and promised to make things easy for them. When he gave up, he started lecturing on temperance, for he put down all murders primarily to alcohol; he had not mastered heredity.

The other tragic incident, which Berry told me about, was that of a farm boy, 18 years of age, who was adjudged guilty of shooting a policeman in a country district in Somersetshire. It was Berry's melancholy duty to hang him, and he said that not only did the boy protest his innocence, but kissed him before leaving the cell, perhaps attracted by the hangman's pity. Berry was well accustomed to statements of innocence on such occasions, but he felt it rather acutely, as he inwardly favoured this



blue-eyed child. Some time afterwards it was Berry's duty to hang two burglars guilty of murder at the historic Netherby Hall burglary. Before going to the scaffold, both of these men confessed their guilt in murdering the policeman in Somersetshire ; and either one or both attended the boy's trial and heard the sentence of death passed on his innocent head. It is very difficult to write about these horrible cases, as one hovers between revenge and psycho-pathology, but would it not be wrong to ignore them ?

### THE UNCERTAINTY.

Unquestionably a number of innocent persons are wrongly executed or imprisoned. This is sometimes due to our legal methods. Perhaps it is the earnest desire of the prosecuting counsel to get a conviction at all costs, true or false, but it is partly due to our jury system. The lawyers say if a prisoner is obviously innocent he should be tried before a judge without a jury, but if the accused is guilty and there is a sporting chance of an acquittal, let the trial be by jury. On account of the severity of the death penalty, there is often a difficulty in getting sufficient evidence to justify a verdict of guilt. In this way many murderers escape, to the discouragement of the police on whom we depend so much. Tallack suggests that there should be an alternative sentence of imprisonment, which would involve a fundamental change in legal form.

Another great objection is the hanging of innocent persons. A number are reported. In 1869<sup>1</sup> the Home Secretary said that in half a year out of all capital sentences five were put aside by him. One "beyond all question was innocent," and one insane.

Many have expressed doubt as to the guilt of Seddon, who was accused of poisoning a Miss Barrow in the year 1912, and was executed for the crime.

---

<sup>1</sup> Loc. cit., p. 246.



Describing the bad luck of an innocent woman in being accused of murder, Charles Kingston writes<sup>1</sup>:—"No one knows that she has been through the fiery ordeal of a trial for murder, and that she has known what it is to sit in the dock at the Old Bailey and listen to one of the cleverest lawyers in the world trying his hardest to tie the rope round her neck." This is, of course, not justice but law, with the danger of a wrong conviction.

The intimidation and weakness of juries merits public consideration. The juryman has the unpleasant prospect of being locked up all night or for days. Charles Kingston mentions a case where a jury could not agree and were sent back under threat to starve them into unanimity. They brought in a verdict of guilty, and the death sentence was passed, but the accused was innocent. This was the "Ireland's Eye Tragedy," thirty to forty years ago. The accused, an artist named Kirwin, went with his wife to this island, close to Dublin, to paint. His wife went to bathe and was drowned. Unfortunately for Kirwin he had a family by another woman, which fact was considered to supply a motive, besides alienating public sympathy. From this point of view society would not have lost if he had been hanged, as he was decidedly a "wrong 'un," yet that is neither justice nor even law. Dr. Taylor, the expert medico-jurist, after examining the body, declared that the lady died a natural death, that is, suffocation from drowning. Kirwin, in the meantime, had been reprieved and sent to penal servitude for life. Expecting to be discharged, as is customary, in fifteen to twenty years, he promised his paramour to marry her, but this event did not come off until he had served twenty-seven years. There was much curiosity as to why he was detained so long, as penal servitude for life in this country means twenty years, with five years off for good conduct. He died at the ripe old age of 80.

The author once saw the "Brighton poisoner,"

---

<sup>1</sup> "A Gallery of Rogues," p. 112.



Christiana Edmunds, at Broadmoor. He was instructed to look smart and affable and give a polite bow as he passed her bed. The woman was sitting up in bed in very gaudy attire, her hair beautifully arranged, giving directions in a haughty manner to the two wardresses or nurses beside her. She was undoubtedly insane, suffering from delusions of grandeur, and was humoured, partly out of kindness and partly to avoid scenes. This poor woman as a girl fell in love with her doctor and, hoping to marry him, took some poisoned chocolates to his wife, who blocked the way. The arsenic or strychnine made the lady very ill. In order to divert suspicion the girl sent for a box of chocolates, put some strychnine in one and returned it by the errand boy, saying they were not what she wanted. Before many days this was eaten by a child of 4, who died in twenty minutes. A morbid sexual complex with delusions, and general instability, was the cause of the crime. Is that an excuse for keeping her alive, or is it an argument for sending her painlessly out of existence? How much more profitable to spend the money necessary for her keep on some poor widow's family?

### JUSTIFIABLE (?) HOMICIDE.

It occasionally happens that a jury takes a common-sense view in a murder trial, making a flight from law into the realms of justice and gives a verdict of acquittal. The "man in the street," who is usually sound in his opinion, considers it a good thing, just and true, in certain cases, for a bad husband or father to be killed by those he has seriously injured. No doubt law in its desire for justice will take a wider view of murder in the future.

Many years ago in the 'eighties, an interesting case of this kind occurred. In the north of England, near Crewe, a man who was a very bad father and husband was murdered by his two sons. The mother and sons



suffered for years and the boys determined to end it, more on account of their mother than themselves. One night when the three were out in the dogcart, the two lads killed their father. They made no effort to hide it; it was pure, and many would say, justifiable revenge. Their defence was the sufferings they all went through. Both were sentenced to death. The younger boy was reprieved on account of his age, 16. In spite of enormous petitions to the Queen, who was at Nice, the Home Secretary would not let off the boy of 18. There was intense excitement all over the country. The day before the execution, which was Sunday, prayers seemed to ascend from every church and chapel.

The murder was surely a proper procedure from the moral standpoint, and the law ought to allow of a verdict of justifiable homicide in a case where the murdered man is proved to have been thoroughly bad, and whose misdeeds are beyond the reach of our laws.

#### REMOTENESS OF DAMAGE AS A DEFENCE IN A CASE OF MURDER.

Seduction, followed by pregnancy and the misery that ensues both to mother and offspring, must appeal to the sympathy of fair-minded people. We must remember that the seducer cannot be punished, for it is not a crime but merely a civil offence. Here is a case in which a curious defence was made at an appeal. A young man, aged 21, appealed against his death sentence for murder. His defence was that his final blow broke the plate of artificial teeth, and a fragment entered his victim's wind pipe and choked her. To a person ignorant of law, like myself, this defence seems dangerous. "Remoteness of damage" counts in civil law, but this seemed an attempt to introduce it into criminal law. If such a defence obtained, half the convictions would be quashed, remembering that it is Law, not Justice, that decides a case. If an assailant under similar circumstances made



an attack, he should make his bow before the final punch, and ask his victim to remove any false teeth, as we do before giving an anæsthetic. As the judge summed up very fairly, and it is a novel defence, I quote the account from *The Times*, June 29, 1926.

"The Court refused the application for leave to appeal against conviction of Wilfred Henry Gould, who had been convicted at Wells Assizes of the murder at Somerset on March 12, of an unmarried woman named Sarah Louisa Emily R., and had been sentenced to death.

"Mr. F. E. Weatherly, K.C., and Mr. C. Williams appeared for the applicant; and Mr. Rayner Goddard, K.C., and Mr. Garland for the Crown.

"Mr. Weatherly said that the case for the prosecution was that Gould and the woman met in a lonely place to discuss the question of the paternity of the woman's unborn child; that, after some verbal dispute, Gould attacked her with a knife, which was broken in the affray; that she then went in the direction of her home; that Gould followed her and knocked her down at a spot some 56 yards away, and gagged her with a fur necklet; and that her death was due, not only to the blows with the knife, but also to a blow in the face and the gagging, as a result of which the woman's false teeth broke and part of the upper denture became stuck in her throat. The case for the defence was that the acts of violence which admittedly took place were begun by the woman. Gould said that he took out the knife merely to frighten her, and that her wounds were caused because she held his hands while he had the knife. After that first encounter, he said, R. followed him, put her arms round his neck, and seized him by the shoulders. In the struggle he struck her in the face and she fell; he gagged her to stop her screaming.

"It was very material that some direction should be given by the judge to the jury in the summing-up on the fact that the medical evidence was that the knife wounds received by the woman were consistent with Gould's story of the first encounter. Moreover, Gould denied that



he knew the woman had false teeth, and the jury should have been told that if he could not have known that his striking her in the face might have an effect other than that of a blow received by a person who had no false teeth, he could not be guilty of murder. Neither of these points, however, were mentioned in the summing-up.

"Counsel for the Crown were not called on to argue.

*"Judgment."*

"Mr. Justice Sankey, in giving the judgment of the Court, said that Gould was stated to be 21 years of age. He had been 'keeping company' with a young woman who lived in a village some miles away when, in March, Miss R. told his father that he (the applicant) was the father of her child which was about to be born. When Gould's father taxed him with it, he replied that he had nothing to do with it.

"It had been contended that the Judge at the trial had omitted to deal in his summing-up with certain matters which supported the defence that there were circumstances—provocation and, in some degree, self-defence—which would justify the jury in reducing the crime from murder to manslaughter. The summing-up, however, was extraordinarily fair, and it put the law quite clearly and correctly before the jury. It was not intended to be examined microscopically as if it were a disentailed deed."

## INFANTICIDE AND THE DEATH SENTENCE.

In the theatrical display of justice it does seem unpardonable to pass the death sentence on a young mother who has not completed the physiological and mental changes consequent on child-bearing. To begin with, law gives the girl no proper protection; allows her to be treated as a chattel and kicked into the gutter. Having little chance of redress against the father, and her evidence



not believed, she kills her unwanted infant in a frenzy, without any real appreciation of what she is doing. At the same time the man goes scot free. It is surely a good thing that we have women in Parliament. The law relents to-day, and if the sentence be passed, it is merely a formal sentence ; but the shock to the delicate mother is just as great. Our country, which considers itself ultra-religious, is the worst offender in the world on the problem of illegitimacy. Most countries, especially those of the Roman Catholic faith, take care of both mother and child, working on the principle that *humanum est errare*. We are afflicted with a false sanctity, in fact, an hypocrisy ; admitting that illegitimacy is a disgrace, why should the Church damn the offspring ? In reality, very often the illegitimates are the pick of the basket. To take one example : how many to-day understand the sign of the grasshopper above the Royal Exchange ? The explanation is that it was the crest adopted by Sir Thomas Gresham, who, as a babe, was discovered, wrapped in a parcel in a hedge, through the movements of a grasshopper. Look at all he did for charity and education ! He improved trade immensely by founding the Royal Exchange. His strenuous life ended at the age of 60, in the year 1579. Why cannot we take a lesson from Spain, which would get rid of the necessity of infanticide ? At the workhouse in Granada I saw a revolving basket to drop unwanted babies in. A nun inside receives the child and no questions are asked.

The law of infanticide and the problem of puerperal insanity are still in flux and too lengthy to be discussed here. The law demands precision and even dates, which are impossible in a pathological inquiry. If law persists in claiming the unfortunate victim, a medical expert should sit beside the judge. The more eugenic plan would be to constitute a court of experienced physicians, for it is impossible to fix a time at which any mother will have recovered from the effects of pregnancy.



## THE INFLICTION OF THE DEATH SENTENCE.

Sir Joseph William Pease,<sup>1</sup> Bart., M.P., of Quaker origin, son of Joseph Pease of Darlington, the father of railways, speaking in Parliament in 1881, gave interesting statistics of the number of death sentences carried out:—

In France	out of	198	death sentences only	93	were carried out.
„ Spain	„ „	291	„ „	126	„ „ „
„ Sweden	„ „	32	„ „	3	„ „ „
„ Norway	„ „	5	„ „	1	„ „ „
„ Denmark	there were	94	„ „	but during many years only 1 was executed.	
„ Bavaria	out of	249	trials only	4	executions resulted.
„ Austria	„ „	806	sentences in ten years	only 16	were executed.

In our country between 1881-92, there were 2,105 verdicts of “wilful murder” by coroners’ juries. Of these only 775 were tried for murder, resulting in 322 convictions and 181 executions. Out of 44 women, in the same period, convicted of murder, only 7 were executed.

To show how luck favours the murderer, in 1905 we had 137 murders in England and Wales. Out of these there were only thirty-two convictions for murder and seventeen executions. That means that the murderer had more than three to one chances of escaping conviction, and seven to one of escaping hanging. It looks as if we should be more anxious about avenging the victims and running the murderers to earth.

In the twenty years from 1886 to 1905 we had 3,000 murders, for these only 1,309 persons were caught and tried. Again there was a reduction to only 551 convictions and death sentences; 487 men and 64 women. A still further fall occurred to only 323 executions, or about one in ten of the murders. The largest number of these convicted murderers were between the ages of 30 and 40; 278 of the murderers committed suicide in the years 1893 to 1905, that is during thirteen years, which is quite a

---

<sup>1</sup> Now Lord Gainford.



considerable ratio and must be added to the 205 executions in those years.

During the years 1901-22 inclusive, in our country 1,477 persons were tried for murder. Of these :—

585 were convicted.

375 were acquitted.

134 were found insane on arraignment.

351 were found guilty but insane ; and

32 were certified insane before trial.

In America, in one year, 1894, there were 9,800 murders. Of these there were only 132 legal executions, for, in America, the verdict is said frequently to be a question of dollars. There were 190 lynchings. This means that twenty-nine out of every thirty American murderers escape. We must remember that there are thirty-seven different nations in America, necessarily including much of the scum of the world, which may account for preponderance of crime.

It has been demonstrated that where the death penalty has disappeared and imprisonment for life has taken its place, crime has not increased, while the convictions have increased. Naturally a jury is more ready to convict, knowing that, if fresh favourable facts appear, the prisoner will have the benefit.



## Chapter XIV

---

### SUMMARY

THE OBJECT OF PRISON.

A PLEA FOR HUMANITY.

PRISONS IN ENGLAND.

JUVENILE OFFENDERS.

Reformatories.

BORSTAL.

The Borstal Association.

A REMARKABLE PRISON IN IRELAND.

### THE OBJECT OF PRISON.

THE Prison Commissioners announced<sup>1</sup> their objects as :—

Retribution,  
Deterrence, and  
Reformation.

Observing this order, common sense and experience would suggest that reformation should be the first and main object as soon as a man enters prison. It is so in other countries, and this year I was struck with the system in Holland. The warders take charge of the prisoner's skin and clothes. The doctor takes over his physical and mental well-being. A religious agency of the prisoner's own choice at once begins on his soul.

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* Brockway's book on "English Prisons of To-day." 1922. To-day considerable effort is made on all sides towards reformation.



What the authorities say is that as soon as a man enters prison they start to teach him self-control, self-respect and a thirst for right living.

Necessarily the first idea as regards the salvation of the criminal must be to avoid first convictions. Sir Robert Wallace, K.C., one of our most enlightened magistrates, a great personality, and Chairman of the London Sessions, stated on July 22, 1920, that it had been found at the London Sessions that out of every hundred prisoners on probation, ninety-six never returned to a life of crime. There is no doubt that the reduced number of gaol birds is largely due to the system of probation, which was first tried with success on Cain.

Another event which lessened the criminal ranks was the passing of the Children's Act in 1908, by which no child under the age of 14 may be sent to prison; and it makes provision for avoiding prison between the ages of 14 and 16 in suitable cases, placing the offenders for a short time in Remand Homes. These latter might with advantage be replaced by special educational institutions as in Holland, Spain, Belgium and other countries. In previous years more than a thousand boys and girls under 16 were in prison annually, while actually one child of the age of 12 was in prison. So recently as the year 1875, a girl of 13 was fined for wheeling a perambulator on the pavement in a fashionable street; and as she could not pay the fine she was sent to prison. I have mentioned elsewhere<sup>1</sup> that in the new prison in Madrid you may see boys running about among the prisoners. None of them are under 8 years of age or more than 12, but it is a dangerous system for the young minds. These are town cases and are soon removed into homes for careful education under the priests. In our country we are trying to introduce foster homes, where it is possible to board out criminal infants say from 6 years old and upwards. The Continental methods

---

<sup>1</sup> Chapter XXI, on "Penology, Spain."



of placing them in religious institutions seem to give them a better chance.<sup>1</sup>

### A PLEA FOR HUMANITY.

In the last few years a great deal of personal interest has been taken in the criminal. We have made the wonderful discovery that he is a human being, and, I think, without prejudice, we must give General William Booth his share of the credit.

What did General Booth say forty years ago about poor criminals? "As wounded and sickly stags are gored to death by their fellows, so the gored unfortunate who bears the prison brand is hunted from pillar to post, until he despairs of ever regaining his position, and oscillates between one prison and another for the rest of his days."

He found one-tenth of the population submerged below the level of civilization and physical endurance, and it came to him as a religious call to pull them out of the mire. His success roused other religious bodies. The Church Army followed, being founded by the energy of Prebendary Carlile and my friend, the late Canon F. S. Webster, D.D. A full account is given in General Booth's Life of how the Bishops and other Church dignitaries wrestled with him to rope him into their own organization. There existed the greatest friendship and affection between him and these devout men, but William Booth felt his call was to the outcasts and that he must not tie them down to one particular sect. Besides, though he recognized Church ritual and its value, he would not introduce it into his mission work.

The Salvation Army has penetrated into eighty-three countries. Almost the only country that resisted the invasion was Russia, until the year 1914. The Petrograd

---

<sup>1</sup> See the account of the institution at Amersfoot. The youngest member was only 6 years old and a convicted thief. Chapter XVII, "Penology in Holland."



Municipality then subsidized the Salvation Army, but the work was stopped by Bolshevists in 1919. The old General told me how our late Queen Mother, Alexandra, tried to get her sister to allow the Salvation Army to enter Russia. It was a personal interview, and she replied that they had enough religions and did not want one more. That was a sad day for Russia.

### PRISONS IN ENGLAND.

We have in England two kinds of prisons, local, for those sentenced to not more than two years ; and convict, for those sentenced to penal servitude, the minimum being three years.

The daily average population of the local prisons : in 1876-77 was about 20,000 ; in 1913-14 was about 14,000 ; and in 1920-21 it fell to 8,400.

The daily average population in the convict prisons at similar dates was as follows : in 1876-77, 10,000 ; in 1913-14, 2,700 ; in 1920-21, 1,400. Including debtors and court martials in the year 1913-14, over 151,000 individuals were sent to prison. This fell in 1918-19 to 28,000, for, as we know, every evil-doer was absorbed in the serious problem of saving the Empire. Two years later the admissions to prison were roughly about 45,000, and of these about two-thirds were sent to prison without the option of a fine ; the remainder went to prison because they could not pay a fine.<sup>1</sup>

To show that even criminals are blessed with loyalty thousands joined up in the Great War, and several gained distinction, even to the V.C. Those remaining in prison put their backs into work to help the soldiers in a way that would put to shame any trade union. May that fact not be forgotten. During the war I had letters from prison expressing loyalty to King and country, which showed the human character of the fallen.

---

<sup>1</sup> Copied from "English Prisons To-Day," by Stephen Hobhouse and Fenner Brockway.



Prison administration is far from perfect, and improvements come very slowly. It seems a little hard that so many innocent people are arrested on suspicion and kept in confinement unnecessarily. In 1923, in our country, about 12,000 innocent people were treated in this way. We often keep the accused six months or more awaiting the convenience or opportunity of travelling judges, which is a great injustice to innocent people. At La Santé, in Paris, many under accusation are detained for months. I have seen them there even for two years during examination. At Funchal, in Madeira, I saw several prisoners who had been in prison for several months before they were even charged.

Regarding serious crimes, "indictable offences," such as are tried by jury, before 1914 there were roughly between 77,000 to 105,000 cases per annum. Arrests for these crimes since that day vary annually between 57,000 and 75,000; and while before 1914 about five out of seven were convicted, since that date the proportion has not been much more than one out of every two.<sup>1</sup>

When we come to "non-indictable" or less serious offences, which are dealt with summarily, often untinged with crime, we find alarming numbers; 500,000 to 700,000 trials and apprehensions a year, and usually only one in six escape punishment. Many of these are dealt with by fines, of which there were 420,000 in 1923. Of these, about 30,000 being too poor to pay, had to go to prison, which may be a cruel hardship in the case of breadwinners. Non-indictable crimes include vagrancy, prostitution, gambling, unpaid debt, offences against bye-laws, drunkenness and minor assaults.

## JUVENILE OFFENDERS.

In the Report of the Commissioners of Prisons for 1923-24,<sup>2</sup> we find that in that year 2,987 boys, of whom

---

<sup>1</sup> These figures are from Fenner Brockway's book on "Prisons."

<sup>2</sup> Pp. 13, 16, loc. cit.



53 per cent. had not been previously convicted ; and 337 girls, of whom 46 per cent. had not been convicted previously, were received into the ordinary prisons (excluding Borstal institutions). 1,663 lads were sentenced to one month or less ; and of these 40 per cent. were committed to prison in default of paying a fine for some relatively trivial offence. What murder of souls and careers !

Prisoners<sup>1</sup> under 16 are known in prison parlance as "juveniles." They are treated very similarly to the "juvenile adults"—those between 16 and 21 ; they need not, therefore, be dealt with separately here. It may be recorded, however, that our evidence suggests that juveniles are sometimes sent to prison for very inadequate reasons. Thus a witness described how on January 10, 1920, a little gipsy girl of 14, who had been arrested on a charge of stealing, was transferred to prison merely for having broken a window at night at the Remand Home. "The sound of her sobbing in her cell at night was most pitiful," adds this witness. "The injustice was the greater in this case because the girl was eventually acquitted."

A second instance ; one of the writers of this book came in contact, when in prison, with a bugler of 15 sentenced to one month's imprisonment for stealing a bicycle, on the ground that he was too unruly to detain elsewhere. He was a most promising type of boy, adventurous, but certainly not criminal or dangerous. The court sent him to prison under the exception permitted by the Children's Act because he had escaped from the police station. "But," as he remarked, "what soldier wouldn't have done it ? They put me in a yard to exercise alone, and the wall wasn't six feet high. Of course, I was over in a jiffy. Later we shall make reference to this boy, which will show how disastrous the imprisonment of juveniles may be."

There are no restrictions upon the sending of young

---

<sup>1</sup> Brockway on "Prisons," p. 296.



persons between 16 and 21 to prison; they may be sentenced to any term from five days to life, and at the present time there are juvenile adults serving life sentences at Dartmoor.

Comparing the year 1905 with 1924, we do not seem to have advanced, for 1,010 males and 35 females under 16 were in prison in the latter year. The youngest criminal was 10 or 12 years of age. We are clearly still far behind other countries and it seems time to pass a law that no child or, technically, "infant" under the age of eighteen shall be allowed inside the prison doors.

### *Reformatories.*

Reformatories and industrial schools apply to offenders between the ages of 12 and 16. The period of detention must not be for less than three or more than five years. These institutions till recently have treated the inmates on penal lines, in fact like prisons. If they had been truly reformatory they might have effected much good. To-day they are excellently managed and only five to ten per cent. get into trouble later.

Imitating the George Junior Republic and similar institutions in America, we have started juvenile colonies. There is one in Dorsetshire, another near Melton Mowbray, and a training colony for girls in Berkshire. These have done excellent work, being supervised by capable and enthusiastic men and women. It is to be hoped that these free republics will multiply.

Of course there will always be young boys and girls who are too dull in intelligence, too wicked in morality and too obstinate for any free institution, even for Borstal; to-day they find their way into the prison cells and they are "in and out" for the rest of their lives. Why not send the incorrigibles when young to the care of the Salvation Army or to the Church Army? Results in past years in England have shown how many of these cases improve, and how these organizations protect the hopeless from doing harm to the public, and the helpless



from being a continual burden. A change in law would be necessary, so that the State could keep its hold on them even in the adult stage.

### BORSTAL.<sup>1</sup>

In the year 1909, Sir Ruggles Brise introduced the "Borstal" system for boys between the ages of 16 and 21. The work of William Wheatley suggested it to the authorities, for since the 'sixties he had been sheltering homeless lads and young criminals and was blessed with marvellous success. At that time children so young as ten went to prison; boys and adults being indiscriminately associated in prison. This was now the first time for separating them, and the convicts' prison at Borstal was turned into a boys' prison.

The foreigners, out of necessity from their small population, treat every young criminal as a rough diamond, an unpolished jewel; or as a crooked sapling which may make a fine oak. They take a naughty boy and wisely chosen directors set to work to reform him with as much zeal as if he was their own son. Well do I remember at Saint Honoré, to the south of Brussels, what a wonderful director was in charge. By profession he was an engineer, but he gave up his lucrative pursuit for this kind of work. These were bad boys corresponding to our Borstal boys, but he did not relax his parental grip until his protégés were properly floated; even then the parental care of the State was exercised longer if necessary. He was grieved to admit that there was always a social effluent of hopeless incorrigibles in this kind of work, but most of the lads made good.

Abroad the officials are selected for their special fitness, and their salaries are not tempting. The Director at Merxplas, with 6,000 under his care, received £400 a

---

<sup>1</sup> The name is derived from the first boys' prison at the village of Borstal near Rochester. There are now three similar institutions, and one for girls at Aylesbury.



year as salary, and house. In Holland a Commissioner gets from £400 to £600. In our country the salaries are from £1,000 to £1,500 per annum.

When I first visited Borstal it was a prison<sup>1</sup> and too strict for youths. Guards were in uniform, carrying sticks or batons. The broad arrow was stamped on the prison garb; the silent system and the solitary cell, with all its misery to youthful minds, obtained.

We heard little about Borstal in early days but now public interest centres on Borstal treatment, regarding it as a hopeful novelty. Up to a point it is successful, but considering the very poor material to work upon we must be sympathetic rather than critical.

A remarkable change took place about 1922, and at the same time a book on English prisons was published by two conscientious objectors, who were intellectuals. They gave their experiences of prison<sup>2</sup> and criticized the whole system and knocked it about rather badly. To-day uniformed and armed warders are replaced by tutors. The boys are trusted outside the walls, even into the town alone. It has been discovered that they are human, young and impressionable, not vicious and terrible by nature, for high-spirited boys need a lot of freedom and encouragement; and while they will not be driven and they will not be thwarted, they may be led. This was the experience of Mr. Wheatley fifty years ago when he began working among the fallen, guiding and helping them.

In the year 1908, I saw at Saint Honoré a young "Borstal" (let me name him so) who could make a perfect suit of clothes and was off to a good shop in Brussels at £4 a week. There were two others who were going to municipal situations at good pay in the electrical

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* Report and pictures in the Annual Report of the Borstal Association, 1911.

<sup>2</sup> "English Prisons of To-day," by Fenner Brockway and Stephen Hobhouse, 1922.



departments. In the *École de Bienfaisance de l'État*,<sup>1</sup> south of Bruges, boys in the gardens learn to graft peach and other fruit trees, plant vegetables properly, and follow up intensive cultivation. These all went in as the same unintelligent, low type as our juveniles; but with care, intelligent sympathy and proper training they made good. The excuse which we make is that the material we have is so hopeless; that the average mental age is 13 and the school standard is IV. Even so, a boy of 18 with a mental age of 13 can be educated. He may not be good at classics, but he may make a very good tailor, carpenter, gardener, blacksmith or an electrical engineer. The aim appears to be to try to get him to love work and keep out of prison in future. Instead, it would surely be wiser to interest him in a trade and thus gain his love of work. Our Government is too economical to teach them properly with up-to-date machinery, so as to enable them to take their place alongside ordinary workmen, as obtains in foreign prisons and reformatories. All we succeed in, or perhaps all we aim at, is to turn out an improved class of labourer.

I was once asked in Holland to visit a reformatory for the worst boys after our Borstal type. I said to the director: "I understand you have the worst boys here." He replied with parental emotion, "I have no bad boys. They have been bad, but they are now changed in heart." It was like a big family and the affection of the boys for their foster parent was quite evident. This was in 1908 before our system was properly organized. No success in this work can obtain unless the boys regard the Director not as a master, but as a lovable friend and parent.

I am told that at Borstal the shortest sentence is two years. If a boy between the ages of 16 and 21 commits a crime and receives a shorter sentence, then he must go to prison. This requires modifying. Before admission

---

<sup>1</sup> "State Schools"—*vide* "Unfinished Man," Chapter XV.



to Borstal, the offender must have been previously convicted or in trouble concerning probation. As the system constantly changes, these statements may not apply to-day.

From my personal visits I have been struck with the enthusiasm and conscientious care of all those in charge, from the Governor, who is a medical man, to the young university men in charge of the houses and down to the officers, who are in close touch with the boys. There are many problems which trouble them in the want of thought at headquarters; thus the boys work very hard all day and in the evening have school. How can you teach tired boys? Their brains ought to be fresh to absorb knowledge, and lessons should be in the morning. Above all things these boys require educating and training, and this is evidently not clearly recognized; how, indeed, can it be when the country is backward in the ideals and principles of education for the masses?

Speaking generally of the Borstal system, it encourages good health and development, and makes for manliness when the youths go into the world again. There must be some mental improvement, although they are credited with being on the weak-minded side. On the other hand the grouping of so many youths of known bad character awakens the desire for adventure and a dare-devil spirit, which forms the criminal habit.

First offenders on arrest are sent to a common gaol for observation and sorting purposes. This from every point of view is very unsatisfactory, and severely commented on by magistrates. They should be sent to remand homes, as is done abroad, conspicuously so at the observatoria in Holland and Belgium. In prison they at once acquire a defiant and indifferent attitude. To keep them out of prison should be our aim. In Belgium no boy under eighteen ever sees the inside of a prison.

Another matter requiring attention is to do away with prison cells at Borstal and similar institutions. Life in a private house or in an institution like Wheatley's, or



in a colony, would probably be much more successful than the present system, with its barrack kind of life and cellular incarceration. The boys yearn for a sense of home and for the maternal touch. I believe matrons will be introduced before long, until that occurs Borstal is still a prison.

### *The Borstal Association.*

For many years there has been a Borstal Association for taking care of the boys after leaving Borstal. It had more chance of doing good in a parental way than the prison or institution could possibly have, and its success is largely due to the founder and director, Sir Wemyss Grant Wilson, who is sympathetic and gives the boys their first start in life. But he has many difficulties, so bad is the material. Moreover, he has no powers of supervision beyond two years, and during that time two out of three boys do keep out of trouble. After then he can hardly be held responsible for the number who return to crime, who seem more numerous than statistics allow.

A young Borstal, whom I regarded as a "hopeful," recently got five years with another Borstalian for the simple theft of a Ford car. They would not have got more for stealing £100,000.

We cannot blame the Borstal authorities for such events, as they are working on the most vicious specimens of youth. What we require is team rescue work, taken up by the educated and better-class people.

### A REMARKABLE PRISON IN IRELAND.

In Ireland we can hardly expect good things, but if we examine the country we find there are two distinct races. There is a bold, virile race in the North, of Scotch perhaps of Sumerian descent ; while in the South they are



said to be Picts and Celts and of a much lower civilization, of which we have had so many proofs in late years.<sup>1</sup>

So bad were Irish convicts that West Australia forbade them entry.<sup>2</sup> About 1856, to meet difficulties, Captain Sir Walter Crofton and Lord Carlisle, the then Lord Lieutenant, established a system of intermediate prisons. They had what appeared to be insuperable difficulties and at that time our prisons were in a state of acute barbarism. One establishment was at Smithfield, near Dublin, and had been an old prison. Another establishment consisted of a farm at Lusk. Ordinary prisoners who made good were sent to the former to learn trades, as tailoring, shoemaking, carpentering, coopering, &c. They were not subjected to either the silent or solitary system. They had lectures and classes and everything was attended to, which would raise their *moral*. The Governor was now called the Superintendent of the Establishment. They were not fed by rations, but tables were laid and each one helped himself. Every convict had sixpence a week pocket money, and they were allowed to go into Dublin and make purchases. They were on their honour and in only one or two cases did they abuse it.

The other establishment in Ireland, which was a large farm, was kept for the convicts who were of agricultural habits. They, too, were treated as ordinary workmen and dressed in ordinary clothes. Each man here got half-a-crown a week. All these poor men were trained in the particular kind of work they intended to pursue when they gained their freedom. Mr. Organ was then administrator and friend. He wrote:—

“*Individualization* has always appeared to me the

---

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Waddell traces their origin in the North to the Phœnicians ; and South Irish, he says, are Vans, a degraded lawless people from Asia Minor. See “Phœnician origin of Britons, Scots and Anglo-Saxons.”

<sup>2</sup> *Vide Westminster Gazette*, November 14, 1895.



greatest aid to success in the reformation of the criminal. Its importance cannot be overrated ; to deal with them in the mass would be a grievous error."

While these establishments were in existence they released 547 male convicts on licence or ticket of leave and only 22 had to be recalled. These were the men too bad for West Australia. The farm at Lusk had to be closed on grounds of economy when the numbers fell to 25. This wonderful experiment might well be copied.

It is extraordinary what a sense of honour convicts and gaolbirds possess. Mrs. Ballington Booth<sup>1</sup>, of the Salvation Army in America, began with trusting the men and told them in the beginning that the sense of honour must be there before she could work with them. They responded and never broke their promises.

---

<sup>1</sup> Sister of Mrs. Florence Barclay ; both of the noted Charlesworth family.



## Chapter XV

---

### SUMMARY

SEVENTY YEARS' RESEARCH IN GERMANY.

DR. DELBRÜCK AND PRISON PARANOIA.

LONG SENTENCES AFFECT THE MIND.

DR. GUTSCH.

DR. SOMMER ON HALLUCINATIONS.

Breaches of Discipline.

DR. KNECHT ON INSANITY IN PRISON.

DRS. NAEKE AND REICH.

KRAEPELIN OF HEIDELBERG AND DEMENTIA PRÆCOX.

### SEVENTY YEARS' RESEARCH IN GERMANY.

FOR many years, since 1853, German doctors have studied prison psychology in the penal institutions of Halle, which acted as a relief prison to mentally affected prisoners in Prussia.<sup>1</sup>

They regarded solitary confinement as a predisposing factor to insanity, as contrasted with mass confinement. Those who were violent and guilty of crimes against the person were twice as frequently liable to insanity as those guilty of crimes against property. This we might expect, because while crimes against property demand a somewhat high level of intellect, those against persons are usually committed by unintelligent people, who are led by their emotions, and they have little power of valuing the

---

<sup>1</sup> "History of Prison Psychoses," P. Nitsche and L. Wilmanns.



responsibility or consequences of their actions. These violent criminals, Delbrück said, have a special type of insanity. They usually deny the crime or extenuate it, thinking themselves wholly blameless. They consider their imprisonment unjust and look forward to early freedom. Sometimes they are full of remorse and melancholy. Their insanity develops with fixed ideas and delusions of persecution, called by Delbrück prison paranoia, differing in symptoms from paranoia in ordinary asylums; but often symptoms of insanity had occurred before the crime.

No doubt in time we shall go into criminal cases with more care, taking into account the family histories. When that day arrives the man who now gets three months or three years, but comes back time after time, will, after the first offence, be placed in a colony or asylum. Theirs is often the crime of passion.

Those who are guilty of offences against property, and are mostly habitual offenders, show less tendency to insanity.

Long periods of imprisonment are a frequent cause of mental deterioration. Many prisoners have been criminals from youth, who, living in poverty and yielding to drink and excesses, have damaged their physical health and furnished a suitable soil for mental disturbance. They have been tramps and vagabonds, sometimes the terror of their district.

Delbrück considered that absolute isolation predisposes to hallucinations. The weakening and inactivity of the reproductive life and the animal and vital functions; the predominance of apathy and passivity, all tend to mental discord. In former days these symptoms were very common, as prison was more severe, men often being kept in darkness and on short rations.

Gutsch divided his cases into affective disorders, that is of the emotions, mania and melancholia, and disorders of the intelligence, paranoia and dementia.



## DR. SOMMER ON HALLUCINATIONS.

Sommer said that thrice the number of prisoners become insane among those who have long sentences, as contrasted with those having short sentences. Sommer has observed in these cases that the prisoner becomes careless in his work and unable to fix his attention, which unfortunately is treated as failure of duty and punished. Then he is seen as if listening to something unexplained, looking suspiciously around him; his working capacity diminishes; he suffers from insomnia and loss of appetite; he is very irritable and depressed. He is in conflict with his environment, seeking an explanation, and drops into apathetic brooding; he is full of indefinite illusions and hallucinations,<sup>1</sup> chiefly of an auditory character, and hears curse words and voices condemning him. He is now in a condition of melancholia and perplexity, which is all part of prison paranoia. Sommer thinks that even at this stage cure is possible, but only with freedom, and this is rather an argument in favour of colonies, where possible, instead of prisons. But what can we do? It is hard for us to suffer continually from offenders, and it would be foolish to make pets of them. We must enforce humane segregation.

The next stage consists in breaches of discipline,

---

<sup>1</sup> Hallucinations are subjective sensations of sight, hearing, smell, taste or touch, where there are really no external stimuli or objects to cause them. The subjective mind is, as it were, internal, whereas the objective mind is in touch with the world outside. The subjective mind is shown as intuition. Freud's "unconscious mind" is subjective.

Quoting from Clouston: "If a person really saw a man before him and said he was Nelson, it would have been an illusion, there is a real sense impression, but it is completely misinterpreted; whereas in hallucinations faint impressions of memories stand out as real perception. A person will complain of a smell where none exists, or fancies he has seen someone who is not there." Query: How much of spiritual manifestations are hallucinatory? Maskelyne and Cook's performances are really illusions.



vicious assaults on warders, fixed delusions and mental enfeeblement. The prisoner is now recognized as insane and removed to an asylum. The prison paranoia is fully developed and recovery is out of the question.

#### DR. KNECHT ON INSANITY IN PRISON.

Knecht, in 1891, wrote that from his experience of 168 inmates of Waldheim, the frequency of mental disturbance is in direct proportion to the gravity of the crime and the length of the sentence. More than two-thirds went insane within the first two years of their sentence, and more than half had previously been in solitary confinement. In his cases persecutory paranoia dominated. Out of sixty-nine cases only six recovered.

In regard to women, Naeke described 100 cases in Hubertusburg asylum, all of whom came from various other prisons. Most of them had been insane before their imprisonment, but in the case of the others he did not blame the prison environment for their insanity. They soon settled down to prison life, and paranoia was less frequent, as women are more passive; nor were there any cases of melancholia.

Reich, in 1871, wrote about acute disturbances occurring in prison or even previous to the sentence. Few of us realize the effects of the suspense and anxiety during the trial and at the time of arrest. Out of nineteen patients at Illenau, fifteen developed acute symptoms in a few days or weeks after arrest. In many of these cases there was great emotion, shock and psychic tension. The prisoner would stay silent and brooding, and remained at times motionless in the same spot with a vacant stare. His movements were unsteady or hesitating, like those of a drunken person, and his consciousness became clouded. Illusions, hallucinations, and delusions about demons and possessions often occurred. Then might follow collapse or hysterical stupor or mania with muscular twitchings, screaming and destroying what came in his way. At this stage he had to be removed to



a hospital. At the height there might be complete amnesia or loss of memory, and the patient lived in dreamland. Most of them got well, but some went on to dementia. Where life had been spent in dissipation previously, all these painful symptoms were greatly exaggerated.

### DR. KRAEPELIN AND DEMENTIA PRÆCOX.

Dementia præcox was described by Wilman, who had charge of the Heidelberg Clinic from 1891 to 1906, where he had under his care 227 mixed cases. Of these 49 per cent., or 136, belonged to the above disease. Dementia præcox was not labelled as such when I studied at Morningside Asylum under Professor Clouston. It was fully described by him, in the 'seventies, under a different name, being called "insanity of adolescence." Kraepelin, of Heidelberg, was the first to give it the present name, but both the late Dr. Mercier and Dr. Robertson reject this title.

These cases present every variety of crime from vagrancy to theft, suicide or even murder. One of the distinctive characters is confusion and apathy, or in other types impulsive conduct. They develop slowly, and many who fought well in the war gradually passed into confusional insanity and crime. They probably had the inborn tendency. The cause is unknown. It is supposed to be a disease of the affective or emotional system. The French<sup>1</sup> regard it as a disease of the sympathetic nerves in the subthlamic region.

The will power is perverted or lost. The patient exhibits "negativism"; that is, he stands motionless for hours, heedless of danger, and in passive opposition to any order or suggestion given to him. Other cases are indolent and irritable, with sexual symptoms, either excited or depressed; while a third type are full of delusions of grandeur or persecution. They all end in dementia.

<sup>1</sup> Dide and Guirand, *Psych. du médecin pract.* Paris, 1922.







SECTION D

PUNISHMENT

CHAPTERS XVI—XXIV



THE  
LIBRARY  
OF THE  
MUSEUM OF  
COMPARATIVE ZOOLOGY  
AT HARVARD UNIVERSITY  
CAMBRIDGE, MASS.



## Chapter XVI

---

### SUMMARY

IS PENOLOGY A SCIENCE ?

CRIMINAL RESPONSIBILITY.

THE IRRESISTIBLE IMPULSE.

STERILIZATION FOR UNCONTROLLABLES.

REPRESSION.

THE PROBLEM OF SENTENCES.

THE RÉCIDIVIST.

A DISTINGUISHED MAGISTRATE ON PENOLOGY.

THE LASH.

TRANSPORTATION.

### IS PENOLOGY A SCIENCE ?

THE term penology is derived from the Greek and means a discourse upon punishment.

The word science (*scientia*) means knowledge, and there is a vast difference between a discourse (*logos*), which may be theoretical and even untrue, and science which must be true and accurate and unassailable.

Penology, psychology and many other special discourses never can be accurate, as they partake of guess work and speculation. Penology is therefore a philosophy, which means that it is a yearning for right-doing in the matter of punishment. Penology could never countenance the old game laws, with their brutal punishments. All class legislation and favouritism must go and there must be an equitable rearrangement of sentences.

Psychology, which is interwoven with penology, is a discourse on the mind and spirit and is also a philosophy.



The new school or "Neos" are not true psychologists, as they lay aside physiology and science. They are speculators, often appealing to their imagination for their facts.

Before discussing punishments we must study the problem of criminal responsibility, which will show us who should escape penal measures. When this is decided we shall have a clearer outlook on the question of colonies, asylums, and the lethal chamber. The argument is along a very thorny path, but it should be dealt with according to our latest scientific knowledge, rather than by the earlier traditions of developing law.

### CRIMINAL RESPONSIBILITY.

Criminal responsibility is the question of the day. Though we have registered many thousands of insane among our criminal population, we have not completed a full study of the subject, nor come to an understanding with the lawyers.

The great tendency with us is to elaborate on alcoholism in relation to crime and insanity. Till now we have been so obsessed with alcohol that we have entirely overlooked syphilis and even the strain of poverty as the main causes of demoralization.

I was struck some years ago with the numerous cases of insanity in the convict prison at Parkhurst, especially of dementia præcox among young prisoners. We have also an interesting collection of insane criminals at Broadmoor; yet we do not seem to have settled a workable basis for the relationship of insanity to crime, in which responsibility plays the principal part.

We have so far advanced as now to treat naughty boys as naughty boys and not as hardened criminals. This fact will tend to diminish the cases of dementia præcox, as doubtless prison causes or hastens it among weak-minded boys. These cases demand early recognition when first charged with crime. The same remarks apply



to early cases of general paralysis of the insane,<sup>1</sup> many of whom are sent to prison, no doubt because they excite antipathy, their crimes being generally sexual.

The problem of criminal insanity, so called, does not fall within the sphere of this work, although it touches the fringe at many points. In olden days there was no trouble about a murderer sane or insane, for they all alike afforded public entertainment at the gallows. It was in the year 1843, soon after we began to take a kindly interest in the insane, that the lawyers asked for guidance in their attitude towards insane criminals, when a man named MacNaughton shot Sir Robert Peel's secretary, Mr. Drummond, supposing he was Sir Robert Peel himself. MacNaughton was acquitted as he had delusions of persecution against Peel. It was then decided by the answers of the Judges to the House of Lords, that for purposes of defence the plea of insanity might be presented if it was clearly proved "that at the time of committing the act, the party accused was labouring under such defect of reason, from disease of the mind, as not to know the nature or quality of the act he was doing, or, if he did know it, that he did not know that he was doing what was wrong."

To this decision Sir Fitz-James Stephen has since added his opinion that "a person should not be punished for any act when he is deprived by disease of the power of controlling his conduct, unless the absence of control has been caused by his own fault."

This last opinion would, of course, be a defence for crimes committed by moral imbeciles, but it would not excuse the drunkard, unless he was temporarily insane from delirium tremens; but is not the delirium his own fault? It opens up the question of resistance, on which there is so much disagreement. It is all very difficult and even illogical, but we ought to keep in view that if we deal lightly with the moral imbecile, we should not give him the chance of a second bite.

---

<sup>1</sup> A disease attacking the prefrontal cortex, due to syphilis.



The new school of psychology is desirous of pressing the theory of determinism, whereby we have no proper power of control, or resistance, and that in a helpless sort of way we are compelled to react to the circumstances which immediately confront us. They have wiped out conscience and free-will as non-existent; nor have they left us mind, so that the whole situation is embarrassing, and it would be unjust to punish according to their theory. By a wholly illogical and contradictory method of argument they recommend punishment as a deterrent. They say the memory of the pain inflicted as punishment will recur when a similar temptation presents itself again, and thus will act as a deterrent against repeating the offence; but does not this imply free-will? It at once negatives determinism. Anyone to whom determinism applies is mentally deficient, and in all criminal trials mental deficiency is now receiving further, though hardly sufficient, consideration.

In spite of psychological speculation the MacNaughton judgment holds good and maintains its classical reputation. It is now considered that it requires further extension to include moral imbeciles.

The weak-minded are protected, if it can be shown that they are weak-minded from birth or an early age, which is often difficult, as nothing may be known of the early life of the criminal. As things stand to-day the academic habit of law cannot agree as to what "an early age" means, or when it ends.

In legal procedure the defence must call in an expert alienist to prove that the accused is affected with mental disease, and in consequence is suffering from defect of reason. In many cases this is clear sailing, while others present so much difficulty that there may be great conflict of opinion. This sort of demonstration is very unfortunate before the public, and it would be wiser if the colleges appointed small groups of skilled alienists to decide the question of criminal responsibility and place their views before the jury, without further dispute.



The third degree is where medical science and law are apt to part company ; that is, did the accused know what he was doing or was he ignorant of doing wrong ? This happy hunting ground would be closed if a conjoint opinion such as is alluded to was handed to the jury.

To give an illustration. In a recent case a young farm labourer of 20 shot an elderly man. The labourer had no cause for ill-feeling and possibly did not know the man ; but the medical evidence showed that while he was not certifiable, yet he had the mind of a child. Here we have two possibilities : (1) That he did not know the nature or quality of his act ; or (2) that he did not know that it was wrong to murder this old man. Both conditions may have applied in his case, or considering he was a good steady labourer, the second condition was the more probable. There are endless examples every week if we care to follow the doings of the criminal courts. This is a simple textbook illustration, but in actual practice things are not so easily dealt with by the lawyer. The physician takes a wider and probably more correct view, for if there be epilepsy in the criminal or in his family, or insanity or even eccentricity, we can hardly deem him to be normal or responsible ; and it does not mean that the spot or blemish should be very close ; it may be far away on the level with the grandparents. This is clearly demonstrated in studying tables of hereditary taints, how the same taint will pass through several generations, sometimes leaving one or more generations quite free.<sup>1</sup>

Here is a striking illustration that occurred recently, where the taint was traced to the maternal grandfather ; the mother appeared normal. The father was insane. In such a clear case it is difficult to understand how there could be any difference of opinion.

A married woman was murdered by her lodger, a miner, aged 27. He had evidently been abusive, and

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* Chapter IV for tables of family taints.



she had forbidden him the house. Then came a period of brooding, or more technically a phantasy and heaping up of grievances ; one day he hid in the house, and then cut her throat. These imaginary or exaggerated grievances are on the borderline of insanity. He was found insane. Look at his record of insanity on both sides of his family. "The prisoner's mother said that her father committed suicide, and her husband died in an asylum. Her husband's brother also died in an asylum, having previously attempted to burn himself to death by putting a live coal on his bed." Two medical officers found no trace of insanity while he was in prison. A third doctor of wide experience in mental cases said that "a man with such a family history was more liable to insanity than an ordinary person. His condition after returning from the war led to the suspicion he might have then been developing insanity. He had no hesitation in certifying him as being mentally defective. The prisoner did not know what he was doing." The judge followed the ruling in the MacNaughton case. He said, as reported in *The Times* :—

"At the present time every person is presumed to be sane, and responsible for his acts and the consequences at the time they were committed ; and if a defence of insanity is about to be set up, then it must be clearly proved on the part of the defence—first, that the accused person at the material time of committing the act was suffering from a disease of the brain ; secondly, in consequence of that disease of the brain was suffering from a defect of reason ; and thirdly, the accused at the material time either did not know what he was doing, or did not appreciate the nature and quality of his acts, or that if he did know the nature of his act, did not know that it was wrong. It is proposed—as it has been from time to time attempted, I will not say to relax, but to alter that law and combine the third alternative for the last of these three points, it being that although the accused knew what he was doing, or knew that what he was



doing was wrong, or that he knew both, nevertheless he had an uncontrollable impulse to do it."

The technical expression is "Guilty but insane," and the formula runs, "Guilty of the act charged against him, but was insane at the time so as not to be responsible according to the law." Guilty is an unfortunate term, because it implies intention, whereas the insane man is possibly too confused to have any definite intention. His act is deplorable, and may be most revolting, but logically is he not blameless? If this be the correct view, he is no longer human in the mental or psychic sense, and is not the correct treatment painless extinction?

### THE IRRESISTIBLE IMPULSE.

In the last five or six years there has been a move to excuse crime on the theory of "uncontrollable or irresistible impulse." How many thrashings the older generation would have escaped if that elastic principle had then been discovered! This new theory has been specially applied to violence and to murder, usually of girls. It is worth considering whether these are not cases of sadism, which, for the time being, seems to be forgotten by the professions. Are we sailing too close to class legislation, making it possible for the wealthy and influential to escape the rope? It was only after such a case, which caused great public dissatisfaction, that we began to hear so much of this pretext. It is common knowledge that there have always been thousands of individuals who seem unable in varying degree to resist evil, or control themselves.<sup>1</sup> The difficulty is how to measure the responsibility in each case, and then to decide on the treatment and how far punitive measures will have any effect, and how much the public must endure without complaint. Irresistible impulse

---

<sup>1</sup> The irresistible impulse has been ably described by Saint Paul, the psycho-jurist, in his letters to the Romans, chapter vii, verse 15.



might be applied to other crimes, especially in the case of boys or young men. How lucky poor old "Kangaroo" would have been with his first offence, getting in at the window and stealing a watch, if he could have pleaded irresistible impulse. It would have saved him fifty years in prison. But he ought not to have escaped punishment; a tolerably severe flogging would probably have changed the direction of his thoughts and future life.

The man in the street is not satisfied with this position, for this kind of murderer usually acts as a sane man, taking careful precautions to conceal his identity. These cases have been wrongly compared with those of puerperal insanity, where mothers murder their infants; which is quite different in character, being a distinct and actual mania. There is no lust of self-indulgence; no cunning and scheming and effort to conceal in the poor mother, who, with a septic, poisoned brain, sets to work to destroy her child.

It needs very little effort of imagination to separate the uncontrollable from the uncontrolled, and if the law yielded on this point there would be a great increase in crime, especially of a sexual character.

What are we to do if the *vox populi* for this additional defence in criminal procedure prevails? If we spare the offender the rope, by all reason we ought not to let him off with the easy life of an asylum. The proper treatment is painless extinction, but if we were more severe in the punishment of ordinary violent crime, we should teach the importance of self-control to many otherwise lawless people.

It is interesting to find a philanthropic Quaker, like William Tallack, in favour of corporal punishment for brutal violence. His life work was prison reform, and he advocated short and sharp sentences in prison, which must be made very disagreeable and unattractive. He was a great believer in religion and the efficacy of prayer, but he did not regard religion and prison



methods as well assorted. He refers to a negro slave who objected to his master combining flogging with religious harangues : " Massa ! if floggee, floggee ; and if preachee, preachee, but not floggee and preachee too."

### STERILIZATION FOR THE UNCONTROLLABLES.

Though the "irresistible impulse" is a comparatively new defence for crime, we should regard it very seriously and fairly. Let us admit its existence, as a form of mental disease. What is its origin ? Freud puts down all energy of the body or mind to an overflow of the sex glands. There is something to support this theory that the sex glands may be a powerful stimulus to energy in its own direction and even to uncontrolled energy. We must not torture the irresponsible on the gallows, but are we obliged to allow him liberty or even life ? He may not have committed murder ; he may be guilty of violence liable to six weeks in prison or even ten years, but where is he when he regains his freedom and where are we ?

Once travelling from Marseilles during the daytime in a very full train, a merchant of Lyons was murdered, a few compartments from where I sat. No one heard the shots or knew a murder was in process till the train pulled up, and then the poor gentleman was removed, suffering from three bullet wounds in the head and neck. After shooting, the murderer jumped from the train and was promptly secured by some haymakers close by. The theory of determinism might apply to him, as he was of a low grade intelligence ; also he might have raised the defence of uncontrollable impulse. He was attracted by the gold chain and apparently shot the man when asleep ; then, stealing his watch and chain and pocket-book with 50,000 francs, he fled. The murderer was a Greek and had been twice in prison in Marseilles for violence. Would that he could have been dealt with as an irresponsible person from the beginning. For all such criminals we



must demand incarceration for life or the lethal chamber, while in first offences corporal punishment might be used. In this case the culprit was awarded *travaux forcés* for life.

We must approach this subject of *sterilization* scientifically, with balance and without prejudice, not only to save the criminal from himself but also to protect the victim and the race.

To understand this kind of case completely we must have some knowledge of the sex glands. The sex glands have two styles of architecture and two functions. One function is the production of germinal cells to continue the race. The other function is carried on by interstitial cells deep in the glands. These cells, like those of the thyroid, pass into the blood minute quantities of vital property, which determine the qualities of the sex. In the male sex gland these cells produce the change of voice at puberty, they cause the beard and other hair to appear; but more important they stimulate the mental conditions which characterize the male. So far has this been demonstrated that if the sex gland of an ordinary cock be transplanted into the body of a hen, the hen's comb grows after the male type, and even spurs will grow and the hen becomes a fighter. In the female the interstitial cells of the ovary cause all the qualities of womanhood to develop. Atrophy of these cells may result in masculinity of character.<sup>1</sup>

The nerve centres of control are probably in the brain, while from the sex glands come desires, which in many cases are not controlled, and perhaps not controllable. Experience shows that animals, like dangerous bulls and tom-cats, when castrated become quiet and harmless. Eunuchs are known to be very docile, and so with individuals who have had to be de-sexed.

---

<sup>1</sup> The adrenals are supposed to make for virilism in both sexes, and if disordered may produce male features and aggression, &c., in a woman.



Referring to one complete case operated on for tubercle some forty years ago, infantile conditions continued, and the child grew to a tall but beardless man. He was extremely intellectual and happy, but pugnacity or attack never entered into his constitution or nature.

These facts are clearly a lead in the treatment of all violent criminals and to be followed without delay. They must be de-sexed or sterilized.

Let us look forward fifty years and in imagination visit a Court of Justice, where law will not predominate, but will be on the same footing as medicine and psychology. The accused, we shall suppose, is arraigned for violence. The guilt is proved by the lawyer, who then retires. The physician, the alienist, and the psychologist lay before the court full details of the criminal's mental condition and the part that his more or less diseased and toxic body has played in the crime. As a child he was a weakling, perhaps having suffered from meningitis or from water on the brain (hydrocephalus). He grew up morose, irritable and of cruel habits. He would not submit to correction or control, and when manhood came he was the danger of the district. The court will order his removal to hospital where, at the advice of the physicians, the surgeon will perform the very simple operation of de-sexing or castration. It will be necessary to confine him in a colony, rather than in a prison, to prepare him for his return to society, which will be decided by mental experts.

It is but seldom a woman shows such violence except under the influence of alcohol, so we shall discuss her sterilization when dealing with the weak-minded.

## REPRESSION.

The repression of crime occupies a first place in the question of penology, and we look to the authorities whose duty it is to protect us, and on that account we do not



trouble much about self-protection. So conscious are the criminals of the equality of justice that a burglar, who was shot in the back while escaping, prosecuted the man whose house he had just burgled. If the escaping criminal be killed, the Crown with a sense of fair play inquires if the man was a real criminal, a felon; and extends the investigation, so as to decide clearly that he was not an enemy lured into a trap and murdered under the pretext that he was committing a felony.

It may seem unfair that the criminal should be so well protected, being a disturber of the peace, but it all works for pure justice and answers any kind of criticism. In my own case, in 1920, I knew my house was to be burgled from certain "trade signals." I was leaving the house empty for about a week, and I noticed a bottle of whisky a quarter-full, and on the mantelpiece a bottle containing 10 grains of morphia. A brilliant idea suggested itself, to mix the two and lock it away. Would I have been guilty of murder or manslaughter, or would the resulting accident be laid entirely to the cupidity of the three burglars who broke into the cupboard and actually drank the whisky? It is a fine medico-legal point, for I did not endeavour in any way to entrap them; though a learned barrister tells me I did, in fact, try to entrap them, and as a question of law I might be made responsible for leaving a dangerous poison unlabelled, which resulted in one or more deaths. I could not complain, for the burglars were as considerate of the furniture as one could reasonably expect. I had three or four sympathetic calls from ex-burglar friends, who thought from previous interest in the fraternity I should have been exempt from such attentions.

With repression as the main object, corporal punishment, at home and abroad, especially in America, has in past years been excessive and brutal, but it is the general opinion of ordinary criminals in their sober moments, that all violence should be punished with the "cat"; and I have found the same idea when putting the matter



before men who have committed violence and have had the cat.

If criminals think their sentences are just they submit like sportsmen. I remember when at Merxplas, near Antwerp, walking alone in a large enclosure among three thousand specimens of degraded humanity. As I was talking to a small group, M. Louis Strooband, the Director, came up to me and asked if I were not afraid to be alone, as there was no guard. I put the same question to him, as he frequently had to inflict punishments. He replied that he had no fear, for he made sure of the prisoner's guilt, and the man was conscious of the fairness of the sentence. He said the sense of justice was very keen among that class, and if a man realized that he was getting justice and not merely law, he would bear no ill-will against his judge. In his Hall of Justice, where he tried offenders, above the "judgment seat" were the words, "*Audi alterem partem*," and such was the principle that brought success and left no room for rebellion.

### THE PROBLEM OF SENTENCES.

William Tallack emphasized the difficulty, in fact the impossibility, of adjusting the sentence to the crime. Instead the sentence should fit the criminal. Take, for example, a pick-pocket; the same action may yield only fourpence, or forty pounds. How are you to adjudicate? The yield is a matter of luck, or accident, and should not be recorded as a measure of criminality. Probably the magistrate would fit the sentences to the crimes by giving seven days to the fourpenny pick-pocket, and six months or more to the forty-pound offender. But in motive they are equal. My friend, the late Dr. Charles Mercier, our greatest literary psychologist, advocated punishment for motive or intention.

---

<sup>1</sup> "Hear the other side."



Tallack<sup>1</sup> advocated a progressive system of sentences. Thus, if a criminal for his first offence could not be put on probation, give him a few weeks or months. If he comes up again, one or two years; and for the next offence three or four years, and so on. But this is not very satisfactory. I had a criminal acquaintance, whom I regarded as a silly man, but he spent forty years in prison, and yet all his petty thefts were not worth £5. Such a case was dealt with too severely and his treatment was unscientific. He should have been placed twenty years earlier in a Salvation Army colony, where he would have been happy and the public saved from petty annoyances.

A great judge, the late Sir Joseph Walton, once told us at the Medico-Legal Society, of the great difficulty judges encountered in giving sentences for small offences committed by weak-minded people. He had sentenced a poor woman, aged 70, to three years' imprisonment for stealing a pair of kippered herrings. She had been in prison forty times and had just come out, and he felt she would be carefully tended in Holloway Prison and better off than outside. But, he added, the law was very unsatisfactory. We require colonies, or asylums, for those cases. He was a good judge and brimming over with kindness and pity for the criminal masses.

It is, of course, eminently unscientific and uncharitable to pile up sentences. When a prisoner has served his first sentence, he starts life again with a clean slate. If not, give him a longer sentence until the debt is cleared off; but then we meet with the objection that the sentence may be too long or too severe. It is quite evident that the system is wrong to start with, *ab initio*, as the lawyers term it. The criminal who has expiated his offence may soon fall in exactly the same way, and gets a much longer sentence on account of his first crime, number one, which he considers he has already paid for

---

<sup>1</sup> Loc. cit., p. 189.



and cleared his bill. Therefore it is evident that society has not forgiven him and is sending in the same bill twice over, which is a dishonest practice, even in commercial matters. How can this difficulty be overcome in a fair way?<sup>1</sup> It might be made known to the criminal community that chronic offenders and *récidivists* shall receive the statutory punishment due to them, with a certain increasing percentage added each time for their *récidivism*. Say the offence merited six months, the second time it might be a year, the last six months on account of *récidivism*. To give two or three years, as sometimes happens in such cases, seems too great a jump and has the appearance of being vindictive. Our duty to the criminal dictates that at the third conviction he receive the indeterminate sentence. The treatment must be medical and religious, but non-sectarian.

All now is based on the theory of repression. Human Nature is so stubborn, and prison to-day so comfortable, that the theory of repression must be revised. Once the evil-minded man has experienced prison, its horrors are gone. When out he will not work, he will only carry on his criminal profession, which he erroneously thinks pays better. This is one reason why prison should be made severe and distasteful. Many tramps have told me that prison is a palace compared to the workhouse. The workhouse is all right on cold, wet nights in summer, but in winter a small crime secures them a comfortable home till spring comes round.<sup>2</sup>

There are many interesting though rather drawn-out books written by intellectual convicts. They all complain of the severity of penal servitude, and of course they claim to be innocent, having no shame nor remorse, which is a part of the criminal's mind. My poor old friend, Charlie Williams, wrote an account of his sporting days, and was very severe on the penal system.

---

<sup>1</sup> Read the Dutch methods in Chapter XVII on "Penology."

<sup>2</sup> *Vide* frontispiece concerning Tramps.



So was Williams the Second. To have irons riveted by a blacksmith on your ankles and wrists or elbows, and chained to the wall or the floor for six months must be irksome to the most callous. But to-day no chains are used, except in extreme cases. Jabez Balfour was specially loud in his condemnation of penal servitude and its brutalizing effects. But look at the other side of the picture. Jabez was a consummate hypocrite and few know his real life. Several thrifty families were brought down through him not only to poverty but to beggary and starvation. Surely he deserved every hour of his imprisonment. There are some who pity Jabez Balfour, and when he was very deep in the mire the Salvation Army took charge of him, and got him a situation abroad, but the authorities exposed him and he had to return, much discouraged. He died broken-hearted, a stern judgment in kind. He was an able man, a superman, and was about to be made Chancellor of the Exchequer, under Gladstone, when his fall came.

It is very lucky that judges and administrators are not influenced by the agitation of a non-thinking irresponsible public, for crime must not go unpunished, or at all events untreated.

### THE RÉCIDIVIST.

It is very difficult to deflate crime and empty our prisons when we have to deal with the *récidivist* or chronic offender. We must remember that the *récidivist* is not necessarily a violent man, or a murderer. He is one who does not love hard work, nor is he capable of steady long-continued effort. He goes by fits and starts and has adopted crime as an intermittent form of industry.

The shock, the agony, the shame, the remorse of a criminal on his or her first conviction can hardly be described. Sometimes it leads to insanity, for there is nothing in prison to elevate. It is repression, and the



spirit being crushed, an apathy supervenes, which grows into hardness and a feeling of revenge. Prison takes away self-respect. Family ties are broken, and what indeed is there worth living for? As time goes on the prisoner adapts himself to his conditions and takes the line of least resistance. He has his food and bed and servants and his tasks are not too severe. His pride and reputation have perished. What is the use of even wishing for reform? When he goes out no one wants him, and so before long he is back again. In few cases has he suffered physical pain, for we are far too kind to their bodies. What they have suffered is mental pain, the pains of hell, and from this there is little chance of recovery, for they are too crushed to wish to reform.

Fenner Brockway complains of prison damaging the poor men in their minds, but perhaps overlooks that some of these prisoners have but little mental power, or they would not be there. It is a vicious circle; weak mind leads to prison, and our prison methods of repression further weaken the mind. It is the same with alcohol. Which is responsible for the fall, the alcohol or the mental condition which leads to drinking?

Many convicts have told me that after years of prison they become "balmy." Others, who were intellectual, such as "conchies," political prisoners and financiers, may be broken in spirit, but do not seem affected mentally; all of which shows what a great deal of knowledge and intelligence is necessary in handling the criminal section of society.

What hope was there for the récidivists years ago at Dartmoor Prison? Originally built for French prisoners in the time of Napoleon, the following words were carved over its gates: "No hope for you who enter here." My first visit there in the 'nineties was very depressing. All is now changed, and we have a better class of men for warders, who are allowed to give advice to their charges. In the new prisons there is every hope,



the cells are now furnished, the workshops well lighted, and the grounds laid out like a park, and the heavy entrance gates are gone.

### A DISTINGUISHED MAGISTRATE ON PENOLOGY.

I have beside me a letter from an important magistrate referring to a riot at Parkhurst, which bears on the subject of the supervision on the part of the higher authorities.

"In our dealings with prisoners, we still violate their reasonable human desires, at least as much as they violate the country's laws. The men, imprisoned because they are social misfits, are still more social misfits when they are released than before they were confined, and to this extent the standard of citizenship is being degraded, and we are paying in order to degrade it, besides missing our opportunity.

"Consider what interesting psychoses you and I would display if we, like the Parkhurst convicts, were locked alone in a cell from 5 p.m. to 7 a.m. every day of the week for (say) five years. Solitude for fourteen hours of the twenty-four all the year round! It often seems to me that if we could only get into our prison administrators something of the attitude of mind possessed by those engaged in preventive medicine—some idea that they must co-operate with nature instead of flagrantly violating it—we should mend our pace and save much money.

"Prisons ought to 'stretch' mind and body so that they are really efficient instruments when the treatment ends, or as efficient as their natural limitations permit.

"The restoration of a criminal, the healing of the crooked mind, the new inspirations to his soul is a scientific problem as much as medicine. This applies more to boys than adults, and the difficulty is not to be got over by a barren psychology."



It is evident the medicine this magistrate yearns for is religion. Mr. Wheatley's work amongst the fallen has been, and is, one of the most successful. He said to me that nothing is possible without the softening influence of religion, and his stories read like novels. He mentioned the case of a little boy, 7 years old, and destitute, who never knew his father. The father met his child for the first time at the prison gate. Under a special Act the father can be refused permission to keep his child, so Mr. Wheatley cared for him, educated him, made him into a good citizen, and to-day he is earning £1,000 a year as manager of a large bank; but what is more gratifying, he spends his spare time in rescue work. Mr. Wheatley's protégés are to be found in every part of the globe, and how they turned up in 1914 to save the country that trampled on them!

### THE LASH.

A discourse on punishment would be incomplete without discussing physical suffering as a deterrent of violent crime.

If we want to safeguard the public we must have long sentences of isolation; but if we want to repress or deter, it is necessary to adopt much sharper methods. It is the opinion of many sympathetic persons, who have worked among prisoners, that there is too little corporal punishment. "Spare the rod and spoil the child" is an advice now out of date. If every juvenile offender, where probation had failed, received corporal punishment for his next offence, not many would run the risk of a second thrashing. If every crime of violence was punished with several doses of the "cat," violence would disappear. It stopped garotting in South Wales many years ago. The antifloggers<sup>1</sup> deny that the "cat"

---

<sup>1</sup> "Wards of the State," by Tighe Hopkins. Herbert and Daniel, p. 190.



lessened garotting, saying that its decrease was due to more active police administration. It was really due to both causes. The antifloggers say that garotting increased after flogging began, as if these gentry, in order to get a flogging, went to the trouble of garotting.

Mr. Justice Lawrence introduced the "cat" at Cardiff one spring, for about twelve cases. The following summer there were eighteen cases, and in the next winter sixteen ; soon they disappeared. Then Mr. Justice Day used it at Liverpool in 1883, when there were fifty-nine cases of violence, not all of whom were flogged. In 1893 there were seventy-nine cases of violence. There is in this an element of chance, and it is no more argument against flogging than against the failure of the police.

Mr. Justice Lush, in 1866, flogged perhaps twenty garotters in Manchester. The next year he flogged half the number and on his five subsequent visits he had only need to flog once.

Crime comes in epidemics and powerful efforts are frequently necessary to stop epidemics of violence, but because crime does not cease as soon as flogging is imposed is no argument against the latter, nor is it an argument against its proper use as a deterrent. Yet there are many well-intentioned people literally screaming against the infliction of pain, which is largely due to ignorance of the type of man who benefits by a flogging. It is to be feared that these sentimentalists never think of the victims.

The "cat" should be in small, frequent doses. A very defiant convict who received in all 48 lashes from the "cat" and 108 from the birch, told me that after the first two or three lashes he hardly felt the blows, which is an argument for splitting, say, twenty lashes into three doses, or giving a third the number. It is a form of anæsthesia which I experienced when attacked by a dog and received eight bites. This provision of nature is not yet explained, but three hours afterwards I was quite insensible to fuming nitric acid. When hearing of



the terrible sufferings our brave boys went through, I felt comforted to think of this anæsthesia around wounds, which would somewhat minimize the suffering.

As a deterrent, and as a deterrent only, should we not agree to the lash in small doses? What does it mean? A very disagreeable infliction of acute pain for wrongdoing, which may stop a young man from falling over into the abyss, with years of misery and wickedness to follow. It is too soft an age and our mistaken kindness fosters crime. When all is said and done there are many cases in which corporal punishment fails to cure. The best physical treatment is unquestionably de-sexing. The noted garotter, "Archie," had eight severe floggings, which failed to stop him, but the Salvation Army changed him into a lamb, which, added to hundreds of similar cases, is an argument in favour of more and simpler religion inside the prison walls. To attain success it would have to be what the nigger called "all preachee," not as to-day, "floggee and preachee, both."<sup>1</sup>

### TRANSPORTATION.

As a matter of ancient history it is necessary to remind my readers of a fossil punishment, namely, transportation.

The convicts who were transported were a terrible lot, not so much by nature, but by reason of the cruel conditions then existing, and many of them were burning with desire to revenge their harsh and unjust sentences.

William Tallack records the history of Dr. Colin Browning, a surgeon attached to convict ships, who had marvellous success. He said,<sup>2</sup> "We hear much of various systems of prison discipline, as the separate, the silent and the congregate systems; but unless the Christian system be brought to bear, with Divine power, on the understanding and consciences of criminals, every other system,

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* Chapter X, "Religion and Materialism."

<sup>2</sup> *Loc. cit.*, p. 285.



professedly contemplating their reformation, must prove an utter failure."

These ships were always spoken of as "floating hells." When one of his parties of 200 left Woolwich for Hobart, 135 could neither read nor write. On landing 76 had learnt to write, 39 had taken the pledge of total abstinence, and 150 of temperance. They each received a Bible, and on landing subscribed £7 8s. 10d. as a token of gratitude to the Bible Society; some gave their last coppers.

Dr. Browning abolished the lash and the irons, although murders and violence were common on these voyages. Norfolk Island, a convict colony, was the scene of terrible tragedies. Once Dr. Browning had to take 346 "old lags" from there to Tasmania. Murder and plottings were in the atmosphere of this terrible gang. The men were handed over to him in double irons, but were disembarked without the clanking of a single iron. This was a novel experience, for usually the men were double cross-ironed, and many, in addition, chained down to the deck.

Another great man was the Roman Catholic Bishop Willson of Tasmania, a Nottingham man. He worked for the abolition of transportation and succeeded. The old convicts would say, "God bless Bishop Willson." During his time the convicts were treated most brutally, being flogged mercilessly with a tube gag forced into the mouth, oftentimes punished with the "spread eagle," or, as we called it, "crucifixion," a most torturous proceeding. In one day at Norfolk Island 39 men were flogged, and 14 the next day. Twelve convicts were executed in one day; 1,900 convicts were on the island. In 1847 the Bishop came home to implore reform from the Government. In 1865 he returned home a wreck, and, as is very common with Governments, received no pension or even acknowledgment. But in sacrificing his life he ended transportation.

An "old lag," referred to elsewhere, a decent old man



of 84, was called "Kangaroo" on account of his being transported twice. He was a quiet, inoffensive mortal, a *récidivist*, receiving in all over fifty years in prison sentences. He told me that the voyage and company on the ship were awful, and described it as "hell on earth." The jailers were terribly brutal.

Dr. Browning used to say the Bible was his telescope and prayer his compass. He spent several hours daily praying with the convicts.

When I was a child we had a respectable, and I might say a religious horror of the criminal masses. There was no idea of helping them. The one idea was to crush them, not visibly but passively. Then that large-hearted psychologist, William Booth, came along and started his work among what he classified as the "submerged tenth." His instrument was religion, a flaming, impassioned, yet happy religion.

In all these efforts to help the fallen the instrument is religion; the plain, easily understood, simple religion, "the pure religion and undefiled," which is "to visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep oneself unspotted from the world."<sup>1</sup> If we do not sympathize, or have no wish to help, we must at all events avoid blocking the pathway.

---

<sup>1</sup> James i, 27.



## Chapter XVII

---

### SUMMARY

PENOLOGY IN HOLLAND.

The Character of the Dutch.

Prison Methods.

THE CONDITIONAL SENTENCE.

PROBATION.

THE PENAL COLONY.

THE PRINCIPLE OF SENTENCES.

THE SALVATION ARMY FARM COLONY.

THE REFORMATORY AT AMERSFOORT.

The Indeterminate Sentence.

Parental Care of the Staat.

THE OBSERVATORIUM AND REFORMATORIES.

After-Care Association.

JUVENILE MURDERERS AT THE DISPOSAL OF THE STAAT.

SALVATION ARMY BOYS' HOME.

THE PRISON AT AMSTERDAM.

### PENOLOGY IN HOLLAND.

THE Dutch form a very small nation, some 6,000,000,<sup>1</sup> covering 12,500 square miles ; therefore to maintain their strength they require to treat every individual as a useful asset. In our large population we can afford a lot of dross or wastage, regarding it either from a commercial or even national point of view ; but the Dutch work on a religious basis, to a degree almost

---

<sup>1</sup> In 1916.



unknown among us, for they do not want to save a man merely to make use of him, but for his own sake. We never seem to have realized how intensely religious the Lutherans and Calvinists are, and one feels at once in Holland that the penal atmosphere is quite different from what it is at home.

At the Ministry of Justice at The Hague, Mr. Veenstra is *Inspecteur des Reclasseering*, and has charge of every adult prisoner. He is always ready to tackle any refractory or troublesome case, and narrated several examples. One day he went to see a very difficult man, who would not shake hands or reply. Mr. Veenstra went several times, apparently without success, until finally he went to meet him coming out, and took him to breakfast at his own house. His wife, who is greatly interested in helping female ex-prisoners, gave the poor man a hearty welcome. At first the man stared at his plate and would not even sit down ; but finally, after a few sympathetic words, the barrier of his hardened heart broke down, and he has since followed a very proper life. He had been a bad, dangerous criminal, and was a murderer. So dangerous was the man that when the Governor heard of the change in his character, Mr. Veenstra was informed that when visiting the criminal alone, he (the Governor) stood outside with his revolver.

Twenty-five religious societies of different denominations assist in looking after the fallen, and Mr. S. L. Veenstra, who has every prisoner's papers before him, occupies a neutral position as regards ex-prisoners, sending to the Catholic or Lutheran, or other sects, as the prisoner wishes ; and opportunity is offered to a selected group of prison visitors for their charitable work. The Salvation Army officer, Captain Van Ecken, of Amsterdam, has a key and free entry into any prison cell in Holland, for the Government thinks a great deal of the Salvation Army, and hands over a number of prisoners on probation, or lads or girls who want special care and shelter.



It would seem as if the chief aim of the Ministry of Justice is to reclaim rather than to repress, while taking precautions for public safety. In England we have a jury to decide on the guilt of the accused, and the judge mechanically measures out what he considers the proper dose of repression. Judging by results, this form of medicine seldom, if ever, cures this type of mental or moral disease. The Dutch have a happier, more scientific method. If a man is a desperate villain, or dangerous to the public, naturally he is put in prison on arrest before trial; but for many of the lesser crimes, after arrest, a man may return to his friends until he appears before the judge. His case is at once handed over to one of the philanthropic societies for investigation, and all the important details about himself, his family and antecedents are recorded. In medicine, we should call this a clinical report of his case. The prisoner then stands before the judge, the society presents his case, and makes a suggestion as to the sentence, which the judge usually adopts. Thus things are in the reverse order to the programme in our country.

### THE CONDITIONAL SENTENCE.

Let us see how the Dutch system works. The great object is to prevent the prisoner from seeing the inside of the prison. From the outside he regards it with horror and fear; but once inside he finds it is not so bad, and as time goes on, he loses his sense of shame and self-respect, and does not mind if later he has to return there. For this reason they have pursued two distinct lines of treatment. First there has been PROBATION, for very many years. This method, well recognized to-day in all countries, often cures the case. Secondly, comes the system of "CONDITIONAL SENTENCE." Under this system the prisoner is sentenced for, say, six months, but the sentence is not executed at once. He is put on probation and if he goes straight for two or three years, the sentence



may be remitted or cancelled. But suppose he repeats his offence and again gets six months, then he must serve the first sentence also, that is one year in all. It is a very sensible system, as no normal man wants to live in crime ; yet any man, after his first acquaintance with prison, is so conscious of the contempt he is subjected to, that a "don't care" mental attitude may supervene and help him on the downward grade.

### PROBATION.

Probation is a much stricter process in Holland than in our country. If Jack Smith, or Jan Steen, led the prisoner astray, one condition is that the probationer must avoid him entirely. He must be home by 10 o'clock and keep away from cinemas ; he must not be out of work, and generally follow a model existence. As a national feeling to help these unfortunate men prevails, there is no persecution of the first offender.

By contrast in our own country, it is very unfortunate that young first offenders are put in a prison, such as Wandsworth gaol, awaiting trial and sentence, which latter may be to Borstal. They are broken-hearted for a day or two, but soon become so case-hardened that prison then has no terrors for them and that may be why they often return. Sixty-five per cent.<sup>1</sup> of Borstal boys are supposed not to return to prison in their first two years of freedom, but the percentage, though not quoted, in Holland is thought to be higher. In any case the ex-prisoners are allotted to the care of permanent committees.

---

<sup>1</sup> These statistics are regarded as unreliable by court missionaries. Thus, a boy may pass the last year of his sentence in a situation outside, and in any case the first two years after his release he is under supervision. What about the later years when supervision ceases ? Making all allowance for the hopeless material and wishing them success, we feel it is misleading to make statistics of this character.



## THE PENAL COLONY.

The Ministry of Justice are considering special treatment for psychopaths and the weak-minded, who are not bad enough to be certified. At the same time they are making another experiment towards "reclam," at the penal, or social colony of Veenhuizen, near Assen, where there is a large prison, formerly used as a workhouse, and they have put down some huts on the estate quite apart from the general crowd. This colony is described in a former work,<sup>1</sup> and was visited and approved by Elizabeth Fry a century ago. It is penal in the sense that men are sentenced to it for small offences, such as tramping, and, like Merxplas, it is really a beggar colony. The colony is practically self-supporting, and successfully fills the gap between prison and petty crime. As in the sister colony of Merxplas, near Antwerp, the inmates cleared waste land, turned it into farms and even dug the necessary canals. The only hardship in their lives, if it can be termed such, is that they must do a fair day's work, but there is nothing resembling the prison life in either place. One of our prison commissioners objected to the men sleeping in "cages." Fifty or more men sleep in long wards, each enclosed in a strong wire cage. This is a very sensible precaution, and in case of fire the warden on duty pulls a bolt which releases every lock.

In Holland, a very careful selection has been made by a lady, of about fifty prisoners who are not considered suitable for prison ; that is to say, they are criminals by accident, not evil in heart or design. These are quartered at Veenhuizen, quite apart from the other inhabitants. They intermingle and have their meals together as in an ordinary home, and go out to work in the fields without any guards. They are on their honour and do not

---

<sup>1</sup> "Unfinished Man," Chapter XIV.



violate it and the experiment is so far successful. They never come in contact with the colony inmates, who are a lower grade.

### THE PRINCIPLE OF SENTENCES.

It may seem strange to hold a theory that prison is not suitable for certain individual criminals, or that they are not suitable for prison ; yet such is the case. Some are in trouble because they have what is called or mis-called, the criminal mind. Among that class we have financiers, who for years have given intellectual effort to rob the public. On the other hand, there are men who have sincerely tried to live correctly, but some temptation has suddenly overpowered them. These will not repeat the offence and will make good. They are not a public danger, and are entitled to forgiveness, always provided they are willing to make restitution if possible. It is this class who find favour in Holland, and the same efforts are being made in Birmingham, under the able management of the medical staff.

Before the war one of our Home Secretaries consulted the Salvation Army, who were prison experts, as to whether anything could be done to help some of the prisoners. The Army, from their long experience, suggested that where a medical officer found a man deteriorating mentally, if it were possible to release him the Army would care for him. It is quite evident that prison is a great destructor when applied to refined and sensitive natures, and the Army made several suggestions which that Home Secretary adopted, and he made use of their colony at Hadleigh. This colony is now used for training emigrants before they go abroad.

There is practically no remission of sentence in Holland, but if a prisoner promises well, they let him pass the last third of his sentence in an institution, Protestant or Catholic, on probation so as to get on a level with civic duty. The Salvation Army gets its full



share ; some are quartered in their city refuges, while others go to their farm. Unfortunately, some men are so bad that they have to swallow the last dregs of their bitterness.

In Holland, up to five years, prisoners are kept in solitary confinement, theoretically not speaking to their fellow-prisoners, though they may converse with others, and are sympathetically treated in this respect. If the sentence be longer than five years, they may go to the prison at Leeuwarden, and there they may associate and converse ; but strange to say, some prefer to stay where they have been for years, even submitting to the silent and cellular system. Thus prison becomes home after years of mental weakening, and they prefer to endure the ills they have than fly to others they know not of.

### THE SALVATION ARMY FARM COLONY.

The Salvation Army Farm Colony was commenced twenty-six years ago, and has been under the sole charge of Brigadier Stel and one captain for twenty-five years.

It is called a Landkolonie, and is at De Groote Batelaar, near Lunteren. The country round, though flat, is beautiful, and as it is one of the highest parts of the country, the colonists get extensive views and invigorating air. I remarked how both the windmills, and the storks had disappeared, having found them very attractive since my first visit to Holland, when I tramped with a knapsack at the age of 19. To-day windmills are being replaced by motors, worse luck for the artist ; while the storks are being ousted by the herons, which live in colonies, and are very aggressive. A stork is not quarrelsome, for many which have been injured and attended to by the farmers, continue to remain as pets. The storks usually hold a large congress about two days before their departure, to fix the time ; and then they all



leave at the same time, even to the hour, flying to North Africa, where we have seen them in early spring. Swallows go at the same date, some say on the backs of the storks, as if by coach. It is a remarkable fact that two days before the big storm and floods in the summer of 1923, all the storks and swallows left the country. Storks are evidently very stoical, because before their departure they kill the young birds, which could not make the journey.

The Dutch are deeply interested in natural history and natural phenomena, living as they do below sea level, always threatened by the forces of Nature. They foster the study of natural science in their schools and even among their young criminals. Nature is so elevating, and country life so fascinating, that the author may be excused for wandering from the main subject, the farm colony. The author has always considered that the love and study of Nature was the broad highway to salvation.

The farm building will accommodate sixty, and at the time of my visit there were forty-seven; more than half of them were ex-prisoners and six of the men were finishing their time. One was a murderer who had done twelve years in prison, and was spending two years to prepare him for his return to society. Some were here for theft; others for violence. A great many came voluntarily, to be cured of alcoholism.

After leaving the colony temptation is still very great and some fall, but they can always get readmission. The results are so successful that many good families apply for the admission of unfortunate relatives who have given way to drink. Ex-prisoners and others often seek admission and some stay for years. They can, of course, leave when they like. Would that some of our baronial estates could be utilized for such purposes, but the regeneration of fallen humanity has no commercial attractions.

At one time a number of violent men were sent here,



but they caused so much trouble in the neighbouring farms, that a police post had to be placed in the vicinity. The Brigadier, however, though he only twice sent for help, being single-handed, insisted on a better and more hopeful class of men being drafted to his care in future. Later the police left, for none of the farmers or women made any further complaints of the men. The Brigadier has no power to punish, but if a man will not conform to rules he must leave. The psychological knowledge and influence of Brigadier Stel settles all the minor brawls, and the police admit that they do not understand how he manages them. So much for the power of personality ; the Ego.

Religion and Love, the Brigadier says, are his two weapons. He had one man here who had murdered two women before he was eighteen years of age and his sentence was for life. After he had served about twenty-six years in prison, he asked to be sent here. Mr. Veenstra was visiting the colony, and one morning at breakfast-time this man arrived. A place was made for him at the table and he was received as one of the family. He remained for about two years until he was released, since when he has carried on in a very honourable way, and they are still in touch with him. It would not be fair to state where he is, but I would not be surprised if some of my readers have met him and thanked him for his services.

This farm consists of about one hundred hectares,<sup>1</sup> and is mostly corn land, but they keep 88 cows and 500 fowls as well. The Brigadier and his good kind wife and children occupy one house, and a hundred yards away is a big building where the convicts live together.

---

<sup>1</sup> A hectare is about two and a half acres.



## THE REFORMATORY AT AMERSFOORT.

*(Rijks-Oproed-ingsgesticht.)*

At Amersfoort there is an institution which is something between a reformatory and our Borstal. It is under the care of Mr. S. Visser, the Director.

Amersfoort is a beautiful old town, and I noticed, mounted in one of the squares, a large, smooth, well-scratched boulder. It was a piece of instruction in itself as it had been shaped during the last Ice-Age, perhaps in our Highlands and carried south by glaciers, some 30,000 years ago. It made a refined monument I thought, not unsymbolic of the placid Dutch mentality. The suburbs of Amersfoort consist of large villas with beautiful gardens, where the rich merchants of Amsterdam reside. It must be good to be a Hollander, for they are nearly all so wealthy and at the same time so happy, well fed and content.

The reformatory is very pleasantly situated and strangely enough without any fences, so that any of the hundred boys can run away if they wish ; but they do not, for the simple reason that it is home.

Mr. Visser, a highly-educated man, was formerly a university professor of mathematics at Utrecht. He has a most kindly face and manner and treats the boys as his own children. Three of these institutions were placed under his care, and he was given a set of strict rules here, with suitable punishments, as they were the very bad boys of the Staat. These rules he ignored entirely, as he aimed at and gained the boys' confidence. No punishments were required, as he taught the boys the principle of self-government, making suitable groups of sixteen, one member of whom was responsible as monitor. These groups compete with each other, not only in games, but for honourable conduct. They have two officers over each section, one for teaching, and the other for trade instruction.

Going round the building we came to the schoolrooms,



which are well arranged and decorated with drawings and other handiwork of the boys. We visited the youngest class, containing boys of six to ten years of age, the youngest of whom was in for theft. We were greatly entertained by the two youngest going through a mimic play, which was a recitation and appeared by its expressive Dutch "yah" and "nai" to be of a disputant character. They acted very cleverly. This class was taken by Mr. Visser's son, and I asked him if I might examine their teeth, as I have great faith in the hopeful prospects for the poor if they have good teeth. Of the sixteen boys, fourteen were all sound; of the other two, each had three or four decayed molars. The high percentage of good teeth is largely due to the good milk and fresh vegetables of the country, which supply the necessary vitamins. In Holland, if a man sells adulterated milk, he is imprisoned and the fact is recorded on the shop window. Our poor are fed, or rather starved, with adulterated milk. Why is it allowed?

In another room about twenty boys were having a singing lesson and they sang very well. They also have a good band which plays at various civic festivities.

The grounds outside cover eighty hectares. They contain many gardens, and each boy has his garden. The dahlias were wonderful, which we should expect in the sandy soil of Holland. The orchard was loaded with pears and plums. Afterwards we watched the boys' sports. They have their own special club colours and play other clubs all over the country. When they go to a match they go alone and are cared for solely by friends, as no official from the institution accompanies them. Success has brought them a case full of cups and medals.

They are allowed to go into the town, while some work for families, with whom they live. For the last ten years they have all gone out to camp during the summer, and it is interesting to note that during this time there has never been a single escape. They are not accompanied by officials, but cared for by friends from outside, many



of whom are university students. By these methods an interest and friendship springs up between those outside and those within, which is a great boon for the latter in after-life, and it helps to level class distinction.

The intelligence of the boys varies considerably, as some are clever and others very dull, but these boys, all of whom have been convicted, mostly improve rapidly in their new surroundings; of course, the Director does not hide the fact that there are many disappointments among the incurables. He does not hesitate to emphasize that he only succeeds by religion and prayer.

People talk of the "indeterminate sentence" in Holland as the cause of the successful treatment of the young criminal Dutchman, but it is not exactly that. The Staat says to the Reformatory, after he has been convicted, "The boy is bad," and places him there, not for mental repression, but for genuine parental care, which, with a few exceptions, must end in reform. The Staat says, "Tell us from time to time how he is getting on, and let us know when he is eighteen, as then he should be started on his own"; but the school may claim him till he is twenty-one. It is no use talking of "indeterminate sentences." It is parental care, not prison, which is the key of the problem. The Staat takes charge of boys and girls whose parents are bad or drunken, or whose homes are miserable. Many of these boys go to Avereest,<sup>1</sup> which I have already described.

## THE OBSERVATORIUM AND REFORMATORIES

When a boy is convicted he is sent to an observatorium at Doetinchem, near Cologne, instead of sending him, as we do, to a prison. In the observatorium he is carefully studied as to character and mental development by skilled doctors and proper psychologists, and after about three months his future resort is agreed upon.

---

<sup>1</sup> See "Unfinished Man," Chapter XIV, p. 284.



The boys, some of whom are weak-minded, are divided into three classes. Imbeciles go to an asylum. Less weak-minded boys are kept at the observatorium for special training. The rest, who are normal, but probably the worst, as they have not the same excuse for their criminal tendencies, are sent to one of the five reformatories, according to their delinquencies.

Frequently, where the boys' environment has been the cause of their downfall, they are placed in private families instead of institutions. But of all the bad boys sent to the reformatories, Mr. Visser is given the worst, which fact in itself speaks for the high regard in which he is held by the authorities.

In this institution at Amersfoort all the masters are carefully chosen, and there are resident Protestant and Catholic clergy; the numbers of inmates belonging to each religion being about equal. Mr. Visser often conducts services, and at Christmas and other special days all the boys attend a service held by Mr. Visser, who endeavours to conduct it according to the basic rules of Christianity, without paying regard to the differences in the two Churches. By this means he brings forward the true meaning of charity and right living.

This reformatory more closely resembles a school than that of Avereest, where we find the older boys of bad character learning trades. At Leiden and at Rotterdam they have boys' institutions or prisons for more serious offences, but whichever reformatory or prison you visit the same medicine is always prescribed—religion. We cannot afford to scoff, for our intelligence teaches us to judge by results. I did not see one sulky or unhappy face; instead, when the boys are called up they present themselves in a respectful, cheerful manner, without saluting or standing at attention, for it is impressed upon them that they are not under military discipline. I was immensely pleased with the whole affair from the humanitarian and psychological side.

When a boy leaves he is looked after, not by police or



officials, but by a voluntary after-care association. The same applies to adult prisoners on leaving jail, and it is a great advantage to the convicts to cut apart from all officialdom; and that is what Mr. Veenstra emphasized to me.

### JUVENILE MURDERERS AT THE DISPOSAL OF THE STAAT.

Mr. Visser has had three murderers, each under 16 years of age. They were too young for prison and so went to the reformatory. And here it might be well to say that some of the boys are kept separate except in the playground, in order to prevent bad boys contaminating those who are less bad. These murderers are "at the disposal of the State" like all the others, but in addition they get a sentence, which does not begin until they are 21 years of age. If their conduct is exemplary their sentence can be postponed, and they are put on probation under a carefully chosen officer, while if they continue to go on well, they may be returned to society without fulfilling their sentence.

To be at the disposal of the State is not a sentence or a judgment, as the Staat retains them as parent, not as a policeman. The one thing that seemed to me unfortunate is that after the age of 18 the young prisoner is not sent to a reformatory, but to prison.

### SALVATION ARMY BOYS' HOME.

At Amersfoort, the Salvation Army have a large house and take in boys from any age up to 18. The youngest was 6 years old. They are as free to move about as if they were in an ordinary family, for the bigger boys go out to work in the town, and the younger boys go to school. Their house is well appointed and the dormitories are carefully arranged according to their ages. They are chiefly boys from bad homes and most are sent by the Staat. A Salvation Army Captain and his wife take



care of them, making a very happy family, not unlike the Salvation Army Homes in our country and the Colonies. It is a useful work, saving so many lives, starting them fair when older and keeping in touch with them in their later lives.

### THE PRISON AT AMSTERDAM.

This prison is situated outside the city, beyond the Rijks Museum. In a flourishing country like Holland one observes the continual expansion on the outskirts of the towns. Cities like Leyden, or Haarlem, which were walled in when I tramped as a boy, are now embedded in a thick growth of middle-class suburbs. What impressed me was the numerical increase of the middle-class in all countries ; which indicates that they must be the real strength of the country. The very poor count for nothing ; for although they breed quickly, they die quickly, as the Fates are always against them. American statisticians claim to have demonstrated that the artisan class propagate with five times increase over the educated class, so that it is only a question of time as to when the latter will be swamped out.

The population of Holland is numerically small, but it is democratic, and the large, industrious middle-class element gives the country a standing out of proportion to its size.

The prison at Amsterdam is built in starfish pattern, three storeys high, and the cells are airy, measuring about 10 by 12 ft. and 10 ft. high.

The spiritual care of the population inside a prison in Holland seems to receive as much attention as their temporal needs. Once a week the ministers of the varying religions meet the Director in the prison board-room, to discuss cases and arrangements for prisoners who are to be discharged. I was struck with the bold experiment of giving up the grille system, which produced a thrill of horror in my mind at Granada. In Holland the prisoners



and their friends may sit together in an ordinary room, but this implies special care in only admitting the right and proper people. They are allowed books and to hang pictures in the cells, and they may keep pets, such as birds or white mice. In one cell a siskin was flying about, while an old cock sparrow was taking life easily in an open cage. We have hardly forgotten the time when it was an offence for a prisoner to tame a mouse or a rat in his cell. Sometimes it led to very serious results. To-day these rules are swept away and with a better class of warders, everything is done to lessen the hardships of prison. We now have young University men taking charge of juveniles, instilling fine ideals and letting light into the darkened chambers of their minds.

Certain cells in this prison are larger and are used for workshops, where the most up-to-date machines for printing, bookbinding, shoe-making and other trades have been installed. We are too poor in this country or too disinterested to be able to afford good machines, so we send the men out quite as helpless as when they came in. There are signs of improvement on our side, but we must not be too critical as our Government is always up against the trade unions. The Dutch train their prisoners to a standard of efficiency equal to that of the workman outside, and they find very little difficulty in placing them in some position or other. The same applies to their reformatories, where every boy is taught a trade properly.

The solitary and silent systems are employed at Amsterdam. The men wear masks, that is small linen curtains on their faces, pierced with eyeholes, so that they never recognize each other, and they are supposed not to talk. But talk they do, sometimes by lip movements, sometimes by tapping on the water pipes which run from cell to cell; evidently these men use their wits and gain some practical knowledge of acoustics:

They never exercise in groups as our men do. Each man is allowed an hour a day in the open, but he is



always by himself in a bricked enclosure. A schoolmaster, a man of wide outlook and culture, is in constant attendance, but on account of the solitary system, he can only teach one at a time.

The chapel is composed of cubicles, holding one hundred and forty prisoners, and is used for the Lutheran and Catholic services. The altar belonging to the latter has a curtain in front when not in use. There is another chamber for the Jews.

The warders appear to be a good class of men and they help the prisoners whenever they can.

Other Dutch prisons, reformatories and schools have been already described in "Unfinished Man."



## Chapter XVIII

---

### SUMMARY

PENOLOGY IN BELGIUM.

LOUVAIN.

ST. GILLES.

ANTHROPOLOGIE PÉNITENTIAIRE.

The Ethnic Factor.

The Laboratory and Method of Examination.

*Déséquilibration mentale.*

The Penitentiary System.

The Legal Methods.

The Principles of Imprisonment.

Merxplas.

The School at Moll.

The Juvenile Prison at Moll.

### PENOLOGY IN BELGIUM.

IN "Unfinished Man" I have rather fully described the excellent systems in Belgium for protecting the young from joining the criminal ranks, but I omitted an account of the penal establishment at Louvain, which I visited in 1908.

### LOUVAIN.

In this prison there are three grades :—

(1) *Réclus* : In this grade the convict is always alone in his cell, except for one hour daily, when he exercises in a small court.



(2) *Travaux forcés* (hard labour).

(3) *Perpétuité*, or the whole life in prison. This was not penal servitude for life, as we have it, but prison till death intervenes.

The cells are large and airy, about twice the size of our cells and well furnished, with good comfortable beds, a chair, table, or a desk; in fact, just what the prisoner desires to make life bearable in the distressing circumstances.

In one cell I found a very refined man, one of Nature's gentlemen, who was a "lifer" and had already been in prison twenty-nine years and must remain there till death liberates him. It was *une chose d'amour* (a love affair), which had ended in a murder. The Belgians are more strict than the French in this class of case, for it is their big problem. This man was very sad, for although everyone was kind to him, he did want his liberty; in fact, he said he felt like a bird in a cage. He was an artist and gave me two lovely paintings.

I had the privilege of going round with the head of the Government in penal matters, and I offered to take this poor man home with me to England, for I was sure General Booth would take care of him. But the minister said it was not possible. I felt sad, and wrote more than once to the Minister of Justice on the subject.

Now, to my joy, there is an amelioration in the law. There may be prison for life for murder, but after ten years, not twenty as with us, the murderer may have *conditional release*. That applies in first cases. If the culprit be a *récidivist*, he may be liberated conditionally in fourteen years; in fact, Belgium is willing for *conditional release* in suitable cases of crime. Holland does the same.

On the ground floor were forges and engineer shops, where men of the *travaux forcés* were working. Most of the prisoners wear linen masks so that they cannot be recognized, and the same system is adopted in other Belgian and in Dutch prisons. It has much to commend



it, and obviates the prison being chiefly a nursery for crime, as it is in our country, where the old lag makes the acquaintance of the first offender, and on discharge they meet outside to the ruin of the junior in crime.

Another convict had been a poacher, and I should say he was a homicidal maniac. He had been well educated, but he was very brutal. Once he shot a gamekeeper, and, not satisfied, returned and poured shot into the wounded man until he was dead. He made no complaints, but would have liked his freedom.

Another murderer, aged 34, had been in for sixteen years, but would be leaving in four years. This, as usual, had been caused by a disastrous love affair. He belonged to a very low type, whereas the refined man under similar circumstances had been sentenced for life. I could not understand it.

Discipline in the prison is well maintained, and no officer may strike a prisoner. There is a good hospital, and a padded cell with blue light for cases of mania. There were fifteen soldiers within the walls of Louvain prison, their services being nominal. The warders showed every sign of kindness to the men, and I was allowed to talk to them. It is a well-ordered prison in a very quaint old city.

On leaving the prison I crossed through the old square, where four years later, in 1914, the Germans collected four hundred harmless civilians, and massacred them all in cold blood. I saw the library the Huns burnt down, they having no respect or feeling for literature or art, and I had the privilege, in 1919, of subscribing sixty-three volumes to its restoration.

In comparison with Dartmoor, the advantage seemed to be with Louvain. When I went over the former in the 'nineties, the poor men were regarded as wild beasts, and one or two have told me since that chains and brutality were in constant evidence. Dartmoor has since been changed in character, and the warders are very kind to the prisoners, who are allowed to ask them for advice



and guidance. Referring to a letter to a friend after my visit to Louvain, I find I wrote : "Louvain is the abode of despair. It is the most pathetic place I have ever visited. Pathetic because there is nothing revolting. The passions of wrath or desire for justice are never awakened, because all around is kindness, even sympathy, but it is the hopelessness. This murderer, in for life, said on leaving, 'Can you do nothing to assist me?' My offer was refused by the Director."

### ST. GILLES.

Saint Gilles is an ordinary prison at Brussels with a maximum capacity for 600 prisoners, who are housed in roomy cells. As in the prison at Louvain there is set aside, for the observation of violent cases, a cell lit with soothing blue light. The building itself, which consists of radiating blocks interspaced with exercising yards and flower beds, impressed me favourably from every point of view except one, the sanitation, which was, to say the least, primitive. However, this is not an uncommon defect in Belgian cities, and I have no doubt that it does not add greatly to the prisoners' discomfort.

The prisoners here are all working off sentences of from one to five years. A part of each day is allotted to school work but during the rest of the day they can work for themselves and earn from 10 to 15 francs,<sup>1</sup> all of which they are allowed to keep. In the exercise yard they are permitted to talk, and twice a month friends and relatives may visit them. On the whole the men enjoy a considerable amount of freedom, unless they return to the prison within three years, when certain restrictions as to the use of the canteen and tobacco are imposed. Prisoners are not supposed to be admitted under the age of 18, but at that time there were eight youths, each condemned for five years, who had not reached that age.

---

<sup>1</sup> Twenty-five francs to the pound.



## RECENT PROGRESS IN BELGIUM IN ANTHROPOLOGIE PÉNITENTIAIRE AND TREATMENT.

Between the years 1908 and 1910 I visited in Belgium the prisons, colonies of *bienfaisance* and educational establishments for those who had slipped or were likely to do so. I published an epitome in "Unfinished Man," but to-day there are further advances, as the President of the Prison Service said to me, "We are always learning and improving." At home we talk of the "road sense" as applied to those who know how to behave when driving, in contrast to the reckless and dangerous drivers. In Belgium I would say they have the "penal sense," how to help as well as to punish. At home we have the "law sense." How to measure out the law with an endeavour at precision.

The Belgians have always regarded the criminal as abnormal.

Dr. Vervaeck, a great authority on the *délinquants*, writes,<sup>1</sup> "The biologic organization of the *délinquants* differs from the normal; it is in his case inferior."

He has explored the much debated problem of size or height in the criminal population, having made 25,000 measurements. Many factors are commonly overlooked, such as race, which render comparisons between different nations difficult. This is called *le factor ethnique*. But even the different provinces of Belgium show different averages in height. Likewise the Flamands are a trifle shorter than the Walloons, making up in girth. He made a remarkable discovery that among very tall people, criminals excel in numbers as compared with ordinary people. The Belgians are a short but broad race. Their average is 1 m. 68 cm.<sup>2</sup> The groups have

---

<sup>1</sup> "La taille chez les délinquants" (34 Rue Botanique, Brussels).

<sup>2</sup> About 5 ft. 6 in. A metre is roughly 39½ in. Precisely it is 39.3708 in. Six feet equals 1 m. 83 cm.



been divided into shorts who range from 5 ft. 1 in. (1 m. 55 cm.) to 5 ft. 3 in. (1 m. 60 cm.); middles who range from 1 m. 60 cm. to 1 m. 70 cm. (5 ft. 7 in.); tall and very tall, who range from 1 m. 70 cm. to 1 m. 80 cm. (about 5 ft. 11 in.) and above. By the law of averages the mass of the population fall into the middle group. Social groups also vary according to nourishment and hygienic conditions.

In regard to these figures Dr. Vervaeck compared recruits and delinquents, both between the ages of 19 and 25:—

	Recruits	Delinquents
The "Shorts," between 5 ft. 1 in. and 5 ft. 3 in. (1 m. 55 cm. and 1 m. 60 cm.), inclusive, the criminals show a lower percentage ... ..	13.50 per cent.	11.65 per cent.
The "Middles" are between 5 ft. 3 in. and 5 ft. 7 in. (1 m. 60 cm. and 1 m. 70 cm.), inclusive. Delinquents are again lower ... ..	63.48 per cent.	55.91 per cent.
The "Talls," between 5 ft. 7 in. and 5 ft. 10½ in. (1 m. 70 cm. and 1 m. 80 cm.), approximately; inclusive ... ..	22.13 per cent.	30.59 per cent.
Criminal "talls" are in great excess over the normals and when we go to superior "talls," who are over 5 ft. 10½ in. (1 m. 80 cm.) approximately, we find ... ..	00.89 per cent.	1.85 per cent.
Total ... ..	100.00	100.00

The criminal "talls" are more striking when examined, in detail; those between 1 m. 70 cm. and 1 m. 75 cm. represent 26 per cent. of all "talls," good and bad. When the height is from 1 m. 75 cm. to 1 m. 80 cm. the difference rises to 95 per cent. and when we compare heights above 1 m. 80 cm. the criminals are in double the number to the recruits. Dr. Vervaeck concludes: "The tall figures (tailles) are more frequent in our prisons than among the Belgians in general." Why? Are they sports or overgrown weaklings without resistance? This problem is still open to discussion.



It has been observed by him that the growth of the criminal is slower, and the age at which it ends is earlier in the criminal. There is what he calls "a precocity of senile regression" in the criminal. Thus comparing in the different Belgian provinces the growth between the ages of 19 and 25, where the average normal increase may be 10 mm. that of the *détenus* would be 4 mm. and so on.

Belgium has adopted a new system. At the prison of Forêt or Forest, in the suburbs behind the prison of St. Gilles, there is established *Une Laboratoire d'Anthropologie Pénitentiaire*. This laboratory was established in 1911, when the prison was built. The prison holds 420 prisoners, of whom 170 are female. The women do the cooking and washing, and are attended to by a lady doctor. The cells of the prison are large and airy, and the prisoners work either alone in cells, or in groups. They are very kindly treated, for although talking is not allowed, the attendants are not very strict. Health is well attended to, and I saw open wards where tubercular patients lie in the fresh air by day and go back to roomy cells for the night. Every form of medical treatment, which includes the aid of specialists, is available.

Prisoners come here before trial—*prévenus*—and every prisoner after conviction—*condamnés*—comes here for an extensive examination.

Dr. Vervaeck and Dr. Galot are in charge; in fact they originated a very complete dossier. When the dossier is completed it accompanies the prisoner to the particular jail, and if he returns to prison is again made use of. The dossier is too voluminous to copy, but here are a few of the headings. It takes five hours to fill one up, and specialists are called in on obscure matters.

*Details (in brief) :—*

The prisoner's past history and character.

His own account of the crime.

An account of the crime from others.

His family history fully given.



His education.

Any predisposing condition, like a bad home, unfortunate conditions as regards parentage, &c.

Heredity.

Medical examination.

Anthropological examination.

Social examination.

Examination as to temperament.

(1) Nervous, (2) bilious, (3) sanguine (4) lymphatic and mixed.

From observations and reports I thought this very informing and useful, and I was pleased to find that they do not ignore temperament as old-fashioned.

Psychology and *déséquilibre mentale* are very thoroughly treated. They investigate will, sentiment, morality, laziness, negligence, amiability, coldness, tolerance, exaltation, fanaticism, &c. The intellectual qualities and symptoms, which are mental, are carefully analysed, and if feeble they are labelled (D.M.) *débile mentale*.

Let me quote one case examined by Dr. Galot: An undersized boy of 20, of peasant class, was accused of stealing five cows with an older man of 30. Each accused the other, and the elder one got off, while this boy was sentenced to nine months' imprisonment. The doctor would like to have put him in a good family, as the poor lad had never known proper family life, but such was not within his power. The war broke out when he was 7, so he never went to school, but instead had to work hard and was badly fed. There did not appear to be any alcoholism in his parents' history. It was a case of being born of too old parents, plus hardship in childhood. His father was 67, that is he was 47 at the boy's conception; rather too old. The mother was 63, so she was 43 when she conceived; again much too old. The boy was in good health, but as in many of these bordering on D.M., the nervous symptoms were characteristic. His tendon reflexes, including the abdominal, were exaggerated, while his cutaneous reflexes were very slow. In



fact, the doctor drew a piece of pointed card across his conjunctiva without his wincing his eyes, a test I had never seen before in such cases. He also probed the pharynx with a glass rod without evoking any reflex. He was of nervo-lymphatic temperament and suffering from non-development. The doctor thought it kindest to send him to the Prison École Agricole at Merxplas, as he had not enough intelligence to learn a trade.

Let us now consider something of the *système pénitentiaire*.

The Belgian legal system is very different from ours.

In Belgium we may find a judge only 25 years of age. Such a thing is unheard of with us. True, they say if a case is complicated they must have an experienced judge, but that system is an answer to our contention that we must seek our judges from amongst experienced advocates, instead of their having a well-balanced mental training. Our judges may subconsciously be advocates still, and sometimes come in for cruel criticism.

In the embryonic stage a young barrister may be appointed *Substitué du Procureur du Roi*. He works under the *Ministère de Justice Publique*.

His next step is to be *Juge d'Instruction*, when he prepares the case and collects the evidence for and against. He may decide there is no evidence, and has power to liberate the accused, but he may not judge and give a sentence.

He now retires, and passes on all information to the *Cour d'Assises*; which condemns or liberates the accused.

If the accused is not satisfied, he may appeal to the *Cour de Cassation* on questions of law; or he may go to the *Cour d'Appel* to ask the President of the Tribunal to consider some special circumstances, or finally he may appeal for mercy to the King.

The system appears to me to be well balanced, for it endorses the principle that if we are normal our behaviour will be correct, and if through our ancestry and circumstances for which we are not responsible we have gone



astray, surely at headquarters we may obtain mercy and consideration.

The principles of condemnation are as follows: prisoners who receive up to five years are subjected to *prison correctionnel*. Those who are sentenced to five to ten years undergo *réclusion*, or penal servitude, and fall into the group of *prison criminelle*—a distinction without a difference; while those who have more than ten years must submit to *travaux forcés* at Louvain.

After five years discipline is relaxed. Till then it is silent and cellular; both of which are debatable questions on account of the mental torture they cause during such long periods. The object of such treatment is to prevent the contamination of young, first criminals, by *récidivists*. It is a big problem. Belgium says, let us protect the first convicted from the *récidivists*. The enthusiasts, forgetting it is prison, say let them all have a good time. I have seen the free intercourse in Spanish prisons and I think it is a great danger to the young criminals.

In Belgium, after ten years the prisoners may remain where they are, or they may go to Louvain, where there is free intercourse. The President tells me that the majority prefer to stay where they are. It is home to them. Can anyone imagine the mentality of a man who has been ten years in a prison cell? Would not the convict prefer the lethal chamber in most cases? We are relaxing the silent system to a large extent; as a matter of fact the authorities never did enforce silence very strictly, but now the prisoners may talk as they like to those in charge, who are a much better class than some years ago.

### *Merxplas.*

In 1910, when I visited Merxplas, it was a huge colony with 6,000 inmates.<sup>1</sup> All is now changed. It consists of :—

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* "Unfinished Man," Chapter XV.



(1) A depot of mendicity.

(2) *Un établissement pénitentiaire, une prison école agricole.* This department is a prison, but not on rigorous lines. Its purpose is to teach agriculture scientifically to young *condamnés* between the ages of 18 and 21, which gives the prisoner a chance of a start in life equal to that of his fellows.

(3) A prison for epileptics; in reality a sort of home farm and hospital combined.

(4) Prison for *débiles mentaux*, who are not sufficiently responsible to go to prison.

(5) A sanatorium for prisoners affected with T.B.

In Merxplas and in some of the Belgian prisons and schools, they follow the American system of having *cercles* or communities, in which a group chooses a president and other officers and carry on *self-government*.<sup>1</sup>

A case at Merxplas was told to me of where a boy, who was due for freedom, had no money. The other boys subscribed and the lad duly repaid out of his wages. Such cases are common.

Now we see the advantage of the skilled doctor at the Observatorium and Laboratory at Forêt. Having kept a prisoner, perhaps six weeks, perhaps six months, it is decided to send him where he has the best chance of making good. If he is tubercular—Merxplas. If he is young and pliable—the *prison école industriel* at Ghent. If he is a peasant to the *prison école agricole* at Merxplas. If he is a *récidivist*, it must be prison.

Behind all is the principle of conditional freedom.

The Belgians never imprison a boy under the age of 18. Under 18, boys are dealt with by a special judge, formerly called a *juge des enfants*. After 18, they may be sent to prison or to an institution.

They send difficult cases to Moll for observation, but ordinarily, after thorough analysis, a boy under 18 goes through a course of education.

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* Chapter XXII on "Prisons in America."



*Moll.*

Moll is a small unimportant town, about 40 miles to the south-east of Antwerp. It is next to the historic district of Gheel, which I visited forty years ago.

Gheel was a colony, covering about 10 square miles, where the peasants received lunatics in their families. These mental invalids were brought to Gheel, owing to the prevalent belief in the efficacy of a saint who had the power of curing mental diseases. This effort of at least 1,000 years or more has now developed into a laboratory and observatorium, where patients are first dealt with before being distributed among the peasant families.

The history of Gheel is so romantic that it is hardly necessary to apologise for introducing its rise. Towards the end of the sixth century, Dymphne, the daughter of an Irish king, fled with her confessor, Géréberne, to Gheel, to escape the incest of her father. The king traced his daughter to Gheel and his soldiers assassinated the elderly priest, while he decapitated his own daughter. Thus Dymphne became a martyr, victim of her chastity, and so became canonized as a saint.

Pilgrimages were made to the spot and miraculous cures were effected by prayers to the virgin martyr. Among the cures was one of insanity, where reason was completely restored, which led to Sainte Dymphne becoming the special patroness of the aliénés or insane. The legend is preserved locally and a chapel was erected on the spot of the murder. Five hundred years later a monumental church was built, and on May 15 of each year, that is on the anniversary of the decapitation, there is a special pilgrimage of the faithful. As the insane got so numerous they could not be sheltered in the church, and gradually the hamlets around absorbed the pilgrims.

The aliénés stayed nine days for a cure, sometimes eighteen. They were boarded out, visiting the sacred well frequently. Nine seems the chosen number of the



Catholics, the cure at Lourdes taking nine days ; just as seven is the number of the Jews.

We see here the earliest benevolent treatment of the insane. When I visited it about forty-six years ago it was to see what kindness and more liberty could do for the insane. I was prompted to make the visit by Professor Clouston, who worked on similar lines as far as law would allow, and to-day under Professor Robertson, Morningside Asylum in Edinburgh is the best institution of its kind in the world. Two-thirds of the cases are voluntary without certification.

The "school" at Moll is not under the prison administration, but under the Minister of Education. It is situated about a mile outside the town, surrounded by pine woods and rough common land.

My elder daughter accompanied me, and we were received at the front door by one of the officials who acted as *concierge*. Children or boys might arrive any hour of the day or night in the charge of police officials, and naturally they would be in a state of suspense or fear. It was his important duty to dispel those feelings and show at once the affection and friendship which existed between the officials and those in their care. The whole atmosphere was charged with kindness and love.

The preceding night, at half past ten, a boy of about 10 had been brought by the police. To-day we saw him smiling and confident—he was busy writing a letter home. In the waiting room was a handsome blue-eyed Pole, with ruddy hair, about 16 years of age, who was sent for observation by the *Juge des Enfants*—because he was wandering about Antwerp penniless. He was happy.

The programme is to keep the new arrival apart from the other boys during three days for observation.

During this time boys are examined medically and mentally and for character—all available details, on the same line as at the observatorium, are collected for reference.



The building is divided into two sections, one for Walloons, who speak French, and one for Flamands. Each section is divided into three pavilions. In one pavilion were the children who had not reached puberty, ranging from the age of 7.

In the next pavilion were boys in the stage of evolution, while the third group contained older, mature boys.

The director emphasized the importance of separating the boys on this principle.

Each pavilion is an entity in itself, and the boys are encouraged to be self-governing—each taking up some special duty, for which he is made responsible—such as the care of the garden and courtyard, or sweeping the class-room, or attending to the books, or the singing in chapel, and so on.

There is one wide corridor into which the various rooms open: the class-room, workshop, dining or living room; and upstairs the long dormitory where they sleep in airy cubicles.

In the class-room were the headmaster and two junior teachers.

The whole building can accommodate 250 boys, but the population is necessarily constantly shifting. Every effort is made to restore the boy to his family, if the family is good; but more difficult cases require further specialized treatment, and they may have to be sent to penitentiary schools according to their characters.

These children have had a slip in life, or they may be abandoned, or come from a bad home, and are dealt with by a special official, the *Juge des Enfants*, who makes the final decision, and is responsible for them until they are 21 years of age.

The officials and the instructors combine in an entirely parental attitude, always studying the children so as to get to know their abilities, their dispositions, and their failings. It is an institution of re-education. In reality it is one large family where there are no set theories, but where each boy is treated with individual solicitude



according to his needs, and his tutors are enthusiastic to raise him to a higher level.

Space does not permit to describe the system of paper money, savings banks, theatres, recreations, character charts, &c. Each boy can at any time, by dropping a note in a box, appeal either to the director, doctor or aumonier.

Moll seems one of the most remarkable institutions of humanitarianism for assisting those who otherwise must sink below the level of proper living. May we be encouraged to work on the same lines.

I should like to report one case of psychologic-pedagogic examination at Moll. An undeveloped boy of 17, who looked only 14, was brought in. Dr. Rouvroy tested him in the following manner: he gave him an E cut out in wood; the boy, with one eye covered, had to watch the doctor moving another letter E at different angles. The boy had to place his block in correspondence with the letter held by the doctor. This he did very awkwardly, using both hands when one should have been sufficient, responding very slowly, and if the doctor moved the card rapidly, the boy failed to follow. Hearing and sensation tests were very much delayed.

One of the doctor's special tests was a square card divided obliquely and coloured, three strokes being in the upper corner and a square and two dots in the lower. After one second of vision the boy copied the strokes. after a look for two seconds he added the square, and after three the two dots. Now for the colour, which so far had not reached his perception. Though the colours were yellow, red, blue and black, yellow was the only colour he assimilated, and picking up a yellow crayon he coloured it all over.

The doctor marked this boy D.M., *débile mentale*, and fixed his mental age at 8 to 10. There were many other tests applied.

I was interested to find that the Belgian doctors did not adopt the Freudian fantasies, nor have they any use for Binet tests upon which at present we depend.



Here is a short epitome of the headings of the examination of the children at Moll.

*Fiche d'observation médicale.*

- (1) Hereditary antecedents physical and psychic, and pre-natal.
- (2) Personal antecedents.
- (3) Actual physical constitution.
- (4) Actual constitution "neurologique."  
The state of the senses, mobility and reflexes.  
Diagnosis and prognosis.  
Notes to be made later as to progress.

*Fiche d'observation psycho-pédagogique.*

General Social Antecedents.

- (1) (a) Cognition.  
Sensation and perception, attention.  
Retentive imagination—association.  
Reproductive and constructive imagination.
- (b) The expressions.  
Movement, language, written expressions.
- (c) Intellectual *connaissance*.  
Concrete and abstract intelligence.  
Inventory of acquired knowledge.  
Mental age. Diagnosis and prognosis.
- (2) Character.  
Affective conditions.  
Emotion.  
Tendencies.  
Moral conscience.  
Voluntary activity.  
Practical diagnosis and prognosis.
- (3) Professional orientation.
  - (a) Theoretical and practical instruction and its actual professional value.
  - b Preference and repulsion.



(c) Preference concerning his parents.

(d) Functional aptitudes.

(e) Indications and contradictions.

Educational, moral, familial and social.

Diagnosis (orientation general and special) and practical prognosis. Stability, endurance, perfectability, adaptation and special hygiene.

(4) General educatability.

Synthesis and proposition.

A third sheet gives a very minute personal history of the child.

### *The Boys' Prison at Moll.*

The Belgians do not send any boys to prison under the age of 18.

When I was at Gand in 1910, there were two sections for boys :—

(a) An industrial school for teaching trades in the most up to date methods.

(b) For undisciplined, immoral boys, who could not be allowed to associate with the others.

This last section is done away with, and these bad boys are sent to a special prison at Moll, and this department in Ghent is closed down. More amenable cases are sent if Walloon to St. Hubert, or if Flamand to Russelyde or Rechem.<sup>1</sup>

There is accommodation at Moll for 100 boys, a very, very hopeless crowd, the embryos of the apaches and récidivists ; yet in the end several turn out well. Unfortunately, many on leaving get into trouble, and are sentenced, and then have to return to the prison at Moll. At the age of 21 they must be liberated, and the Belgians are trying to pass a law to retain them until 25, if necessary.

The boys get good technical training in shoemaking,

---

<sup>1</sup> See " Unfinished Man," Chapter XV.



carpentry, iron work, smithy work, and elementary electrical engineering.

The Belgians are strong on preventive criminology, and remove children of any age from bad homes or surroundings, actually taking them in some cases from their parents. For this purpose they have schools, appropriate as to age and sex, and the State takes up a parental attitude. I have described these in "Unfinished Man," from which I borrow two pictures—figs. 38 and 39.

There is one block of prison cells for the obstinate boys, but only nine were there at the time of our visit.

There was one bare cell for any boy who refused to work, and one with blue light for cases of mania or assault. It is not open and free like the *école*. It is a prison with high walls and barred windows. The inmates correspond to the apaches of Paris, and the most incorrigible boys of our large cities. We found them well behaved and working hard, but a very rough type, such as one has no wish to meet at night.

They have an aumonier living in the prison, so that every effort is made to reform them. It seems a serious and conscientious effort to reclaim the unreclaimable.





FIG. 38.—This photograph was taken on the farm at the State school at Ruysselede in Belgium. An excellent institution for deserted and other children who have been in trouble. The State makes a good parent. I am indebted to M. Caesar Standaert for this picture.



FIG. 39.—These are girls in the Refuge at Bruges, receiving instruction in dressmaking. I am indebted for this photograph to M. Heusschen.







## Chapter XIX

---

### SUMMARY

THE FRENCH SYSTEM.

THE CONVICT PRISON AT MÉLUN.

LA PETITE ROQUETTE.

PRÉAUX.

ST. LAZARE.

FRESNES.

RELÉGUE FOR RÉCIDIVISTS.

QUARTIERS DE CORRECTION.

Interdiction Séjour.

LA SANTÉ.

METHOD OF PROSECUTION.

### THE FRENCH SYSTEM.

IT was in April, 1914, that I visited the penal institutions round Paris. I was on my way back from Davos, where I had gone with two distinguished professors to see the latest "cure" for tubercle. There the doctors had formed two camps, and the new cure was accused by its opponents of filling the cemeteries. But the public must not be too critical of medical science, for there are such complexes and unknown factors that progress is greatly delayed and oftentimes speculative.

When I reached Paris there was a *furore* at the British Embassy. They had two very important jobs on hand; one, the impending visit of our beloved King and Queen, and the other getting me into prison. In fact, they told



me they might have to hold up the former in order to deal with me first; but seriously speaking, I was deeply impressed with the personnel of the Embassy. There was that charming personality, Lord Bertie, a typical refined English gentleman, surrounded by a staff of well-born, well-educated young men. Indeed, an object lesson on good breeding. It reminds us of what Shakespeare wrote in Cymbeline :—

“Are we not brothers?  
So man and man should be:  
But clay and clay differ in Dignity,  
Whose dust is both alike.”

France has a penal system of its own. If it is decided to punish, it does so with a vengeance. The severest system is the *travaux forcés*, under which the criminals are sent to the Ile de Ré, and the French Guiana (Guyane) or to the Isle of Noumea and New Caledonia. When the convicts have finished their long, wearisome sentences, they are not allowed to return to France. They must remain in the penal colonies, and are obliged to marry women convicts.

There are prisons in those parts for the women convicts. How bad a woman must be to deserve *travaux forcés*! The daughters of Eve in France are sometimes endowed with more criminal instincts than their men and inasmuch as they are undoubtedly more astute than the English working woman, they form a more dangerous type of criminal than we find among our women.

### MÉLUN.

I was first taken to the convict prison at Méln, a pretty town south of Fontainebleau. Elizabeth Fry visited this prison 100 years earlier and gave a good report of it.

This is an ordinary enclosed prison capable of taking 800 convicts. There were 630 inmates at the time of my visit, all of whom were what we term convicts, who had



been sentenced for from five to ten years. The prisoners are forced to work and are encouraged by payments, which they are allowed to spend at the canteen. A skilled man could earn from one to four francs a day, of which three-fifths would go to the State for his keep, while of the remaining two-fifths, half is held back until his discharge. No one can deny the fairness of this arrangement, which makes it possible for the discharged criminal to face the world with at least some money in his pocket, which he has earned himself. The building itself consists of four storeys, and in it they have adopted the cellular system for sleeping, *dortoir cellulaire*, allowing each cell 20 cubic metres of capacity; that is about 9 ft. by 9 ft. and 8 ft. high.

The youngest convict there at that date was 18, a murderer; and the oldest was 70 years of age, a chronic thief. The prison had its full quantum of murderers. The convicts were well fed on soup, vegetables and bread; a little meat being allowed three times a week. They had two meals a day, at 9 and 4, but they could buy extras at the canteen; thus a quarter of a litre of wine cost 1d.; a German sausage cost only 1½d.; while in addition there were coffee, milk and tobacco to be bought.

Silence was not enforced, nor was there any solitary confinement. About 40 per cent. could not read or write. In the workshops everything was up to date; about 140 were printing; 20 old men were making rope at which they earned 60 centimes a day; 46 were tailoring, for which they were paid 2½ francs daily. (At that period there were 25 francs to the pound.) Most of the work was for the State, but some of it was for private firms. The French term for penal servitude is *réclusion*.

### LA PETITE ROQUETTE.

La Petite Roquette is an old convent turned into a *maison de correction* for young male prisoners, of whom



unfortunately they say that 87 per cent. return to prison. The cells are roomy, 10 ft. square, with brick floors, and furnished with bedsteads. One of the prisoners, a boy of 19, was serving six months for stealing a bicycle. His father was a painter and his mother worked in a laundry, an occupation usually undertaken by a very low type of womanhood. Another young boy was a vagabond and was sentenced for four years. He would afterwards be sent to a penitentiary colony, 100 miles from Paris. There are about a dozen of these colonies in France. He was a "nervy" boy with a high palate. His father sold vegetables in the streets of Paris. One vagabond of 16 had to stay there until he was 21 years of age. A vagabond is to all intents and purposes an *Apache*.

I saw one lad of 15 who was in for stealing cheese. He was illegitimate and his mother worked in a laundry, but he was there more for prevention than punishment. A nervy boy of 17 was in at his parents' request for *correction paternelle*. He was in for the second time.

An interesting case was that of an illegitimate son of an ambassador. His mother would never let him work, being too proud of his pedigree, and hoped he would be at least a consul. He was tall and well-developed, with the handsome features of his sire, and if he had been in better surroundings from the first, he might have been a success. He, too, was of the nervous, high-palate type, possibly an inheritance from his mother, or perhaps the result of the conflicting germinal forces or interests involved in his "creation."

I was struck with the good condition of these boys' teeth. The French feed their children better than we do, and are very particular about their having good milk and fresh vegetables. The filthy milk we allow our poor to live on would not be tolerated in any other country in Europe.

### PRÉAUX.

Préaux is another prison for boys from the ages of 13 to 18, containing 508 cells. Here they rose at 7 a.m.,



and went to bed at 9.30 p.m. Being in the growing stage, they had three meals a day instead of two, as in other institutions; and they had, in addition to meat three times a week, plenty of bread, milk, peas and beans, which are more wholesome and less stimulating.

One boy of 18 whom I noticed was in for two years for stealing stamps. It was his second offence, for he had a year, previously, for stealing jewellery. He was Spanish, with the typical heavy jaws of the Spanish peasant. Another boy, about 18, was born in England, and was a *souteneur*. The *souteneur* is a very common type in Paris, and the chief detective conducting me pointed out several at work one night on the Boulevards. The *souteneur* keeps a mistress, whom he employs to entice and walk off with a victim, who is afterwards robbed or blackmailed. He is the worst pest in Paris, for it is only the scum of the gutter who will live on the immoral earnings of women. The French punish them heavily. This boy was sentenced to six months and fined 100 francs, and afterwards he would be expelled from France for five years. Presumably he will find a home in London, near Leicester Square.

### THE ST. LAZARE PRISON.

St. Lazare, which for 200 years has been a prison and will soon be demolished,<sup>1</sup> was at one time a convent and a lazaretto. Like Holloway, it housed women who were chiefly thieves, murderesses, and prostitutes. These last, the *filles publiques*, were kept apart, a precaution which seemed to me to be an unnecessary refinement. Elizabeth Fry visited this prison in 1813, and many of her suggestions were adopted. She went several times and held plain religious services with the inmates.

On one floor there were twenty-seven babies. After the age of 4 they were sent to an institution to be cared for

---

<sup>1</sup> 1927, not yet demolished.



by the good nuns. This would be better done at once, for the authorities very wisely never allow the mothers to see their children after birth.

Some of the women were "in" for eight or ten years—*travaux forcés*. One ward was full of venereal cases, arrested for not reporting themselves, and these were detained till cured.

The prisoners are cared for educationally as well as religiously by the nuns. One ward contained some thirty women sewing clothes, with a nun reading to them. Another room was occupied as a class-room, a nun teaching the prisoners. In spite of all good work the whole atmosphere was that of low moral degradation.

### FRESNES.

Fresnes is a show prison about 10 kilometres outside Paris, in the country. It is a clean, sanitary, light and airy building, accommodating 1,330 males, who are looked after by the Capuchin brothers. The cells are large, 15 ft. by 9 ft. and 8 ft. high, containing 30 cubic metres of capacity. The dress is brown or grey, while in most prisons it is dark blue. All the prisoners come here first and remain for six days to two years; thus it seems to correspond to our Wormwood Scrubs. There is an excellent canteen, and, as prisoners are paid for their work, they can buy coffee, wine, butter, ragôut, salads, haricots and potatoes—almost a Ritz in prison life.

The men rose at 6 a.m., and were allowed two meals, *petit déjeuner* at 9 a.m. and *souper* at 4.30 p.m. They then worked till 8 p.m., perhaps as an aid to digestion. Ten thousand offenders pass through here each year—(1910). Many additions have happened since.

### RELÈGUE FOR RÉCIDIVISTS.

Here I saw one man who had four months' detention for robbery. He had been in prison so often that he was identified by a red card on his cell. This meant that



at the end of his sentence he would be transported to Guyane (Guiana) and not allowed to return. He was an ugly degenerate and a *souteneur*, so he would be no loss to the country. Why not the lethal chamber?

There are other penal institutions more of a preventive character, run on very similar lines. Firm repression is a great feature in France, and perhaps the inflammable Celtic character demands it. A country without religion is rather hopeless! It may seem strange that the Salvation Army have made headway in France, and their social work is much appreciated by the authorities. Recently 200 women, on a pilgrimage to Lourdes, arrived in Paris. The priests asked the Salvation Army to take charge of them for two days!

### QUARTIERS DE CORRECTION.

I visited these, and thought many of the inmates were degenerates. The men that we call weak-minded are more degraded in type than ours; our weak-minded are more of imbeciles. I attributed this difference to our education system, which is too harsh, working for results and statistics, which weakens what little intelligence the children have; whereas these Continental folk are not rushed, but go slowly and have more of the free lance about them. Which is the worse, I cannot say.

There is one large hospital for prisoners, the Central Infirmary of Prisons of the Seine. It is very well appointed, clean and decorated with white enamel and tiles. There are 110 beds, with a guard of about thirty soldiers. The invalids appeared to me well cared for.

The French have an excellent system of *interdiction séjour* or *peine complémentaire*, by which old criminals may not reside in Paris or in the Department of the Seine for a number of years, varying from five to twenty.



## LA SANTÉ.

La Santé is a famous Parisian prison and can receive 1,800 prisoners. It is chiefly for men on arrest, *prévenus*, corresponding to our Brixton. They are detained here for weeks, or even years, as long as the inquiry lasts. It is a large prison of three storeys, built on the starfish pattern, and all the men are kept separate. There are those ugly grilles for conversation with friends, and 600 visitors come on the three days per week that visiting is allowed. On the day of my visit there were 1,362 inmates.

*Cabinets d'instruction* are provided where prisoners may consult their lawyers without supervision—an improvement on the ordinary system. The grilles consist of two wired-in receptacles, opposite to each other and sufficiently far apart to prevent anything being handed across, besides which guards promenade the passage. The whole affair certainly has something very melancholy about it.

I had the privilege of seeing the guillotine and its mode of working explained, and I fancy it is better than hanging. I left with a pressing invitation to come and witness a performance, which I have not yet accepted.

## METHOD OF PROSECUTION.

The French system of dealing with crime is interesting and different from ours. As soon as a person is arrested for a misdemeanour (*délit*), or for a crime, the *Procureur de la République* (Public Prosecutor) appoints a judge (*juge*) of *instruction*, who is charged to investigate the guilt of the accused. The *juge d'instruction* interrogates the accused, in the presence of a lawyer, *in camera*, and sends him to the *Prison de la Santé* under a *mandat* or order of *dépôt*. When the Judge's investigation is finished he renders an *ordinance* which either absolves or prosecutes the person.



For a *délit* or misdemeanour, the prisoner is prosecuted before the *Tribunal Correctionnel*, while for a crime he is prosecuted before the Court of Assize—*Cour d'Assises*.

The President of the *Tribunal Correctionnel* renders a judgment or acquits him.

The President of the Court of Assize orders an arrest, and afterwards a jury, composed of twelve, gives its verdict. Both courts have two assessors, which is an improvement on our system.

The Judge of Instruction has the right to deliver four kinds of *mandats*, or orders :—

(1) A *mandat*, or order, for release.

(2) A *mandat* to take the accused away, even using force. This is like a form of appropriation, corresponding perhaps to our warrants, and is only used in important cases. It is issued by a Judge and must be delivered by the *Procureur de la République* or his representative, with force if necessary.

(3) A *mandat* for arrest, which may be issued by what corresponds to a summons from our magistrate, and is executed by an ordinary agent of the police.

(4) A *mandat* for the accused to be placed in the *dépôt* for further investigation or trial.



## Chapter XX

---

### SUMMARY

PRISON IMPROVEMENTS IN GERMANY SINCE 1918.

Self-government.

CARE OF EX-PRISONERS.

MENTAL DEVELOPMENT OF PRISONERS.

FIRST OFFENDERS : SALVATION ARMY HOMES OF JOY.

A WOMEN'S PRISON.

### GERMAN PRISON IMPROVEMENTS SINCE 1918.

THE prison system has undergone considerable changes since the Revolution in 1918, and the endeavours of the Government officials to make penal servitude more humane have been baulked only by economic conditions. The Free States of Thuringen and Saxony are foremost in this special matter, as well as in other things pertaining to guardianship. Even Prussia has lately introduced considerable improvements. The prisoners of the first degree have been granted a certain right of self-administration, and they are given more freedom of movement when in the open. In Thuringen, as well as in Prussia, the supervision is entrusted to head men of their own class, elected by the prisoners, who are allowed to hold a general meeting on Sundays. In some of the prisons any violation of house rules are tried by a committee of prisoners. The penalties they impose are naturally subject to the Governor's confirmation, and it has been shown that where the



committee had sentenced their co-offenders too heavily the Governor was forced to reduce the sentences.

### CARE OF EX-PRISONERS.

Special attention is being paid to schemes for providing work on release, and many experiments have been made in placing ex-prisoners into temporary homes. But the experiment made by the Prison Union of Schlesien to create special homes for released prisoners has failed, whereas the two Salvation Army homes have shown satisfactory results. The Salvation Army has a home for ex-prisoners in the suburbs of Dresden, and the Government allows 60 pf. daily for each man under their care. In 1925 they dealt with 186 men, found situations for 54 and returned 46 to their families; but for want of accommodation they had to refuse nearly 400 applicants. The ex-Crown Prince of Saxony, who is now a monk, sent them a prisoner in whom he was personally interested. The young man became a Salvationist.

### MENTAL DEVELOPMENT OF PRISONERS.

Considerable attention is given to the mental development of prisoners, and great stress is laid on the moralizing effect of teaching them a trade. So far as unskilled labourers and adults are concerned, it is essential that they learn a trade. Their apprenticeship served in prison is properly recognized by the trade associations. Our trades unions will not allow prison work to be sold in the open market at any price. In some of the prisons even art schools exist, and by means of lectures and concerts much is done for the mental development of the prisoners. Strange to relate, they emphasize religious instruction. Saxons, being a superior race, Phœnician or Aryan, are not so materialistic as the Prussians.

In many places in Germany the authorities are still experimenting, but everywhere highly commendable



efforts for improvements are noticeable, and already the fear has been expressed that the sojourns in the prisons are no longer considered a penalty, but rather a pleasure, for even gymnastics and sport are included. Communications with the families are treated leniently and adapted to special conditions. By extending help from the court, as well as by official and private assistance, the dependents of the prisoners are looked after to a certain extent, and thus the prisoner is often relieved of much worry. I have heard prisoners in our country bewail the cruelty of their first few months in prison, when they are not allowed to receive any news from their families, nor their families from them. Surely this is a refinement of torture ?

#### FIRST OFFENDERS : SALVATION ARMY HOMES OF JOY.

A "Home" for first offenders was started by the Salvation Army at Hamburg and has become a recognized institution; the boys' band is frequently engaged at various festivals. All over Germany the Salvation Army have started "Homes of Joy," *Heimat-freude*; and the same for girls. In Leipzig, Königsberg and other towns, they have twenty-eight men's social centres, besides night refuges. The authorities support the Salvation Army, especially using their Boys' Homes for first offenders. Surely this kind of social work, common to both England and Germany, promoting as it does good feeling in both countries, is a very valuable asset in the cause of peace. It is interesting to remember that in Elizabeth Fry's travels she visited a boys' institution for young offenders at Hamburg.

#### A WOMEN'S PRISON.

"Somewhere in Germany" Dr. Koch has been working out an improved penal system for women. He started with a graduated system of rewards to spur them



on to better behaviour, for he aimed at improving the will power by education and inculcating obedience and discipline. Those in charge do not exhibit any feeling of revenge or repression, but by quiet, sympathetic treatment endeavour to awaken a sense of honour. The prisoners have the opportunity to earn rewards, such as the privileges of letter-writing, more visits from friends, and even better pay for work done.

The women have to work very hard, cooking, sewing and washing. They cannot build workshops for the women as they do for the men; of the former there are only 300 against 4,000 male criminals. The women are not in for such serious offences as the men; three quarters of the prisoners are here for petty thefts; others for drunkenness; and many are licensed prostitutes (*kontrole Mädchen*) who have broken regulations; some are in for procuring abortion, or for helping men in major crimes. There are very few murderesses or women guilty of robbery with murder.

One prostitute was sentenced for several years, as she had forty thefts to her account, besides procuring and other offences. She was the property, or victim, of a male *procureur*, who forced her into crime while he himself escaped free. Many prostitutes are sent to a house of correction, if it is thought there is any chance of reform. The prostitute usually suffers keen remorse, but is too soft a nature to give up her male companions on her release. In one case, the woman assisted her master in a murder, and became temporarily insane with grief, even though she had confessed all.

On the other hand it was noticed that swindlers never show any remorse. One such woman had no sense of honour. She worked hard in prison to obtain some remission of sentence, but she said: "Why live an honourable life? I will be cleverer next time."

The prisoners are allowed to talk during walks and when at work. In this way the superintendent and others in charge may gain their confidence and help them.



The most difficult of the prisoners are the swindlers and impostors. They assume such gentle natures and ingratiating manners so as to succeed in worming themselves into any social circle, where there is an opportunity of fraud.

The procuresses are the most crafty, cunning and debased ; and there are many pathetic incidents connected with them.

The prisoners are under the care of a female pastor, *Pastorin*, and attendance at church is voluntary, but it is usually well attended, and the audience are very critical if anything goes wrong. The teacher is also a woman ; in fact, the only man in the service is the doctor.

On the whole the results are as good as could be expected with such poor material ; at all events, the women go out less brutalized. The prison is not made too attractive, which is an evil to be avoided.



## Chapter XXI

---

### SUMMARY

#### SPAIN.

General Remarks.  
Boys' Prison at Alcala.  
The Workhouse in Madrid.  
The Workhouse in Granada.  
The Men's Prison in Madrid.  
The Convict Prison at Granada.  
The Women's Prison at Alcala.  
The Children's Homes.

#### PORTUGAL.

The Prison at Madeira.

#### SOUTH AMERICA.

Prisons in Chile.  
The Prison at Buenos Ayres.

### PRISONS IN SPAIN.

**S**PAIN is a beautiful country to visit, but tourists are frightened away by the long railway journeys, which frequently last from twelve to fourteen hours. We must remember that there is always a good deal of stiff climbing over mountain ranges, sometimes for hours along stony, rather uninteresting plateaux or sierras, but the tedium is often broken by the lovely scenery in the wild gorges, with rushing torrent, and lined with trees. The good soil produces abundant food, and life is far from strenuous; so that we might regard Spain as a sort of Paradise, with no room for crime; but closer inspection reveals the fact that the inherent lawlessness of the people provides the usual national problem.



The Spanish are not a pure race, being closely allied to the North African races, Arab and Berber, with a splash of Negroid blood. Perhaps they had good blood added when the Phœnicians, who built Cadiz, invaded their territory some 3,000 to 5,000 years B.C. They are supposed by Dr. Waddell and others to have been infected by a low, cannibal, serpent-worshipping people, who came from Asia Minor near Lake Van. The gipsies, whom no one has yet placed, may have come from these degenerate people, for Waddell has traced their customs and monuments both in Spain and South Ireland. It is, however, all a jumble, so that we have nothing proven to rely upon.

But not all Spaniards spring from this criminal type, any more than do all the Irish. The Spanish of the upper classes are handsome and tall, and probably spring from the Moors, Semites and Berbers. We all know that the aristocratic Jews come by intermarriage with the Moors of Spain. Such are families like the Montefiores. It is the same with man as with the lower animals. When a family of racehorses are too inbred, losing strength and character, they must be crossed or refreshed with an allied race, like the pure Arab horse, to restore them. Any other breed of horse would only hasten their decay or impoverish them. This principle in the human family leads either to enrichment or decay.

The Phœnicians planted themselves along the shores of the Mediterranean right into Spain. Here we may have the source of the proud, haughty Grandees, although some cry down the Phœnicians as an inferior race. To-day the upper classes are very able, and, speaking from experience, charming and courteous; while the poorer Spaniards are best avoided, being dishonest and treacherous. There seems in them an explosive element which is easily provoked to violent crime. In the country districts there are great chances of robbery and murder without much fear of detection, for it would be too dangerous to risk arresting criminals in these distant



villages. Whilst the towns are interesting and the galleries full of art, one always has a feeling of being among a people who have had their day. They are finished. As we move about we are always conscious of this decadence; and the signal of their decay was their loss of sea power. Let us take warning.

Sir Francis Drake, who was born at Tavistock in 1539, wrested the supremacy from Spain, by what he called "singeing the King's beard." He was a sporty adventurer and in his small wooden ships attacked the Spanish vessels which were laden with gold. If the Spanish took our men prisoners, they, like the savages, tortured and killed them. Not so Drake. He only killed two Spaniards, who murdered one of his envoys, a young negro. With true British sportsmanship he was never guilty of a mean action. It is noteworthy that Queen Elizabeth nearly always went halves in his profits. After singeing the king's beard pretty well, he defeated the Armada in 1588.

### *Boys' Prison at Alcala.*

It was May day when I visited this prison in Alcala, two hours' ride from Madrid. The surrounding country is pretty and well wooded, and I stood outside on the gangway of the carriage enjoying the air and admiring the scenery, when, as we approached the station, I was nearly knocked off the train by four young men who tumbled on top of me. They were evidently scoundrels, as they dashed with great haste into the country. The two armed guards, whom you see on every railway platform in Spain, promptly appeared and fired on the retreating youths. Three got into the woods and one came tamely back and was arrested. An event of this sort is so common a sight in Spain that it hardly attracted any notice from the holiday crowd.

The Alcala institution corresponds to our Borstal, and is an ordinary walled-in prison for young adults aged from 16 to 23. Out of the 342 boys, 60 were murderers.



which seems rather a high percentage. I investigated about thirty cases and most of them were for robbery. If their sentences are not completed when they are 23 years of age they go to another reformatory, and if not finished at the age of 30 they are sent to an ordinary prison. The crimes here were chiefly robbery with violence. Violence in Spain has always been a serious crime, and it is thought wiser, as a matter of prevention, to punish heavily. Even small thefts are severely dealt with, which I thought was very questionable. Thus one boy had five years for stealing something worth as many shillings, which makes it seem more worth while to steal heavily while one is about it. Another misguided youth had eight years for throwing a bomb. Most of the thieving occurs in the first three months of the year, when it is cold and wet and more comforts are needed.

The boys do not wear an ugly dress, but dark-grey suits with round caps. They are taught various trades in the latest methods, and there is free social intercourse, a genial feeling with their officers prevailing. They have two meals a day: at 9.30 a.m. *café-au-lait* and bread; and at 6 p.m. dinner, consisting of vegetables, rice and a little meat. They are not allowed alcohol. Scientific anthropometric methods are used, chiefly finger prints. There is a canteen and the prison has its own paper currency, which cannot be used outside. The boys spend about 500 pesetas<sup>1</sup>, or about £20 a week altogether.

#### *The Asile de Bienfaisance at Madrid.*

In one particular the Spanish are, or rather have been, ahead of us, that is in some of their workhouses, though ours have improved immensely in the last twenty years.

The Asile de Bienfaisance, or Refuge of Mercy, at Madrid, is in the suburbs in a picturesque setting, with several blocks according to classification. On entering

---

<sup>1</sup> A peseta is a silver coin corresponding to a franc.



the grounds we come on a one-storeyed block, where 200 girls, aged from 15 to 19 years, sleep ; while there is another block for the same number of boys from the ages of 6 to 16. The schools are excellent and I was very pleased with the way that everything was carried out. I met one of the schoolmasters, a well-educated man, who was deeply interested in character formation among his pupils ; and I must say these rough Spanish boys seemed more hopeful than many of our poor.

There is a separate block for old people and a row of small houses in flats, where married couples can live till they end their days. Naturally there is a great competition for these, and many have been there for ten or fifteen years. In Spain, poverty is not a crime, as in England, and in consequence the religious orders undertake the work of making everyone as happy and content as possible.

The vagrants are kept quite apart, being well scrubbed on entry and their clothes baked. I have never seen a finer workhouse than this and it is to be hoped that we shall start cleansing our tramps and sorting the poor into different classes. Our workhouses have been, and some still are, penal institutions.

### *The Hospicio or Workhouse at Granada.*

What a contrast is the old workhouse in that famous city of Granada, adorned with the wonderful Alhambra ! This workhouse was built in the time of Isabella and Ferdinand. In reality it was a prison for any who were troublesome, or poor, or destitute. There was no chance of escape as the walls were so high and thick. Isabella did not like meeting paupers when out driving ; hence she commanded that this institution should be built. Though there were separate wards for lunatics and imbeciles, the large lofty chambers and courts on the ground floor contained an incongruous and unhealthy assort-



ment of degenerates, children, boys and girls, tramps and criminals, all mixed up, looking after each other. A few do leather and cabinet work, shoes and other like crafts, for which they make charges.

Two idiots arrived the day before our visit. They were brothers, aged over 40, who had never seen daylight till the present time. The father had died a few days previously and all their lives these imbeciles had been confined in a dark underground chamber. They were terrified and blinded on being brought into daylight by the police. They had no language or speech and only uttered sounds to indicate surprise, fear or pleasure. They stood only about 4 ft. 2 in. and had to be handled like young wild animals.

This institution enjoyed the name of *Hospicio casa de locos y locas*. Some of the inmates were fearful to look at. One with black hair and eyes, and bad features, came from the mountains, and his upbringing was not too good, for his parents murdered an old woman. The mother was in prison for the offence, while the father escaped. What an apprenticeship for a tramp.

Upstairs there was a children's ward with 143 infants at the time of our visit, and 32 babies. Everything was spotlessly clean and perfect. The milk was very good.

On the ground floor one of the outside windows was left open day and night with a revolving basket for unwanted babies to be dropped in. A nun or novice sat inside to receive it and no questions were asked, nor was the donor seen or questioned. This is an excellent system and does away with the criminal negligence of the unwelcome illegitimate children, while it keeps the frantic mother from committing murder. Probably, with our falling birth-rate, in another twenty years we shall follow Spain's example. The State pays about 30s. a month to foster parents, while the cost of this institution falls on the province; not on the State, nor yet on the town.



*The Men's Prison at Madrid.*

This is a new model cellular prison and is built on the plan of a starfish, with a central bureau for observation along the five radiating corridors and the four tiers of cells. The cell doors were always kept open except at night, and the prisoners mixed freely. Some were shaving, some were playing cards, but none seemed to be working. They wore their own clothes, and depended largely on their friends for supplies both of food and clothing. They seemed a low lot, and I was sorry to see children of 8 to 12 years of age kept here temporarily until they could be moved into reformatories. The children are usually there for small thefts. This prison is for sentences of two or three years. The men do not suffer from melancholia or prison insanity (paranoia), as often occurs where cellular confinement is followed up *de rigueur*.

*The Convict Prison at Granada.*

This is for "lifers." It is an old convent in a narrow street, which is guarded by soldiers outside. It is very pathetic on entering to see these "lifers" talking to their wives and children through a double grille, so that they cannot reach each other. There were about ten convicts on one side, and more than that number of friends on the other side, each bawling and yelling. I could not think how anyone could hear. It was to me a heart-breaking sight.

The officers were handsomely dressed and armed with rapiers. We moved freely inside the prison, talking to the men who in themselves seemed very undesirable, being mostly murderers, and regarded as both hopeless and dangerous. They really looked as if nothing would ever soften them.

The Spanish have a curious way of arranging sentences, which may range from fifteen to twenty years for the murder, five to ten years for the robbery, and perhaps five for the assault, which, being added together, make



twenty-five to thirty years in all. Some stay in for those long periods, some even for life, but there is remission for good conduct and great attention is paid to the hopeful cases. They sleep anywhere, sometimes in beds, at other times in the yards or under walls—*chacun à son goût*.

In this prison there were 440 men, and the youngest was aged 18. The food was sufficient but certainly not luxurious, and they were allowed two meals a day, breakfast at 8 a.m. and dinner at 5 p.m.; the latter consisted of a mixture of ham, beef, mutton or veal with vegetables. No wine was supplied except on cold days and there was no coffee or milk; but there was a canteen where they could spend the money which they earned at their various trades. The monetary exchange of the canteen consisted of paper, stamped on squares, each square being a peseta, and it was private to the prison and not negotiable elsewhere.

There were only some six cells for punishment, but they were empty at my visit; new cases were, however, kept here separately for six months for observation. In addition to various workshops there was a school and a chapel, and attendance at both of these was compulsory. Furniture and other articles manufactured in prison were sold freely outside, and it was treated as a business proposition.

I have never visited any country where food was so good and clean as in Spain. Being plentiful is a great advantage to the poor, who appear well nourished, and therefore ought to be less criminal.

#### *The Women's Prison at Alcala.*

At Alcala, two hours from Madrid, there is a women's prison, next to the boys' reformatory. These prisoners were nearly all thieves or murderesses, and were taken charge of by nuns, without any wardresses. I saw four babies, beautifully cared for in a nursery on the top floor, where there was accommodation for thirty babies. The



women were of the usual type, very hard-hearted and indifferent to their surroundings. They were dressed in blue gowns with tidy white aprons.

I visited another women's prison at Madrid, which was constructed out of four or five houses in an ordinary street. Prisoners were here for smaller offences. Nuns took care of them and the quarters were very clean and tidy. There were no cells, but wards or bedrooms. The Spanish make it a religious duty to endeavour to reform all criminals, and therefore they are chiefly placed in the care of priests and nuns.

### *The Children's Homes.*

The children's prison near San Sebastian is most interesting. It is a white building, beautifully situated in a wooded valley, capable of accommodating thirty-four boys. Nothing is prison-like about it; in fact, it is more like a large villa. The boys come here between the ages of 8 and 15. The Spanish authorities aim at breaking off the influence of the parents. There is another similar *asile* for female children, under the care of the nuns, and the children's education and upbringing is very judiciously attended to.

Spanish law is very curious. Here these children were kept from the ages of 8 till 15, and there were reformatories for boys of 18 till they were 23; but there was no reformatory for young people between the ages of 15 and 18, and therefore they had to go to prison while yet so young. The kind monk who was director here said it would be ludicrous if it were not so sad. He was a Carthusian, a very big man, dressed in white, and he had three or four priests to assist him. The boys were happy and seemed fond of the priests, who, on their part, were very jolly and good-natured. How the boys "ragged" the priest and what fun they had, for he was all smiles! They had six boys of low type and these were kept separate. One of them when asked his name replied "Charlie Chaplin," himself enjoying the joke. He had



travelled over most of Spain, either under the seats or on the roofs of the carriages ; in fact he had lived by his wits. He was a bright boy, and having crossed to Tangiers as a stowaway, we may suppose he was a descendant of Columbus. The boys were all thieves, fond of romance, and the priests blame the cinema. Some of the boys pilfer still, but instead of being punished they are laughed out of it. As these young criminals were in the growing stage, they got three meals a day instead of two, with plenty of good milk, potatoes and vegetables. These institutions are object lessons to our authorities at home even to-day.

Capital punishment is seldom resorted to in Spain, but when performed it is in the way of garotting, being done by a brass machine put round the neck, and it results in a rapid crushing manoeuvre, which does not sound at all attractive.

### PORTUGAL.

The prison at Funchal, Madeira, is now run on much the same lines as the prisons in England were when Howard and Elizabeth Fry took up prison reform. It is a long one-storeyed building in the town, surrounded by a garden which the prisoners may look at, but, I was told, *never* enter. There is no glass in the windows, as on account of the mild climate it is quite unnecessary, but every opening is heavily barred. The attendants are quite kind to these wild animals under their charge, who wander aimlessly in five or six large cells, two for men and four for women. As soon as a man or woman is arrested, he or she is put in one of these cells and left there. One murderer, in a separate cell or cage, who was born in England, freely confessed his guilt to me, and though he had been in a cell by himself for three months was not yet charged. He had murdered a woman, and expected to be executed, not that he cared much, for he shrugged his shoulders as he talked about it. Another young man who was in for fifteen years for stealing an article



worth as many shillings, languished in prison for eleven months before being tried. Probably he was a chronic, as he got so severe a sentence. After a time they go to Lisbon where, they say, the prison buildings are very fine. Then they are sent to the Portuguese colony in Africa (Angora), and are not expected to return.

The women were the worst type of degraded human form that I have ever seen, chiefly murderesses. The cells were large, accommodating six to fifteen idle, unoccupied inmates. People appear to wander in the garden and feed the prisoners through the bars. I took them a supply of cigarettes, requiring assistants from Reid's Hotel to carry them. They are a most degraded crowd, and it would be no loss if they were all extinguished, but one would like to see them treated more on reformatory lines.

The sanitary arrangements were very much out of date. The inhabitants of the island say it is not wise to make prison attractive, and they have certainly succeeded in maintaining that principle.

## PRISONS IN SOUTH AMERICA.

It is interesting to know something of the prisons in South America, where Spanish influence prevails. Though we have been very brutal in bygone years, often leaving prisoners in underground cells to go mad or to die, yet we never were quite so bad as in some parts of South America where prisoners were bricked up in cells measuring six by two-and-a-half feet. The wall was only taken down when the prisoner died, which was known by his leaving his food for some days at the trap door. Such a prison presents no attractions. The existence of such is to be explained by racial characteristics. Darwin, speaking of Mexicans, said they had all the vices of the Spanish and the American and the virtues of neither.



Darwin did not know what Sir Arthur Keith<sup>1</sup> has revealed to us, that the American Indian came over from Mongolia when the two continents were united. The American people are of this original stock.

When William Tallack visited the jail at Carmel, Putnam City, in 1895, it measured thirty-two feet square inside the walls and had accommodation for eighteen prisoners. At that time eighty-six persons were confined in it.

*The Prison in Buenos Aires.*

The Penitenciaro Nacional in Buenos Ayres is one of the best prisons in the world and follows on the same lines as the Reformatory at Elmira, in New York. It is purely reformatory, and there is no outward sign of repression. The cells are nicely furnished; the workshops, perfect of their kind, are well lighted, and the grounds are laid out like a park. Education and religious influences, mainly of the Roman Catholic faith, are brought to bear. Here we see the best side of Spanish civilization, in contrast to some of the other countries of South America, but Buenos Ayres wisely asked the Salvation Army to tackle the problems of prison and poverty. When the old General died they called a large avenue after him, and then, at the request of the Army at home, built a huge refuge in the city for the poor and homeless.

---

<sup>1</sup> "Antiquity of Man," p. 468. By Sir Arthur Keith.



## Chapter XXII

---

### SUMMARY

WHO ARE THE AMERICANS?

PRISON REFORM.

PRISON SYSTEMS.

Various Prisons.

Convict Road Camps.

THE WELFARE LEAGUE.

THE JUNIOR REPUBLIC.

THE WORK IN THE PHILIPPINE ISLANDS.

THE LITTLE MOTHER.

THE NEGRO POPULATIONS.

### WHO ARE THE AMERICANS?

SIR ARTHUR KEITH tells us that "the American Indian, in all his varieties, is a descendant from a primitive Mongolian type of man."<sup>1</sup> The theory that soil and climate fashion the man has been applied to the long feet, face, chin and head of "Uncle Sam," making him like the Red Indian. In reality the Yankee is the American Indian, a little more bleached, clothed, educated and intermarried with European races.

America presents a difficult problem, as she is a complex of the surplus of some thirty-five nations. Whatever is good in America is due to British ancestry. We are fascinated with the individuals we meet, their goodness,

---

<sup>1</sup> "The Antiquity of Man." By Professor Sir Arthur Keith, Chapter XXIV, p. 459.



their broad and elevating views ; but America, as such, the ruling caste and the business world, is quite foreign to British ideas. To-day we shall study the good side. Though America has steadily absorbed the scum of Europe, it must have received some good material, even if clothed in rags. The vast spaces of this immense continent give opportunity to those to do well who, though paupers, may yet have many fine heritable qualities. The new school of psychologists talk of the "herd instinct" of the crowd as a source of strength. Far otherwise, it chokes individuality, as the stifling of individualism in our great cities constantly demonstrates. Spread the people out in the wide spaces in the vast continents and watch how they quickly make good.

While our clever lawyers have been playing at an intellectual game with criminals as "pawns" on the chess-board of law, the American people have for fifty years been striving to regenerate their criminals. Our idea of American justice is that it is merely a matter of dollars, and there is a good deal of foundation for that idea, as America is not one large State, all thinking alike ; but it is composed of many States, each thinking differently.

### PRISON REFORM.

It was in the seventies that the horrors and brutalities of prisons in America roused the sympathetic energy of two or three Quakers. Flogging and executions were common and in some cases prisoners were tied to stakes and fagots lighted around. It is not desirable to arouse ill feeling ; besides, we ourselves acted liked savages a hundred years ago.

"The City of Dead Souls," written recently by Lucien V. Rule, gives an account of the Old Prison South and of the prisoners in Virginia and Kentucky. The inmates were described as desperadoes, being made such by the system.



In 1873, at a Prison Reform Congress in Baltimore, a Quaker, Charles F. Coffin, of Indiana, gave an account of the founding of the Old Prison South in that State, which was not far off 100 years old. Punishment was severe: death for horse-stealing, murder and arson; whipping for burglary, hog-stealing and bigamy. It was not ordinary flogging, but three or four with loaded whips flogged their victim to death. Offences against property usually have the priority over cases of personal offences in all countries, and it is quite evident that the same rule obtained here.

Mr. Coffin visited the prisoners and produced a great change of heart among the poor wretches, and his influence on public opinion became very great. American reformers when discussing, "Why does youth go wrong?" came to the conclusion that the chief cause was lack of parental control, and the next cause was evil association.

The early Quakers, including Charles and Rhoda Coffin, Timothy Nicholson and Zebulon Brockway, commenced reform in earnest, and have produced the humanitarian movement which obtains to-day. We cannot cast up to the Americans that they acted like savages in their prisons, for we were doing the same; nor can we chide them over their lynchings to-day, for these acts may be the expression of the lovers of justice, who know that escape from justice in America has been so frequently a question of purchase—the almighty dollar. They, therefore, and perhaps wisely, take the law into their own hands in exceptional cases.

## PRISON SYSTEMS.

As regards prisons, there are forty-eight States in America and all are at liberty to gang their ain gait, but all seem to agree in having two systems of control; one, the central, where all the officers are appointed by the State of New York; and the other, the local, where



each smaller State has its own committees and acts independently. I used the word "officers," but there are really no officers. The Governor is called a "warden" or a "superintendent," and the warders are called "guards."

This reformatory movement began in 1870 and the root principle was intended to be the indeterminate sentence. As they cannot attain to that they frequently adopt a maximum and minimum period. When the minimum period is served they hope to free the prisoner on parole till the maximum sentence is reached. During his sentence he is carefully treated to fit him for the life outside to which he must return. That seems more sensible than in our country, where we put them in cells and leave them to deteriorate. In America the moral hygiene begins as soon as they enter the gates, for they are at once taught discipline and the development of self-control. They have good food and some of the warders sit at table with them so as to raise the standard of manners. My friend, William Baxter, of the Prison Commission, whose pedigree brings him back to the great Baxter of the City of London, tells me that in the prisons of Connecticut the food is equal to that of the best hotel, which seems carrying things too far. There is none of our cellular punishment, for the prisoners may beautify their cells, which often have curtains instead of doors, and they are allowed to have letters freely and to see their friends often, so as to strengthen the home tie.

Education is in earnest and is the key. With us the boys or other prisoners work through the day and get in an hour or so in the evening, when they are too tired to learn. In America they have good teachers and spend several hours a day at school. As yet our education authorities do not realize that their object should be to prepare the soil and teach young people how to learn. The modern system of cram, plus statistics, is most dangerous to the weaker brains and a prolific cause of weak-mindedness from brain exhaustion.



*Various Prisons.*

The warden of the State Prison of Colorado is introducing humanity, but previously there were savage methods, brutal floggings, stringing up by the wrists, crucifixion and starving.<sup>1</sup>

Dr. Harris Cooley has reformed his prison near Cleveland, Ohio, and is treating criminals and shirkers with sunlight and fresh air.

Sing Sing, from what one hears, is in process of reformation, but it has been one of the worst prisons in the world. Two burglars who were confined there told me the brutal treatment was more than anything they suffered from in English prisons. This was some thirty years ago in the chain age.

In Elmira, in 1910, there were thirty-eight teachers and one superintendent who taught the teachers how to maintain proficiency.

In Charlestown out of 900 prisoners 360 were pupils; and in the library there were 9,000 volumes. In addition leading citizens would lecture on their specialities, so that all classes of prisoners got the chance of making good. They do not want "Jack," or more correctly "Sam," to be a dull boy, and so they encourage games and laughter and healthy conversation. Punishment consists in the deprivation of luxuries.

*Convict Road Camps.*

In Illinois, the prisoners if industrious and trustworthy are allowed to live in cottages outside the walls, working in parties on parole at a distance from the prison, and if they behave they can earn an earlier freedom, but are still kept under supervision. When the working parties go out, they are engaged in road work or lumbering and form what are called convict road camps. It is only by

---

<sup>1</sup> For a fuller understanding read Josiah Flint's novel, "Tramping with Tramps" and Hutchen Hapgood's story, "Autobiography of a Thief."



a careful selection that these are organized, for they have no guards, or at the most three or four skilled foremen, who are nominally guards as well, to direct the work. The "honour system" works well, and each convict makes himself responsible for his brother, and they form a sort of family or brotherhood, so as to pull together. Many of these convict camps work 100 miles away from their prison, which must be a source of great anxiety and responsibility to the wardens. But here space comes in as a factor in granting such freedom. On the other hand, it repeats the lesson we constantly receive that not all gaol birds are really bad men. The criminal should not be judged too harshly, for life itself consists of a series of sudden temptations or perhaps opportunities, and in a flash it is finished.<sup>1</sup> He has fallen from the social plane, and unless he is given a chance can never regain it, but if he is given that chance his hope will return and he will respond to any attempt to help him to regain his lost honour. By our method of repression he must be and is for ever lost, and, after release, to talk to him of reform is not only futile and cynical but brutal.

Many prisons, for instance, Ontario, are starting farms at a distance from the reformatory buildings, which are at Guelph.

In Louisiana there is at Angola a plantation of 6,000 acres.

In Texas 3,000 prisoners are growing cotton.

Dr. Leonard, of Ohio, had 1,500 prisoners working on the honour system; many of them were "lifers," but he had only nine escapes.

Generally speaking, it is found that one-third of the prisoners are good, honourable and true; one-third are ordinary and one-third are a burden to the State and themselves.

Many well-behaved prisoners are allowed to go home for Christmas, and in some cases receive as much as

---

<sup>1</sup> *L'occasion fait le voleur.*



ten dollars for expenses. As a rule prisoners are allowed to go home to see a sick or dying relative, though sometimes it is thought advisable for them to be escorted by a man in plain clothes, but they are allowed to wear their own clothes. Out of 585 such temporary paroles only five have failed to return.

### THE WELFARE LEAGUE.

Great assistance is rendered by the Mutual Welfare League, which was founded by Mr. Mott Osborne. They help both in the prisons and outside, and appear to be the equivalent of the Salvation Army here, which helps all without any distinction as to religion. In fact, the worse the character the more he is welcomed and loved.

In 1917,<sup>1</sup> Mr. Osborne was given charge of the naval prison at Portsmouth, New Hampshire; there were 170 prisoners guarded by 180 marines. He started a branch of the Mutual Welfare League and soon all the guards were withdrawn. The guarding of prisoners by prisoners was "proven to be justified by the results obtained." So said the Naval Board.

Another welfare league is called the "University of Another Chance." It is based on the principle of helping the lame dog over the stile. This league shelters 100 men in a three-storey building, with a mayor, judges and officers, selected from among the prisoners themselves, also a board of health and other valuable institutions.<sup>2</sup>

### THE JUNIOR REPUBLIC.

The Junior Republic was a fine institution at Freeville, founded in 1895 by Mr. George, commonly known as

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* Brockway on "English Prisons," p. 678.

<sup>2</sup> *Vide* "The Junior Republic," by Mr. George; "Citizens Made and Re-made," by Lyman Beecher Stowe; "Within Prison Walls," 1915, and "Society and Prisons," 1916, by Mr. T. Mott Osborne.



Daddy George. Its two principles were : "Nothing without labour," which is its motto ; and "Self-government." By self-government they do not mean one or two to "boss the show," they mean that each man shall be able to govern himself and all equally join in the "corporate responsibility of prisoners."

Daddy George's Junior Republic is a model village whose citizens range from the ages of 15 to 21, with a president, vice-president, cabinet ministers, judges, courts and prison. This led to Mr. George endeavouring to apply the same principle to adult prisoners, but he wanted an enormous area enclosed for convicts to settle and work out their own salvation, which shows that he had the curative sense of space. This obviously could not be a success if they were all of inferior material, and it implies that there is as good an average in prison as out of it. Unfortunately his plan never matured.

### THE WORK IN THE PHILIPPINE ISLANDS.

The oldest "self-government institution" is in the Philippine Islands, at the Iwahig and San Ramon penal colonies. The former has 100,000 acres on an island, where there is good fishing. They form a well-organized community and obtain their freedom by industry and good behaviour. If liberty is slow in coming they may have their family over, and if a fiancée they must marry the day she lands. They have co-operative stores and work on sound business lines, and it is said to be the finest penal colony in the world.

We clearly see that there is some chance of reform where there is plenty of room. Our cities, where of necessity we are packed like sardines, become the nurseries of crime. If we could drop a few of our restless criminals from an aeroplane on some open prairie they would soon get to work and return to normal. And how aided they are when brought into contact with Nature ! The popular political cry, "Back to the Land," requires



to be amplified, for half the cure is worked by the contact with Nature.

Mr. Ogden Chisholm in an address to the American Prison Association in 1919, said: "Unless a prison is curative and makes a man better, so that when he goes out he will see things from a different standpoint, it has no more right to exist than a hospital which would maim and cripple its patients and send them out a greater burden on the community than when admitted."

### THE LITTLE MOTHER.

It would hardly be fair to close a chapter on prisons in America without allusion to the very successful work of Mrs. Ballington Booth, one of the Charlesworth family and sister to the late Mrs. Florence Barclay. She started the Volunteer Prison League for prisoners, even for those who were in for life. Her "boys" gave her the title. This is what she said to them: "I don't come here to prevent you from paying the just penalty of your crimes; take your medicine like men. You know what is right, do it now. When you have paid the penalty, I will help you. I will nurse you back to health. I will get you work; above all I will trust you, and it depends on you whether I keep on doing so or not. Mind, I will help you over rough places, but I won't carry you." The response was great. In one prison more than 100 of the most dangerous criminals joined the League, and the warden or governor thought this time he would trip up the little woman; but to his surprise, only three of the prisoners required punishment during the succeeding year. She also looked after the unfortunate relatives, so that she spent half her life in trains and the other half in prison. Her boys wore badges or buttons and even this seemed to strengthen their characters. "Hope Halls," were instituted for ex-convicts, and among the mottoes on the walls were such as, "Don't think or speak of the past." She gave them a fresh view of life with what motorists call a good "pick-up."



She always told a convict that she would trust his honour, which is always thought to be an unknown or very limited quantity. She never had to regret that step, the men were most chivalrous.

Everything depends on the personality in such difficult work. Her labours remind me of our court missionary, Thomas Holmes, whose great personality and refined tenderness worked marvels over some of our most difficult criminals.

### THE NEGRO POPULATION.

America is faced with 9,000,000 of a foreign race in the South alone, and there is a great want of fellow feeling between them. The question of criminality in the negro population is quite apart from the objects of this book, but generally speaking it is very high for certain reasons, such as their absolute laziness, their want of education, and their infantile, uncontrolled, emotional character. The degradation and brutality of negro crime is, therefore, more conspicuous than that of the white population.

Americans in the South, however, form a more kindly people than the North, and treat the negroes better. They have tried convict camps outside the prisons, as in the North, and also hiring out convicts to farmers or contractors, but it is not encouraging, for many of the convicts are ill-treated, some even being killed. In the camps there were so many escapes that they had to be worked in chain gangs, which was repulsive to the whites.

The negro is so inefficient that in whatever he undertakes he is surpassed by white labour. In the North he seems to be pushed out of every job. As they wander into the towns, they are gradually killed off by alcohol, syphilis and consumption. Great efforts are made to save the race by improved sanitation and education. In the long run the pure negro must disappear. He belongs



to primitive man, and America acts as if he comes only about three-quarters of the journey between gorilla and man. They do not realize that he is still a child belonging to an infant race. The race is improved when crossed with white blood, and it is notable how superior in every way the mulatto and quadroon are to the pure negro. This is evident in studying the brain weight in pure negroes and in those crossed with whites.<sup>1</sup> Yet this is not a sure test, as it is abundantly demonstrated that intelligence is not determined by the size or weight of the brain.

The coloured regiments fought well in the war, but here again it was demonstrated that mentally they were like young boys, everything depending on leadership. Without leadership, in whatever walk of life, they sink down into crime of the very worst type. Prison won't cure them, but their very emotional religion with their pathetic hymns acts as a powerful deterrent. All the black races, being a lower evolution, must be pushed out of existence by the more highly developed white races, or else hybridized.

The yellow races are Mongolians, and are represented by the Prussians on the West and the Chinese on the East. They are a superior people, probably older than ourselves, and it will be a struggle to hold our own as time goes on.

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* "Education, Personality and Crime," p. 74: "Out of 240 crosses with negroes, where there was  $\frac{1}{8}$  white blood the brain weight was 44 oz.; where  $\frac{1}{4}$  white blood the negro brain weighed 45 oz.; where  $\frac{3}{4}$  the brain weighed 49 oz. Out of 141 negroes the average negro brain weight is 47 oz., varying between 38 and 53 oz.



## Chapter XXIII

---

### SUMMARY

JOHN HOWARD.

The Devil visits Coldbath Fields.

ELIZABETH FRY.

Her Heredity.

Visits to Newgate.

The Executions.

Queen Adelaide.

The Transportation of Women.

Her Visits to Prisons Abroad.

Queen Victoria's Interest in her Work.

### JOHN HOWARD.

**J**OHN HOWARD was born in London in the year 1726. His father died when he was 16 years old, leaving him a large estate. When he was about 45 years of age he became Sheriff of Bedford. At that time jails were private institutions run for a profit. The income from the fees were enormous, the poor prisoners were cruelly fleeced and some prisons were worth £5,000 to purchase. If a prisoner were innocent and the Grand Jury threw out the indictment, he could not be liberated till he had paid all the jailor's fees. John Howard got a law passed by which the prisoner would be liberated free of charge and the jailor paid out of county rates. Finally the Government bought the rights to keep prisons for £10,500.

His attention was called to the great sufferings of the criminal class, for they may be said to have formed a



class. To-day we have football as a pastime; in his day it was the gallows and the careless hanging of culprits that was almost a national sport. Frequently a rope would break, or when cut down the victim would be found to be breathing, so a re-hanging was necessary, to the entertainment of the public. Even when the bodies were laid out on the dissecting tables some were found to be alive. One such case is recorded of a young woman, and the medical students subscribed enough money to start her in life again. She was carefully screened from the authorities, who would undoubtedly have re-hanged her.

Children even were hanged. Executions of boys and girls who had stolen a few pence were common. To show the spirit of the law, a boy of 10 was sentenced to death for breaking a window to steal some putty. The breaking of the window constituted a burglary, which was a capital offence.

This barbarism touched the kind heart of John Howard and he gave his whole time to visiting prisons, making every effort to improve the sanitary conditions and lessen their discomforts.

The few city gates that remain were generally used as prisons. The victims were either locked up in rooms above, or cast into cold, dark dungeons below, and if refractory were heavily chained. Deaths were, of course, frequent, but no questions were asked.

Those who wish a fairly graphic and accurate description of our prisons should read Charles Dickens's works, especially "Little Dorrit." Coleridge (1772-1834) describes a visit of his Satanic Majesty to one of the London prisons in the "Devil's Thoughts":—

"As he went through Coldbath Fields,  
He saw a solitary cell;  
And the devil was pleased,  
For it gave him a hint  
For improving his prisons in hell."

Different countries have always been exercised whether prisoners should be associated together or placed in



solitary cells. The consensus of opinion is in favour of the latter, as when mixed up the hardened criminals corrupt the fresh men. It assumes, however, that the solitary confinement is relieved by the visits of interested people and with a full assortment of literature. The Dutch and Belgians, in the year 1775, adopted this system, and it may interest readers that the first cellular prison in this country was built through the influence of the then Duke of Richmond, at Horsham in Sussex, about the same time.

The silent system in which prisoners are not allowed to talk, though they often work side by side and in gangs, is considered by many as rather brutal. But it is well known to the officials that they speak a dumb language, and there is a good deal of lip reading. Fortunately, there is not now the stringency of rule in prisons that we fancy to exist, for where suffering exists humanity usually responds. The brutality of prisons in the past was partly due to the moral degradation of society and the belief that the criminal was a devil in human form. To-day we realize there is very little difference between the criminal and ourselves.

It should be remembered that the people of John Howard's period had only one idea—that of repression; so that if he lessened torture he had but little chance of doing more. He appeared to have a better reception in foreign countries than at home, and he gave up his life to the cause, dying of jail fever at Kherson, in Russia, in 1790.

At that date Elizabeth Fry, his successor, was 10 years old.

### ELIZABETH FRY.

Elizabeth Fry was born in May, 1780, and lived to the age of 66. Her father, John Gurney, was a banker in Norwich, and his ancestor, John Gurney, who was born in 1655, joined the Society of Friends, who were founded about that time. The Gurneys came over with William



the Conqueror, as de Gournay, one of the aristocratic families of France, the Norman lords of Gournay in Brai. I have been shown their family tree and have known many of them and their connections, and, as an observer of breed, have always noticed that they have a distinguished bearing.

Elizabeth Fry's mother was a grand-daughter of Robert Barclay of Ury in Scotland, one of the ancestors of that likewise distinguished family.

It is breed and stock that matter to the nation. Class distinction is an artefact.

With nearly 200 years of Quakerdom behind me, I was brought up to admire Mrs. Fry for her works, and my mother had the privilege of her friendship. One did not know as a child what the psychologists of the new school tell us, that they who do great and good deeds act thus to gain the admiration of those around. I do not know it yet! As a test case, apply the neo-psychology to Elizabeth Fry's life. Was all her toil and suffering merely to seek the admiration of onlookers? Speaking of the Gurney family, Augustus Hare wrote that they played a more conspicuous part than any other family in the religious and philanthropic life of England during the first half of the nineteenth century.

The family lived at Earlham Hall near Norwich, and up to the age of 18 Elizabeth was one of the gayest, hunting, dancing, and even going to the play. She occasionally appeared at meeting "in smart boots, which were purple laced with scarlet," and we read of her in a scarlet habit on horseback carrying delicacies to poor invalids. But her nature changed after visiting the women at the House of Correction at Norwich. Contrasting their life with her own, she asked herself the question: "If this is the world, where is God?" It may be necessary here to interpose with a definition of the term "world." The Quakers divided society into two classes, themselves and the world. If you were not in one class you were in the other. They felt themselves at all times inspired by a special Providence.



In 1800 Elizabeth Gurney married Joseph Fry. She was of a very retiring nature and it took a lot of planning and pushing on the part of her father and the family to bring it off. The marriage was a great success, and her tenth child was born in 1816, which was at a healthy rate of progress. They lived then in Plashet, some miles out of London, surrounded by the fields and lanes of Bow, East and West Ham, and Stratford Marshes. Their town residence was over the business in St. Mildred's Court, since burned down. Elizabeth Fry began her visits to Newgate in 1813. This prison was first built in 1216 and demolished in 1902. Though built for 500 prisoners of both sexes, it was often packed with 800, which included unconvicted as well as convicted. Force and brutality reigned supreme.

These are Mrs. Fry's words: "At that time (1813), all the female prisoners in Newgate were crowded together into two wards and two cells—these four rooms, which covered less than 200 square yards, contained nearly 300 women with their numerous children. They consisted of the tried and untried misdemeanants and felons without any classification, without employment and with no other superintendence than that of a man and his son who had charge of them by night and day. In the same room did these poor creatures live and cook and wash, sleeping without bedding on the floor."

Elizabeth Fry seems to have had a strong concern, the Quaker term for a call of duty, to visit the poor women under sentence of death. The day before an execution Elizabeth Fry used to spend with the condemned woman, and the strain was very great.

There appears to have been a sensational case where Elizabeth Fry failed to save a young woman, named Harriet Skelton, from being executed. She was convicted of passing forged notes, under the influence of a paramour. The Royal Duke of Gloucester, an old friend of Mrs. Fry's, with whom she often danced at Earlham when a girl, went with her to Lord Sidmouth and the Bank of



England directors, who received them coldly ; but she was privately supported by Queen Charlotte and the Countess Harcourt. The Queen, to show her favour, commanded Elizabeth Fry to go to a party she was attending at the Mansion House, and here she paid great attention to Mrs. Fry, in front of all the Bishops, Lords and important members of the Government. Mrs. Fry records how there was a clapping of hands when the Queen came across to her and greeted her warmly. The shout of applause was taken up by the multitude outside, which showed that there was much public feeling about this case. Elizabeth Fry, describing the scene, wrote : "The English nation may be slow in perceiving the beauty of a moral sentiment, but when perceived none appreciate it more highly." Regarding that evening's ceremony and the attitude of Queen Charlotte, Mrs. Fry's daughter wrote : "They hailed the scene before them ; they saw in it not so much the Queen and the philanthropist, as Royalty offering its meed of approval at the shrine of mercy and good works."

In her diary of "Fifth month, 2nd, 1818," Mrs. Fry wrote, that almost all crimes were punishable with death. Robbery, forgery and fraud, even without violence, were capital offences, but the judges were frequently merciful and the authorities often remitted death sentences. The efforts of Sir Samuel Romilly to limit capital punishment have been alluded to elsewhere. There was a remarkable system under powers given to the Bank of England by an Act (George III, c. 39), by which it could be arranged that some were not to die, but they must plead "guilty to the minor count." The Bank solicitors arranged these details with the Bailey authorities, and frequently applied this law to financial frauds. In this case of Harriet Skelton they refused to help.

Mrs. Fry also visited the poor women who, chained in gangs, were shipped off to Botany Bay and van Diemen's Land. At one time there were terrible scenes the night before, and everything that could be broken was smashed



up; but after her soothing, encouraging influences, the women went quietly, even without special guards. It must have been pitiful to see these poor women in chains driven down the Old Kent Road to Woolwich or Deptford, in any sort of open vehicle, demonstrating excitedly all the way. Mrs. Fry got this altered, and the culprits were taken in closed hackney carriages in one long procession, which ended with Elizabeth Fry in her own carriage drawn by a pair of beautiful horses, of which she was a great judge. Thus she upheld the Quaker tradition to have always the best, and their meeting-houses on Sunday were conspicuous for their stylish equipages gathered outside. She kept in touch with the convicts abroad and also with their poor relatives at home.

A skipper whose name is given in her memoirs relates how a steam packet loaded with these unfortunates was leaving Ramsgate in a gale, when he spied a small boat with two women trying to get alongside. He brought his vessel round and helped Elizabeth Fry and her friend aboard to say good-bye to their charges. He mentions her gentleness and her dignity. And what dignity—that gift to the well-bred which no money can purchase. Was it not a wonderful thing that a refined woman of good birth, who could have anything that money could buy, should undergo such fatigue and so give up her life to those who were without hope, crushed and unable to rise? The separation of the children from the mothers struck Elizabeth Fry and others as a great evil, and in time this was put right. The children left ashore were only thrown in the gutter to perpetuate evil.

Her description of the treatment of the poor women was most harrowing. There were no suffragettes then, and these poor criminals were mostly guilty of petty theft. Murderesses were hanged, while drunkenness and prostitution were normal conditions.<sup>1</sup> “On board the *Mary Ann* in 1822, Mrs. Pryor complained that ‘the prisoners

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* “Life of Elizabeth Fry.”



from Lancaster Castle arrived, not merely handcuffed but with heavy irons on their legs, which had occasioned considerable swelling, and in one instance serious inflammation. ' "

At Newgate, which was described as a hell on earth, she started a school for all ages, forming a committee of twelve Friends, so that at no time were the women and children without some kind friend on the premises. They also tackled the problem of juvenile offenders, and she mentions three homes for juvenile offenders, one at Hamburg under the care of a doctor ; one at Rotterdam more in the nature of a reformatory ; and another at Berne, under the care of Dr. Fellenburg.

It is a remarkable fact that when we were acting so cruelly towards our prisoners, whether innocent or guilty, Elizabeth Fry found many of the prisons in France, Germany, Denmark, Switzerland and other countries were clean, the prisoners cared for, and due religious instruction given, whether Catholic or Protestant. But in every country there were many prisons quite as bad as ours, and to these she was able to give advice and help. Thus as far off as St. Petersburg, the Czar Nicholas (1827), and his mother, the Dowager Empress, paid personal visits to the prisons and lunatic asylums and had new buildings erected and initiated humane treatment at her suggestion.

Elizabeth Fry started the present nursing system. Being so connected with the sick, she wanted to see something superior to the " hireling nurse " system. She was much impressed at Kaiserwerth with their methods and resolved to imitate them. So, placing her sister-in-law, Mrs. Samuel Gurney, in charge, she founded a home in the city for the sisters. They were trained perhaps better than to-day, for they did not spend their first year cleaning brass taps. This was in 1845, and Queen Victoria granted her name as patroness.

The personality, dignity and grace that Mrs. Fry exhibited must have been a great aid in her mission



throughout Europe. Among the admirers and well-wishers of this noble woman were nearly all the crowned heads of Europe, to whom she carried introductions from Queen Victoria and Prince Consort. Fancy the King of Prussia<sup>1</sup> kneeling down with her in prayer on the rather septic floor of Newgate gaol, and then insisting on going home with her to lunch in Upton Lane, which house is now used as headquarters of a rifle battalion.

Lister, the immortal surgeon, my master and teacher, was born in 1827 in Upton Lane close to Elizabeth Fry's home. The Quaker group in South Essex formed one large body, whose influence for good was not only local but world-wide.

Queen Victoria respected and appreciated Mrs. Fry and her work, and it is interesting to note that Her Majesty sought her advice in the rearing of the young Prince, later King Edward.

In her later years Elizabeth Fry was a great sufferer from rheumatoid arthritis due to the exposure while pursuing her humanitarian mission. In her diary she mentions a rush for the ship from Ostend to Dover during very bad November weather. She had to have six horses to her family coach to make up time. Most travellers must know what such travelling means, especially to an invalid. Yet she held on to the end, exchanging the comforts around her for altruistic deeds which are producing abundant fruit to-day. It was the fine old Quaker spirit.

---

<sup>1</sup> Frederick William III. Reigned from 1797-1840.



## Chapter XXIV

---

### SUMMARY

MENS SANA IN CORPORE SANO.

OUR POSITION IN NATURE.

THE INFANT.

EDUCATION, THE KEY.

Word Memory.

Sensory and Psychic Centres in Memory.

The Backward Child.

Cleverness *versus* Capability.

THE EDUCATION SUITABLE TO THE WORKING CLASSES.

LETTER BY SIR ROBERT ARMSTRONG-JONES.

### MENS SANA IN CORPORE SANO.

A HEALTHY mind in a healthy body is to be our text in the deflation of crime. No normal man wishes to commit crime. A normal man loves happiness and to make others happy. The deflation of crime can only be effected by correct breeding and the efficient training of the next generation. In the first chapter the criminal was described as the enemy of society, but the Old Book tells us that all alike have done what is wrong, which shows that we are all living near the borderline of crime. If we apply the biblical, moral law, as opposed to law made by ourselves for ourselves, we are all offenders. The very essence of crime is selfishness, and selfishness is the motor agency or urge of the two primary instincts, self-preservation and reproduction. The Roman Catholic moral theology teaches, however, that there is a malice deeper than mere selfish-



ness. Rudolf Eucken, of Jena, also says: "In great things and in small, there exists an evil disposition beyond all simple selfishness; hatred and envy, even where the hater's self-interest is not touched, an antipathy to things great and divine; a pleasure found in the disfigurement or destruction of the Good."<sup>1</sup>

### OUR POSITION IN NATURE.

We, in company with monkeys and apes, belong to the natural order *Bimana*, and having two hands we are in consequence superior to the rest of "creation." The apes or anthropoids are very closely related to us, so close that the fossil skulls and bones of mankind have often been thought to be Simian.<sup>2</sup> In fact the ape man or Pithecanthropos of Java was at one time thought to be the missing link; likewise two important scientists described the Piltdown skull as that of an ape. Professor Sir Arthur Keith has so advanced the methods of measuring and examining skulls,<sup>3</sup> that now there is no doubt that they are human skulls, dating back 200,000 or even 400,000 years.

While we are all of one natural order, it is quite a different thing to say that we have come direct from the apes. We may have been gorillas 5,000,000 or 10,000,000 years ago, which would be the best defence a criminal could raise, that he was a reversion in type. It is generally thought that it is more a cousinship and that we follow this order: Gibbon, oran-outan, chimpanzee, gorilla, fossil man, Negro, Australian, Mongol (Prussia to China), European or Aryan. There was evidently one big root stem from which these many branches shot up,

---

<sup>1</sup> Quoted by von Hügel, "Mystical Element of Religion," p. 296.

<sup>2</sup> Simia, an ape, Latin.

<sup>3</sup> "The Antiquity of Man," by Sir Arthur Keith, F.R.S., M.D., &c. Read the concluding chapter and study the genealogical tree with its relation to geological periods.



first a monkey branch and then apes, and finally a human branch.

We are rooted in the family tree of animals with hands, but how we progressed is still an anthropological puzzle. Our hand is a more perfect instrument than that of the chimpanzee or gorilla; while the gorilla is more perfect than the baboon. We have the advantage over them all in that we can cross or oppose the thumb; but they beat us in being able to oppose the great toe, which helps them in climbing. We have abandoned tree life and so our feet have become very second-rate structures and our arms are proportionately shorter than those of apes and our legs longer. Some think that the gibbon is a nearer cousin than the gorilla, because he walks erect and his longer legs correspond with our anatomical figure. As we go through the streets we see many of both sexes very short in the leg. Is that a reversion to the anthropoid period of our ancestry? Our true height should be by spinal measurement and then there is less dissimilarity among us, for legs vary so much in length.

It is a big study to learn about the similarity of man to the ape family; but we must not lose sight of the fact that in Nature there is a gradual evolution or building up from the lowest forms of life to the highest, and the higher forms always show traces of the lower forms from which they have developed.<sup>1</sup>

We must carry these truths of evolution in our minds when pondering on the criminal problems. We were born low down, not high up; nor is there such a thing as fallen humanity. What we call fallen humanity represents different conditions of non-evolution, approaching the idiot; or of non-development as in the feeble minded, the born tired and some criminals. Diagrams shown and cases described represent these two different types. Too often as the fault of the parents, Nature has to leave her beautiful handiwork unfinished.

---

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter XXV, "From Conception to Daylight."



In asylums we have abundant evidence of regression. In one case a woman was in habits like a cat, spat and set her teeth, snatched at food, and post mortem her brain was found to be no higher than that of a cat.<sup>1</sup> This was a case of non-evolution and happened to be the smallest brain reported. I am indebted to Dr. G. A. Watson, of Rainhill, for this specimen. I show also an imbecile brain as an example of non-development;<sup>2</sup> and a quite respectable looking brain, that of an intelligent ouran,<sup>3</sup> which died in our Zoo, and which the late F. E. Beddard, F.R.S., &c., allowed me to photograph.

Another case which I recorded was that of a girl 13 years of age, who through the sins of the father was blind and imbecile, with two pints of fluid in her skull. In her visual or occipital area she had a fissure which is not natural to the human race, but belongs to the architecture of the higher apes.<sup>4</sup> She again was a reversion; or, more scientifically, arrested evolution. She had slipped off the human platform.

Many object to the term reversion and prefer to use the words "failure of evolution." Both terms are true.

### THE INFANT.

The newly-born infant is much nearer to the ape than is an adult. To demonstrate this you have only to observe that a baby at birth will hang on to a clothes line, or if thrown into a pond will swim. A schoolfellow of mine was dealt with in this way by his enterprising father, who threw the new-born into the sea from a boat. These are examples of ancestral, anthropoid, instincts.

In the act of sucking the babe forms its mouth into the shape of a funnel as the apes do. This simian feature persists in the negro for life, but the white races cannot

---

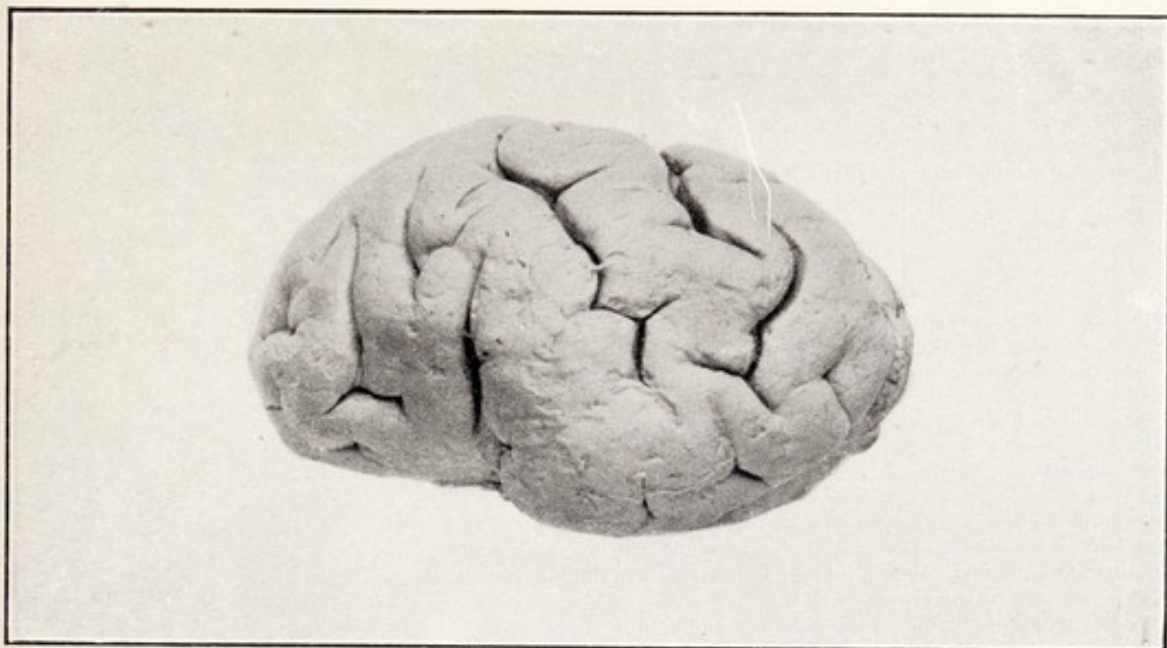
<sup>1</sup> Figs. 40 and 40a.

<sup>2</sup> Fig. 41.

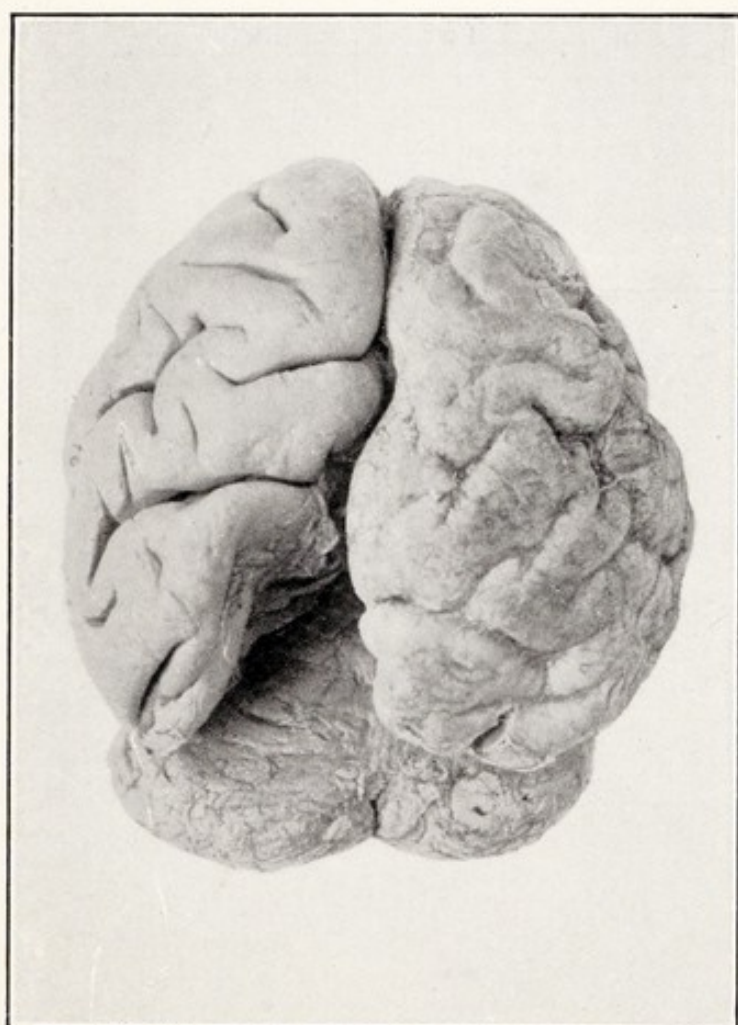
<sup>3</sup> Fig. 42.

<sup>4</sup> The Affenspalte.





A



B

FIG. 40.—A, The smallest idiot brain on record, weighing only 8 oz., and markings on surface not unlike those of a cat. The habits of this idiot in the asylum were cat-like. B, looking from above, the cerebrum does not cover the cerebellum. I am indebted to Dr. G. A. Watson for these photographs.



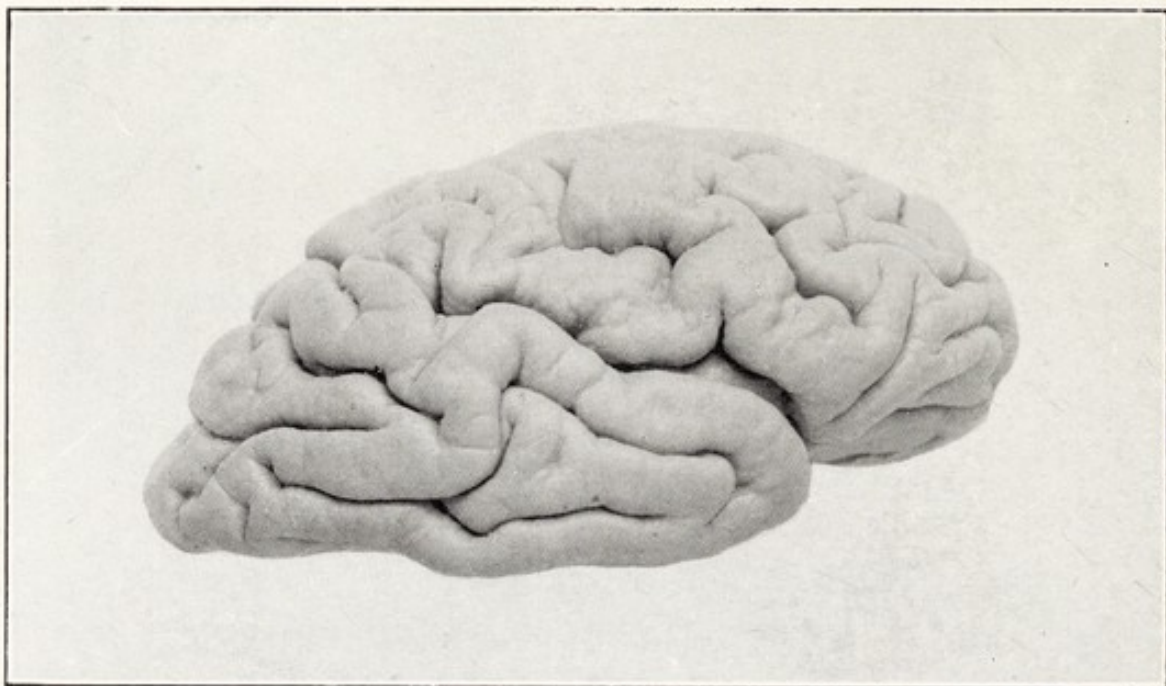


FIG. 41.—The brain of an imbecile. (Also a loan from Dr. G. A. Watson, one of our chief authorities on brain.)

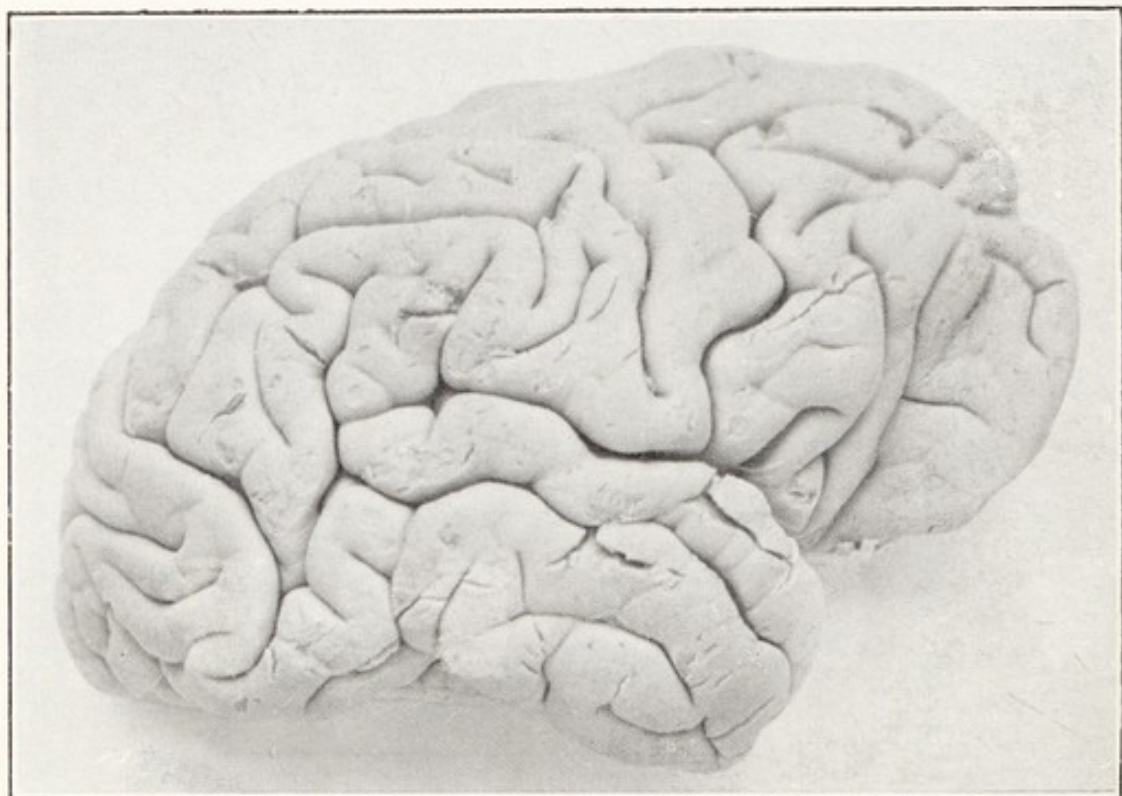


FIG. 42.—The brain of an intelligent ouran-outan. It is beautifully convoluted and much better than an imbecile brain.



do this as adults. Probably the high development of facial muscles does away with the primitive funnel. The negro is a child, in fact often an infant, and we should regard negroes from this point of view and not read into them too high a development. Were negroes meant to be slaves? As an infantile race they would be better off if they had proper parental care, so would the uneducated masses around us; but slavery is an abomination.

At birth there are small cells on the surface of the brain which multiply, and develop into intellectual cells. They are the structures connected with intelligence, character, personality, and possibly they carry the distinguishing traits of good family.<sup>1</sup> Obviously it is to the interest of parents to do everything to favour the development of these cells. This puts a premium on good living in youth. Young people should be taught that while dissipation may be followed by disease and suffering, it may yet receive a greater punishment if marriage follows, for the offspring may be unhealthy both physically and mentally. How many have gone to the gallows as the result of the sins of the fathers!

During the early months and until perhaps the age of 7, great attention must be paid to the physical needs of the child. In this the Jewish mothers are vastly superior to the Christians. At this period of their existence the children of the poor suffer terribly. By contrast if we visit Dr. Barnardo's Homes, where children from the same environment are picked up in babyhood, we see them developing normally both in body and mind.

In factories and cotton districts, till recently, the poor mothers had to slave till the night the baby arrived, which resulted in starved and stunted bodies and minds. Are we to continue manufacturing a C3 incubus?

Few parents realize that the growing child is feeling its position and range in society. He is on a voyage of discovery in the ship called Hope. Comparing himself with

---

<sup>1</sup> These are described in Chapter XXVII, "The Brain Machine."



his parents and others, he feels small and weak and is apt to feel neglected. This develops the inferiority complex which is so much talked about to-day. This not only produces unhappiness but an aggressive reaction, which in the poor continues, as they are always crushed in one way or another. Hence strikes, socialism, crime and communism. There is no hope for the masses unless there is more sympathy and fair dealing. In the end numbers will give them the victory. Happy is the child and more happy the parents as years roll on, where a healthy comradeship is cultivated in early years between the old and the young.

### EDUCATION THE KEY.

Though many educated people go wrong and use their education for criminal purposes, it is not the fault of education. They were born wrong. For the masses, true and proper education is the only salvation, which includes character training to be complete. This is where our present system is a failure. It is unfair to despise the poor when we have not given them a chance. During the first years of infancy those parents who have any healthy family pride, rich or poor, must attend to the elementary training of their infants. Movement is the greatest expression of vigour and vitality in the child, and must be encouraged as it aids development. The child, however young, must always have its attention drawn to what is beautiful and pleasant; musical rhythm and harmony, and what is accurate in colour and form. The tired mother demands all our sympathy, for to produce an amiable child can only be done by great patience on her part. A peevish discontented child is already on the road to crime. An overstrained, irritable mother can soon raise a barrier which remains for a lifetime, and this is a strong argument in favour of small families. All children should be brought in free contact with Nature as a sort of worship; the nearer to Nature, the marvels



of animal and plant life, the nearer to happiness and to heaven.

Education begins in the cradle, for though it may appear a contradiction, the developing brain cells must not be kept waiting. The word *educio* means, "I lead out," and by extension, "I bring up or teach a child." It consists in teaching the child how to think and what to think ; in fact, drawing on its imagination.

After 7 the child is very inquisitive of its origin and surroundings. All questions must be carefully answered. This seems a trivial matter and may be difficult, but the roughness of the working class is largely due to the rude way in which they are treated when children at home. This indicates the great importance of the better class being interested in workers' homes.

At some time during his education, whether in the nursery or the schoolroom, every child should be taught the elements of logic. This is done in what might be termed a playful manner, by calling its attention to correct observation, and to compare likes with unlikes and how to reason therefrom. In this way, almost as a nursery game, they learn the processes of induction and deduction and the method of the syllogism. Correct thinking, which is to-day conspicuous by its absence, must necessarily follow, and everything of this character makes the individual more stable and keeps down crime.

Likewise some knowledge of economics or political economy taught at school would be of great value to the masses. Even the labour leaders and town councillors, who cry out for more dole and State control of industries, have no elementary knowledge on these subjects, or how the money is to be acquired. They talk as if there were an Artesian well throwing up sovereigns in the garden behind number 10, Downing Street. All this rejection of order, self-discipline, and moral government spells democracy, which self-regarding sentiment is one step downwards for the Empire.



*Word Memory.*

The education of to-day is largely a matter of word memory, which is a gift; so much is allotted to each of us at birth, and we can neither add to it nor lessen it. It is very remarkable that some imbeciles, even those in asylums, have good memories, although devoid of intelligence. They read a column of newspaper only once and are able to repeat it without an error. On the other hand, how frequently learned men have poor memories for repetition, though they grasp a subject as a whole, in fact as a picture, and in the competition of life stand higher than those who are only blessed with word memory.

Word memory loosens and falls out by the way. The only method of securing it is by free description of the word, making a network of associations. Take the word "apple"; if a child never met a real apple it would probably forget the name; but as a common object it is impressed on many centres of perception. The sight centre records its form, size, colour, and structure. Sensory impressions are carried to the taste, smell and touch centres. The teacher must also explain how it has grown, introducing the structure and function of the leaf and the blossom. Describing the seed, he brings in knowledge concerning fertilization, which leads on to agriculture, soils, climate and geography; and, finally, there is the commercial aspect of the fruit trade.

*Sensory and Psychic Centres and Memory.*

I will now describe one of the most important sensory centres, the visual. This faculty is perhaps the main prop in memory and education. The visual area is situated at the very back of the head, the occipital pole. Whatever is seen by the eye, passing through way stations in the ganglia alluded to, eventually reaches the back of the head.<sup>1</sup> Here it is received, and, in popular language,

---

<sup>1</sup> The calcarine fissure.



impressed like a photograph. But more, it is passed on to the surrounding area, which cannot see but has the duty of analysing and recording what has been seen. This we call the psychic area of vision and is like a museum of photographs for future use. It is in fact a memory centre. The eye is the camera; the calcarine area behind is the sensitive photographic plate; while around is a store cupboard of past photographs, called the visuo-psychic area. J. S. Bolton found in cases of blindness from infancy or birth that this area is undeveloped.<sup>1</sup> Such an unfortunate person is denied the pleasure of seeing and recording pictures of the outside world, as they have no basis for visual memory. The consequence of such a disaster is a lowering of imagination and mentality and is a heavy blow to the intellect if the blindness comes at birth. It does not produce degeneracy but a sort of paralysis of mind: an apathy.

In the case of physical blindness no sensations from the eye can reach the visuo-sensory area of the brain. Let it be a child of 10 becoming blind from an injury; when grown up to manhood the psychic area, which surrounds the sensory cells, calls forth the mental images stored in childhood before the blindness occurred. Those who have once had sight are supplied with a certain number of memory pictures, but in the case of blindness from birth no pictures have ever reached the visual area—and so there is nothing to work upon to educate the visual psychic areas. In such patients, touch and hearing are specially educated and become more sensitive than in ordinary people.

### *The Backward Child.*

Enough has been said about improving memory and education. There are two reasons why education fails; firstly, that there are not the brain cells to work upon, and secondly, there is not the opportunity for proper

---

<sup>1</sup> *Phil. Trans. Roy. Soc.*, 1900.



education. The former is hopeless, but as regards the latter it is surely the duty of the community to see that every child and youth has the fullest opportunity for education. By education I mean education, and not mere instruction that is useless in after life.

It is more important to teach a child how to learn, how to compare, how to observe differences and likenesses than to cram in details of instruction, which they will never use again. The development of the body must not be neglected, and the fine muscles of the hands and fingers must be encouraged by teaching Kindergarten methods, Sloyd and the playing of musical instruments which calls forth precision. All this is reflected in the brain and necessarily plays its part in mental effort and development.

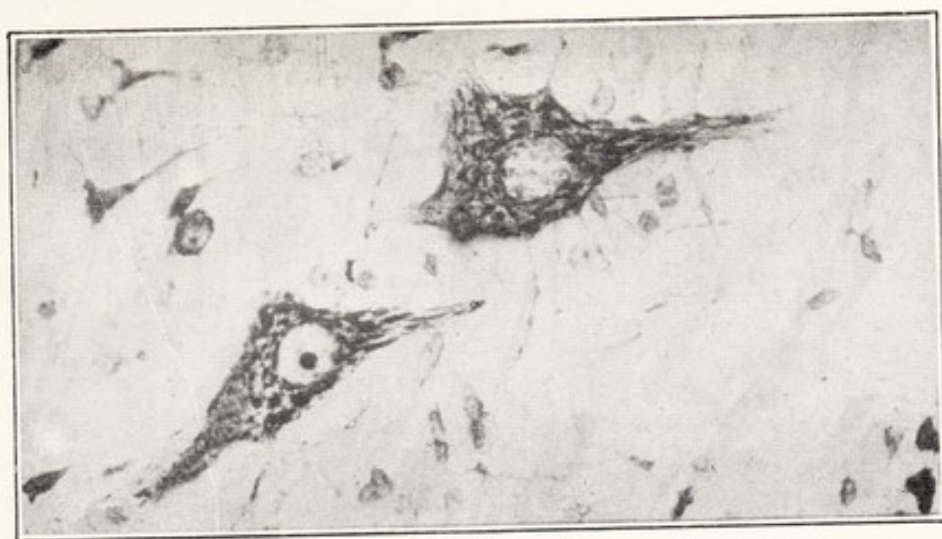
Among the ill-nourished, unintelligent poor we find weak memories, because their starved brains, to be colloquial, can only take under-exposed photographs, and consequently impressions do not fix themselves or last long. They have no power of memory, and must be classed as dullards; possibly capable of improvement in better surroundings.

We must go slow with the child under 5, and as the children of the poor develop late, they ought not to be sent to school or pressed before 7 or 8 years of age. When I use the word 'school' I mean the schools of to-day; teaching by rote, punishing if the poor brain cells are too starved or undeveloped to take anything in. An average working-class child of 7 is only equal to a normal of 4; and a child of 10 equal to one of a better class aged 7 or even only 5 in some cases. In order to save the working-class we require our education system to be entirely remodelled, with much more medical supervision so as to correct faults in development. The use of thyroid, pituitary and other endocrine extracts have produced marvellous results in many backward cases.

#### *Cleverness versus Capability.*

We must draw a wide distinction between education and instruction. The powers that be are unable to





A



B

FIG. 43.—A, Normal Betz cells. These are large motor cells from the cortex. Observe the pattern of the Nissl bodies on the cell bodies, the nuclei and a nucleolus in lower cell. The axon or motor fibre is seen at the base of the upper cell, and the long process on the right is the dendron or receiver. B, the same cells in an idiot's brain. On the left merely a blank; in fact three blanks to one fairly normal, which shows dendron on right and axon to left. I am indebted to Dr. Bolton for these photographs.







recognize the difference. Education is such a sacred duty, that to see classes of sixty or more children is very painful to those who have the pupils' welfare at heart. Instruction does no more than store a number of facts and figures, using the brain as a sort of lumber room.

I have been struck since living in Sussex by the number of people who can neither read nor write ; yet they are very capable men. Here I would interpose that few people stay to think of the difference between being clever and being capable. A boy or an adult may be very clever, but quite incapable, and conversely a person may be quite uneducated but capable.

The late Dr. Charles Mercier maintained that "cleverness is an inborn quality. If a man is not born clever, no education and no training will make him clever ; but everyone may train himself to become capable."<sup>1</sup> Dr. Mercier pointed out how the clever boy is quite ready and nimble, with good word memory, learns quickly and takes prizes. The capable boy probably makes no mark at school, especially if he does not happen to be clever ; but he will not fail in after life. The misfortune in life is when a person is neither clever nor capable. Then indeed there is trouble, and it opens an easy pathway to crime. It is here that the young "flapper" of to-day meets with her fall, for she is not only incapable and probably not clever, but she is in addition silly. It is necessary to ask the reader to recognize fully the difference between being stupid and being silly. Stupidity shows a failure on the part of Nature to raise the individual to the average level of intelligence. Silliness shows an absence of balance and motive, with in most cases a morbid self-regarding sentiment. Silliness is difficult to define as it is often on the borderline of imbecility.. While we have the flappers among the fair sex, we have the corresponding mentality among the males, namely, those of neurotic temperament.

---

<sup>1</sup>"Human Temperaments" (The Scientific Press, 28, Southampton Street, W.C.2).



These suffer also from a morbid self-consciousness. They are morally undeveloped, being lazy, vain and unfit for responsibility. They shirk work but are smart and live on their friends like parasites. In reality they live on the borderline of crime. Many of these sensational murders in flats or bungalows are due to the coming together of a gay young man of neurotic temperament and an equally gay flapper. The murderer probably is a sadist, for perversions are common in the artistic temperament.

By more careful breeding among all classes we should eliminate these weaklings. The population would be smaller, with more room to stand and food to go round. True there would be less "cannon fodder" for the next war, but the people till then would more nearly approach A1 than C3, and we must hope to make the next war more remote.

Will nothing rouse the people to a sense of their responsibility? Are we to continue raising an inferior even criminal stock?

To-day I am interested in a drunkard's family; five undersized, ill-nourished, degenerate children, shaping for hell. Both parents are unstable, vain and drunkards; yet the father went to the war when he was 15. Both grandparents on each side are also drunkards. The group are country folk, not town or slum dwellers.

We read constantly of the police combing out criminal haunts and districts, where burglars, or motor bandits, following the herd instinct, congregate. Is law so barren, so opposed to eugenics and moral growth, that we cannot get a drive on, but must wait till some dastardly crime is committed, possibly to be baulked in our efforts at capture? We must surely put a premium on virtue and make more effort to suppress vice and crime.

### *The Education Suitable to the Working Classes.*

There has been a dispute in *The Times* on the kind of education suitable for the masses. Dr. Brackenbury and



others desire to find in the plough boy a Greek scholar. He may be found, or used to be found in Scotland, but not south of the Tweed. As correct education is the *alpha* and *omega* of the criminal problem, I consider this a suitable place to introduce a letter written by my friend, Sir Robert Armstrong-Jones, visitor for the Lord Chancellor in Lunacy, a man of wide experience and vast knowledge. Whatever he proclaims is attentively listened to. This letter is on the true education of the masses, whereby they can more easily earn their daily bread and keep out of idleness.

### THE EDUCATIONAL MACHINE<sup>1</sup>

*A Reply to Dr. Brackenbury.*

BREAD AND BUTTER *v.* THEORY.

To the Editor of *The Times*.

As opposed to his theoretical conception, I would crave to express my opinion (as a former recognized teacher and examiner in the University of London and a member of its Board of philosophical studies) that its aim and object are to fit the child for happiness and future usefulness—to make the boy into a good man and a loyal citizen.

With the prevailing distress witnessed in every town and district, there are yet countless vacant places open for suitable applicants, which demonstrates the fact that the present system of education is not fulfilling expectations in regard to fitting the individual for his environment, for under its exercise the terror of unemployment is still throwing a million people on the dole, with the consequent sapping of their moral grit and mental fibre.

In my county the prevailing industry is agriculture; over 6,000 are so employed, while over 1,000 are water transport workers, yet no differential training is organized for those who prefer the sea. Moreover, the teaching given to girls (Dr. Brackenbury refers to girls) fails to adapt them for the best career to become the wives of working men—namely, domestic service, a vocation which is apparently repugnant to them, the cap and apron being regarded with disdainful toleration, so much so that the “charwoman” to-day

---

<sup>1</sup> *The Times*, August 20, 1927.



insists upon carrying an attaché case to escape the implication and stigma of domestic service.

Dr. Brackenbury states he would like the ploughboy to be familiar with the Greek drama—but in translations only. There might be more plausibility and support for this view if the human span were not limited to threescore years and ten. Were it otherwise, probably the originals might be preferred. But I ask, would the tragedies of Æschylus or the plays of Euripides help the ploughboy to get his bread and butter or the farmer to get in his hay, garner his harvest, and pay his rent? The fact is that too many ploughboys are being educated on Dr. Brackenbury's scheme, with the result that there are no hewers of wood or drawers of water, nor are there suitable situations for those charged with the unpractical and shallow erudition suggested.

As a contrast to this is the scheme of the Herts County Council, where practical training is given to the older schoolboys in ploughing, stacking, thatching, hedging and ditching, the handiwork of the blacksmith and other rural industries. It is obvious that the circumstances and conditions of society to-day do not enable parents to train their own children, therefore their teaching and instructing (i.e., training) have to devolve upon others; but Dr. Brackenbury is too intent upon the "syllabus" and tends to relegate to it the reality of teaching, and the trend of the syllabus is always towards dead-end office work rather than into the industries. The training college with an approved syllabus is by no means the model seminary for the pedagogue. National efficiency depends less upon them than upon making the most of the intellectual, physical and moral faculties of individual children in the different districts, each district, according to its needs, requiring different educational organization and administration.

The doctor appears to be of opinion that health matters already receive sufficient attention. He is evidently not aware of the great gap in medical supervision about the period of puberty, when health knowledge is only beginning to be understood. The gymnasium and playground are the essential correctives for a vast amount of physical abnormality, as also for the proper habits of walking and a graceful carriage; yet not one half of the teachers possess an adequate knowledge of physical instruction. Let me quote the experience of an industrial physician accustomed to dealing with school-leaving pupils: "Careful questioning of every child coming for medical examination (after leaving school) elicits the fact that in all but a small minority of cases the elementary laws of hygiene have either not been preached or have failed utterly to



take effect" (L. P. Lockhart); which is in strange contrast to Dr. Brackenbury's statement that "much more is being done than is commonly understood, and most of it very effectively—and in accordance with the syllabus." It is only in a sound and healthy body that our ambitions, aspirations and achievements can be kindled and realised. In conclusion, may I refer to the words of Parkes, who stated that only by a knowledge of the science of health can life be made more vigorous, growth more perfect and death more remote?

Your obedient servant,

ROBERT ARMSTRONG-JONES, M.D.







SECTION E

# PHYSIOLOGY

CHAPTERS XXV—XXVII







## Chapter XXV

### SUMMARY

OUR CORRECT AGE.

FERTILIZATION.

The Ovum.

The Sperm.

THE CHROMOSOMES.

Sex Chromosomes.

Chromomeres.

CELLS. SOMATIC AND GERMINAL.

A EUGENIC PROBLEM.

HEREDITY.

MENDELISM.

Negroes crossed with Whites.

DEVELOPMENT IN UTERO.

CONGENITAL DANGERS.

HINTS FROM HORSE BREEDING.

The Doctrine of Constancy.

Purity of Breed.

Prepotency.

### OUR CORRECT AGE.

**I**T is not generally realized that we understate our ages. We give our ages as nine months too young, for we state the day of our birth instead of the day of our conception. Those nine months are the most important of our existence, for it is during that period that our future is carved out, stamped and sealed. The Jews know this and take the greatest care of the expectant mother. Why



they should be more careful than other Semitic races, like the Arabs, is difficult to determine. It is presumably their religion and their remarkable faith.

At conception the two vital elements, or gametes, the sperm and the ovum, are brought into contact. The male element, a single spermatozoon, penetrates the female element, the ovum forming a fertilized cell, called a zygote. We shall frequently speak of cells, and for a general description a cell is a minute microscopic body enclosed in a membrane, containing a vital centre or nucleus, which again contains a still smaller body, a nucleolus. The cell contents have a very varied composition, according to the function of the cell, and there are thousands of different kinds of animal and vegetable cells in Nature. Every tissue of the body, such as muscle, skin, brain, bone and the blood, &c., is made up of minute cells, which differ in shape and function. One cell cannot take the place of a different kind of cell, and each organ is a unit in itself. It is quite evident that the functional energy of one organ cannot be transferred or take the place of another organ. This fact entirely cuts away the foundation of Freudian psychology, which regards mental energy as an overflow of energy from the sex glands. A philosophical fiction.

## FERTILIZATION.

### *The Ovum.*

The human ovum is round, clothed with an envelope or membrane, and about  $\frac{1}{80}$  of an inch in diameter. It contains a soft nutrient material called the cytoplasm or yelk. This yelk supports the nucleus or germinal vesicle, and in this again is a spot, the nucleolus or germinal spot. If we examine the yelk of a hen's egg we shall find a white mass called the "tread," which corresponds to the yelk in the human egg. The hen's egg has a large quantity of extra nutrient yellow yelk, as the chick develops outside, apart from the mother. A different



condition occurs in the human body, and in other mammals, where the foetus is an indoor passenger and gets its nourishment from the blood of the mother, being attached to the wall of her uterus or womb.

The mammalian ovum develops from a delicate structure called the germinal epithelium, in an organ termed the ovary.<sup>1</sup> The germinal epithelium obtains its nourishment from the blood and lymph fluids of the maternal body, and here is an inevitable danger of the diseased or drunken mother poisoning her offspring, and arresting the normal development of the ovum. Venereal disease and consumption affect the development, and these unfavourable influences explain the stunted, deformed appearance of many of the offspring, even so far as weak-mindedness and criminal tendencies. Such an arrest of development *in utero* is called congenital, as opposed to interference from an hereditary taint. The hereditary must be submitted to, but the congenital is usually avoidable. Reference to my observations on the homes for London working boys aptly illustrates the diminutive proportions of these poor children, due largely to alcoholic parentage.<sup>2</sup>

### *The Sperm.*

The sperm cells of different animals vary greatly in outward appearance, but they are all built on the same plan. That of the human is like a tadpole, with a head and tail, which latter causes a swimming motion. It is quite microscopic in size, being about  $\frac{1}{500}$  of an inch in length. Only one spermatozoon is required to fertilize an ovum, and there would seem to be a chemical process at work on the part of the ovum to attract the sperm. The human spermatozoon has at the apex of its head a nucleus, and on entering the ovum, leaving its tail outside, this nucleus makes a bee line for the nucleus of the

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* fig. 44.

<sup>2</sup> "Education, Personality and Crime," pp. 24, 199, 245, also fig. 5.



ovum and they unite.<sup>1</sup> It is from this fusion that the new generation arises, with all its potentialities for good or for evil.

After the nucleus of the male germ unites with that of the female germ, there follows a division into two cells, then into four, eight, sixteen and so on, always doubling, till they are more numerous than the sands of the seashore, and finally build up the human form. Right through the animal kingdom the process of division is the same.

The male or sperm cell supplies energy, having no storehouse of nourishment. The female germ cell is passive, affording nourishment to the embryo from its yolk. Society, which is artificial, seems to have reversed these conditions; the woman to-day is the worker and the male is the slacker. The why and where it leads to requires a lot of thinking out. It seems like a reversion to primitive type.

The process of fertilization is too complex to attempt a popular description, but a general idea is useful. I can show ova and spermatozoa from a photograph I took years ago of the generative organs of a limpet, which is an hermaphrodite.<sup>2</sup> Here we see short threads which are spermatozoa, and ova which are in this case oval. This section was given to me by Mr. J. H. Orton, a distinguished biologist.

### THE CHROMOSOMES.

We are able to study these matters by watching the processes of fertilization in the eggs of the sea-urchin, or in worms, or flies. Naturally we must employ the microscope and require to use stains of aniline dyes. These dyes stain the wavy threads and granules in the nuclei and nucleoli and thus demonstrate the changes they go through. Those threads or particles which take up the dye we call chromatin or chromatin threads, and it was

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* fig. 46.

<sup>2</sup> See fig. 45.



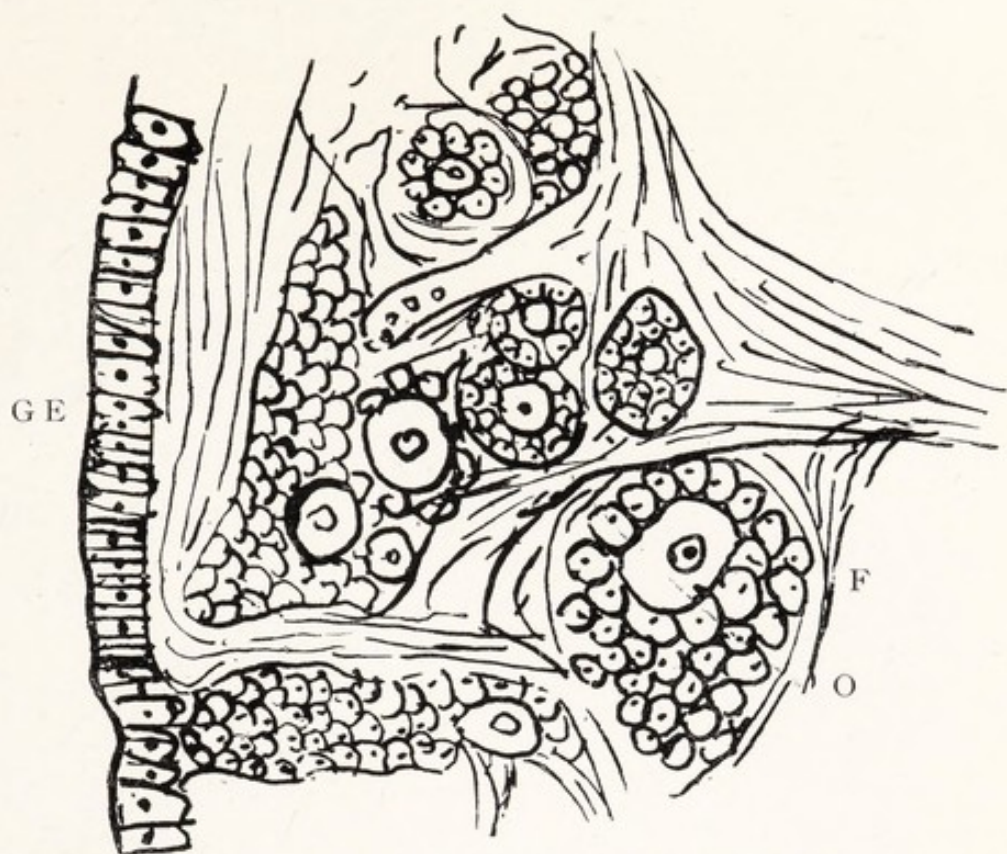


FIG. 44.—Section of an ovary. G E, the germinal epithelium which produces the follicles, F, in which the ovum develops ; O, ovum.

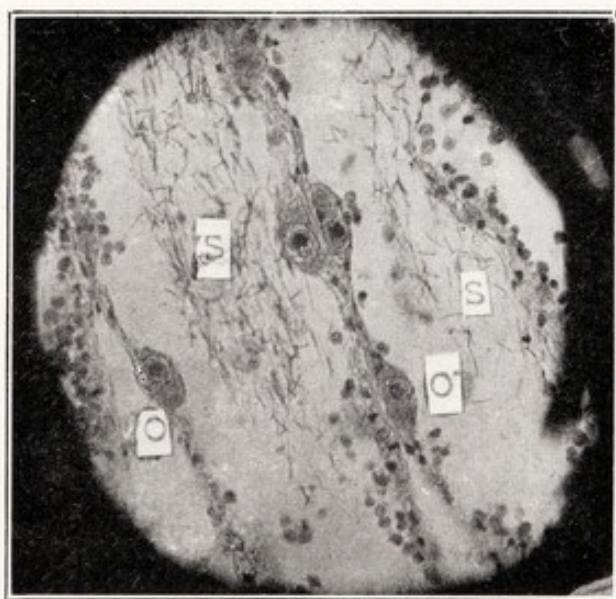


FIG. 45.—The germinal elements of the *Crepidula fornicata*, a kind of limpet. It is a hermaphrodite, containing both ova, O, and spermatozoa, S. Observe the nuclei and nucleoli in the ova. The tails of the spermatozoa are barely visible. Their bodies are long. The round smaller cells are unripe sperms.



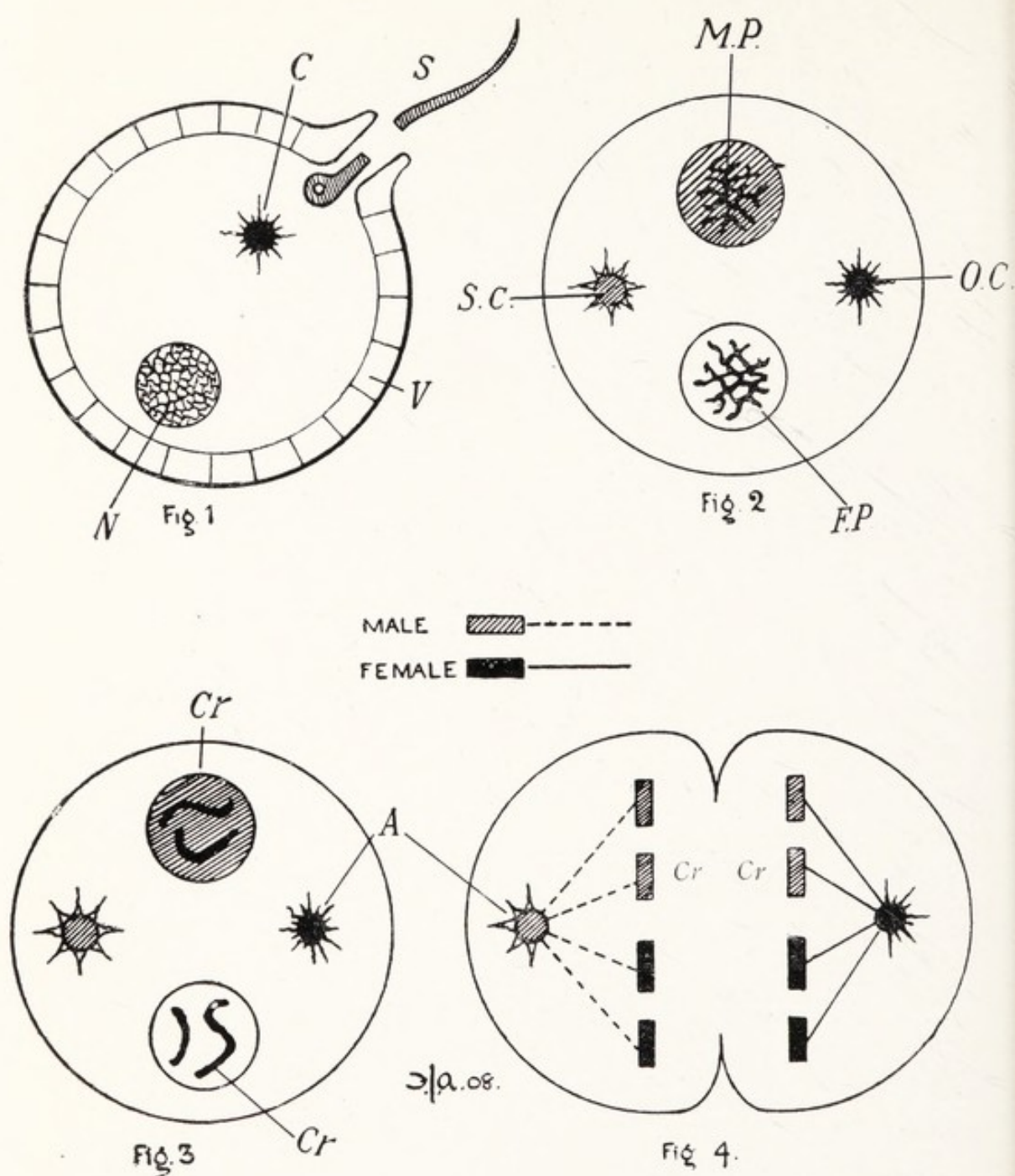


FIG. 46.—The scheme of fertilization, after Boveri. Fig. 1: S, spermatozoon entering ovum, by attraction, at the cone and leaving its tail outside; V is the vitellus or porous wall; N is the nucleus showing chromatin fibres; C is the centrosome. Fig. 2: male and female elements united; MP, male and FP female pronuclei; S, sperm; O, ovo centres. Fig. 3: further advanced conditions; Cr, chromosomes arranging themselves. Fig. 4: A, centrosomes, and Cr, chromosomes forming asters, joined with threads. Division of cell follows, each half being equal as regards male and female properties. Two cells are then produced like in fig. 1.



suggested by Wilhelm Roux in 1883 that this nuclear chromatin carries the heritable characters.

The fusion of the male and female nuclei results in a condensation of the chromatin threads of both parents, which spells heredity. The threads take the shapes of filaments or rods, called *chromosomes*, which are semi-fluid or colloid in composition.

Chromosome is a term to be understood, and a word to be remembered. It should be written in large letters above each church and chapel door and especially above each hall of justice. These chromosomes carry all our heritable properties. They settle the future of the individual, whether he be prince or peasant, whether he is to be a success or failure in life, and indeed whether he has to end in heaven or not. Sir Arthur Keith writes: "The nucleus appears to be the chief vehicle of heredity—the medium by which the features of the parent are handed on to the child."<sup>1</sup>

For a moment let us switch on to the physical aspect of fertilization, using diagrams to clear the understanding. The diagram I show is from the work of Boveri, one of the early workers in the eighties, for though we have more detail and more speculation and improved pictures, we are not much further advanced. It is as well to look at the diagram to realize how the wavy threads of the nuclei have changed into rods.<sup>2</sup> Though represented as oblong, the chromosomes vary in shape, being curved, club-shaped, bent or straight, sometimes beaded, and with rounded ends.

The chromosomes vary in number in the body cells of different animals; man has 24; the grasshopper has 12; the snail has 32; and plants and the trout have 32; the ox and the guinea-pig have 16. The germinal cells differ in having only half the number of chromosomes.

---

<sup>1</sup> "Human Embryology and Morphology," by Sir Arthur Keith. (Arnold.)

<sup>2</sup> Fig. 46.



While the chromosomes are forming, the non-stainable material separates away, and a body called the *centrosome* forms, which exerts some influence on development not yet understood. The centrosome divides into two centrosomes, which pass to opposite poles, sending out threads to the chromosomes at the equator, thus making the figure of a spindle. The ovum divides at its equator into two daughter cells, so that each daughter has an equal division of the parents' chromatin.

The physiological process in cells is called by various beautiful names: thus *mitosis* from the Greek *mitos*, a thread; and *karyo-kinesis*, from *karyon*, a nut (or nucleus) and *kinesis*, motion.

### CELLS—SOMATIC AND GERMINAL.

There are two kinds of cells in every embryo. One kind, the somatic,<sup>1</sup> forms the body of embryo; while the sex organs develop from the other cells, the germinal, which form in reality the chain of life. Recent investigation has actually shown the separate germinal cells in process of development. Forty years ago Boveri,<sup>2</sup> studying the egg of the worm (*Ascaris megalocephala*) observed these two kinds of cells result after the division of the ovum. The bulk of the cells form the embryo, while a few special cells enclosed by the general mass continue the race as the future germinal cells; in fact they develop into the male and female sex glands.

Previous observers thought that reproductive cells were formed from the body of the parent, but Jaeger's view (1878)<sup>3</sup> is now accepted and has been confirmed by many observers. Thus in the case of the fertilized eggs of insects, during the germinal segmentation, Jaeger observed that a few small cells separate from the main cluster to form the reproductive cells. These he called the *phylo-*

---

<sup>1</sup> *Soma*: Greek, a body.

<sup>2</sup> *Jenaische Zeitschrift für Natur Wissenschaft*, xxi, xxii, xxiv.

<sup>3</sup> *Kosmos*, ii.



*genetic* cells. In the *Daphne*, a freshwater crustacean, after about thirty divisions of the developing cells there is a separation of the reproductive cells from the body cells of the embryo.

Professor Balbiani<sup>1</sup> made a very original observation on the fly, *Chironomus*, which clearly demonstrates the isolation of germinal matter. At the earliest period of cell division of the ovum, two special cells remain distinct from the mass. As development proceeds these two cells remain unaffected, and are gradually enclosed to form the future reproductive organs. We must always remember this fact, and contemplate where it leads to, namely that the body cells are distinct from the reproductive cells, which latter continue the species from generation to generation.

### A EUGENIC PROBLEM.

If we accept as a fact that the germinal or reproductive cells and the body or somatic cells are separate and distinct, can the germinal cells of an individual with the brain of the degenerate or a mental deficient breed true? The universal answer is a large NO. But is that always correct? In one case before me, an active well-set-up errand boy of 18 became the father of a child by an imbecile girl of 16. The whole of her family, including the mother, were mentally deficient; an unwholesome stock but with nothing wicked about it. I expected one more imbecile, but the child was apparently normal in intelligence and took after the sire. The other view is: could this imbecile girl carry some chromosomes of good quality from some remote ancestor? After all we may be only carriers and of good units or chromomeres, even if physically and mentally we be weaklings. For obvious reasons I could not follow the case. Experience, however, shows that these mentally deficient and degraded

---

<sup>1</sup> *Zoolog. Anz.*, 1881.



girls, who have in their calling a great variety of sires, breed a degenerate stock. The problem cannot be settled offhand, and there is a great work for eugenists to follow up these cases and come to a decision. The general situation appears to be that the same causes of the degeneration of the soma or body must also apply equally to the germinal cells. These causes are alcohol, venereal diseases, malnutrition and overwork of the parents ; but, in addition, derangements of the endocrine functions play a great part.

As an illustration, a very healthy couple had a healthy, intelligent girl. Two years later the father took to excessive whiskey drinking. During this phase his wife bore him another child, a boy, who is imbecile, probably idiot, unable to speak or walk, and paying little attention to his surroundings. Obviously the germinal elements on the father's side were poisoned and damaged, though his soma, or body, showed no signs of deterioration. This looks as if the germinal cells are more easily damaged than the body cells. The moral is that intending or potential parents should be very careful about alcohol. It is a question of degree or dose. The danger is that moderate drinking may so dull the normal control or the judgment that the drinker unconsciously takes to excess, and it becomes a habit. Here we have the source or origin of most of our criminals.

A lady who has spent more than twenty years as guardian among these weak-minded girls says it is almost certain that the offspring will be affected ; either they are imbecile, or weak-minded, or devoid of morals, or mischievous and dirty in their habits. If they grow up, looking, perhaps a poor average, when they get to the employing stage they often are wholly unemployable, being unreliable, untruthful, dishonest, lazy and not unfrequently hopelessly immoral.

I have had similar reports from other sources and they all approach the same conclusion. It is not the illegitimacy one objects to, but the mental state of the



parties concerned. Some of our best men have been illegitimate. Think of the sign of the "Grasshopper" in the City of London, the crest of Sir Thomas Gresham, thought to be a castaway, discovered only by a grasshopper jumping beside the parcel in which his infant form was wrapped up. This was in the year 1519. Since writing this the following paragraph occurred in the *Times* (June 30, 1928):—

SIR THOMAS GRESHAM'S BADGE.

"In one of the issues of the *Times* last week there appeared an article in which there was a reference to Sir Thomas Gresham and his badge of the grasshopper. It may interest some of your readers to know what was the origin of the badge. Sir Thomas Gresham's mother deserted him when a baby, leaving him in a field. A woman was passing along the road and on hearing a great sound of many grasshoppers went into the field. There she found the child, whom she took home and brought up as her own. Sir Thomas Gresham, having learnt the story in after years, adopted as his badge the grasshopper, which we now see on the Royal Exchange. In this village of Mayfield, from which I write, in the old palace formerly belonging to the Archbishops of Canterbury and now a convent, there is to be seen a mantelpiece carved with grasshoppers. Sir Thomas Gresham once owned the palace and received Queen Elizabeth there.—MAY GORTON, Mayfield, Sussex."

This is a fuller account than I ever heard. Mayfield is a beautiful old village and it is quite possible his father may have been one of the intellectuals of the palace, for it is quite certain Sir Thomas carried some chromosomes of very high quality, considering his life of philanthropy, good works and his large measure of intellect.

SIR THOMAS GRESHAM'S BADGE.

"Dean Burgon, in his 'Life of Sir Thomas Gresham,' 1839, i, 7, points out that there is no truth in the story of the origin of the Gresham crest, a grasshopper, given by a correspondent in a letter in your issue of June 30. He says that eleven letters of James Gresham, who was the great-grandfather of Sir Thomas, dated between the years 1443 and 1464, have been published among those of the Paston family. They are dated from London, and sealed with a grasshopper!—Mr. W. M. MYDDELTON, Woodhall Spa"—(*Times*, 1928).



## HEREDITY.

Research scholars seem to search for something on the physical plane as an interpretation of heredity.

Haeckel in 1866 propounded the theory that reproduction was an overgrowth of the individual<sup>1</sup>; while Huxley, my old teacher, thought that all the tissues of the parent contributed something towards the formation of the germinal cells. Huxley<sup>2</sup> said the germ was "simply a detached living portion of the substance of a pre-existing living body." He wrote in 1878:—

"It is conceivable and indeed probable that every part of the adult contains molecules derived from both male and female parent; and that regarded as a mass of molecules, the entire organization may be compared to a web of which the warp is derived from the female and the woof from the male."

Darwin thought that every cell of the body throws off gemmules which collect in the reproductive cells.<sup>3</sup> He conceived inheritance to be the development of the parental gemmules in the offspring; whilst variation is the commingling of two parents, modified either by use or disuse.

De Vries worked up an idea as to "pangens"; and Morgan called the same "genes"; while Herbert Spencer, not to be left out in the cold, worked on the principle of "physiological units." Herbert Spencer wrote:—

"Inherited constitution must ever be the chief factor in determining character."

Disraeli wrote: "Race is everything." And this is well exemplified by the Jewish race.

Weissman<sup>4</sup> came very near the mark when he wrote that "the germ plasm passes over unchanged into the

<sup>1</sup> "Gen. Morph," 1866; "Die Perigenesis der Plastidule," 1876.

<sup>2</sup> "Evolution," p. 296; *Enc. Brit.*, 1878.

<sup>3</sup> "The Variation of Animals and Plants under Domestication," Vol. II, chapter xxviii.

<sup>4</sup> "The Germ Plasm," 1895, pp. 192-93



organism which is undergoing development, and that this part represents the basis from which future germ cells arise. . . . It is therefore clear that all the cells of the embryo must act as somatic cells, and none of them can be reserved as germ cells and nothing else." He gave the name "ids" and "determinants" to the invisible particles in the body which carried the heritable properties. This is not accepted to-day, but it has a suggestion of truth of a practical aspect, and as we all hanker after names rather than definitions, it gives us something useful to play with.

Weissmann drew a distinction between (a) the somatic or body cells; and (b) the germinal or reproductive cells. He thought the germ plasm passed from parent to embryo, but he wrote: "The ancestors of these germ cells (ova and spermatozoa) are somatic cells." This we now know to be incorrect, for the germ cells come from the previous germ cells. Later Weissmann regarded the germ plasm as a continuous chain and a definite molecular substance. At each formation, he thought, some of the plasm is reserved for the next generation.

The germinal chain is like a huge tree always growing; a branch here and there is strong and throws off twig after twig; another is weak and perhaps dies off; but in the main the growth is persistent and continuous. Delage<sup>1</sup> has likened the germinal chain to a strawberry runner, which is continuous, and always growing; and the plants it gives off are the equivalents of the individuals. The simile is not inapt.

Nature is very curious. Here we have the germinal spot, or in the hen's egg the "tread," which is the important centre. It must be protected, so it is carefully encased. The eggs are produced in organs called ovaries, and are all laid down, or at least anticipated, at birth. In the female human infant its ovaries contain 10,000 to 50,000 immature ova or eggs at the time of birth. Of

---

<sup>1</sup> "L'Hérédité."



these obviously not more than three to four hundred can become ripe, one at each menstrual period. Nature is a spendthrift, but she is afraid that if she is not lavish the races may die out. Look at the millions of granules of pollen that are blown off the trees to no purpose in early spring, and so it goes on !

We have arrived at the conclusion that the egg structure is built for the protection of the "tread," and we have seen that thousands of ova are produced that will never be required. The hen, for instance, is built as a protection to the ovary and the egg. Nature must carry on, and her work is to take care of the germinal chain. It does seem humiliating that we are, after all, only envelopes to protect future generations. Yet Nature allows us a great deal of pleasure, and has given us a very beautiful world to live in. Perhaps, though we act as envelopes to the germinal chain, we have been created for other useful purposes as well.

### MENDELISM.

Not many of us are familiar with Mendelism, and because of the fact that the human chromosomes do not seem to conform with its laws, I shall merely mention it in passing.

Gregor Mendel, the Abbot of Brunn, was born in 1822 of Silesian parents of the peasant class, and at the age of 25 became a priest. What a charming life is that of an abbot or a monk, spent within restful cloisters, beautiful gardens and beside well-stocked fish ponds ! In the gardens of the cloisters, Mendel made some of the most wonderful discoveries in regard to the hereditary transmission of unit characters. He read two papers in 1854 and 1855 at the Botanical Society of Brunn, but his work was forgotten until it was revived by the late Professor William Bateson in 1900.

Mendel investigated the inheritance of characters, selecting the pea (*Pisum sativum*) for that purpose. He







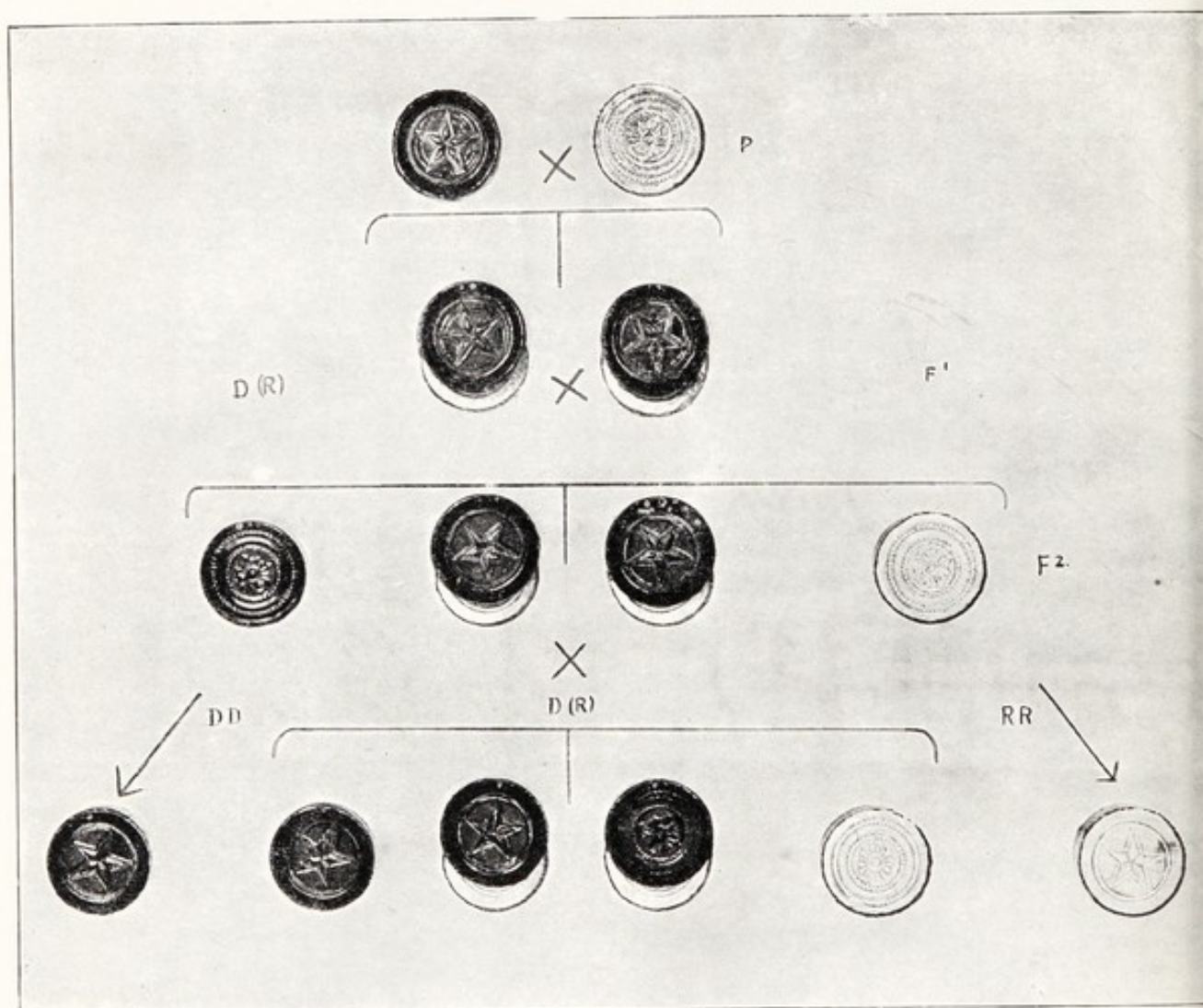


FIG. 47.—First line (P) : a black dominant and a white recessive. Second line (F<sup>1</sup>) : the hybrid offspring D(R) ; the black patent, while the white below is latent. Third line (F<sup>2</sup>) : one pure black, two impure blacks, and one pure white. 1 DD+2 D(R)+1 RR. Fourth line : pure extracted dominant to the left ; pure extracted recessive to the right ; in the middle as usual 1 DD+2 D(R)+1 RR. (From "Heredity," by Professor J. A. Thomson. By kind permission of Mr. Murray.)



would take one pair of opposite characters, such as tallness and shortness, and cross a tall pea 6 ft. high with a dwarf 1 ft. high. The cross-bred seed produced only tall plants in the first generation, which he called F 1. As there were no short plants he called tallness a dominant character, D ; while dwarfness which apparently had disappeared, he called recessive, R.

These tall peas of this first generation, F 1, were self-fertilized to make a second generation, F 2, and on counting their offspring, which were mixed, he found a constant ratio of three tall, or dominants, to one short or recessive. Continuing to self-fertilize F 2, he found in the third generation, F 3, that the dwarf or short plants or recessives of F 2 bred pure, without any more tall plants appearing, however many generations there were. When he bred the three tall of F 2 two things happened in the next generation, F 3 ; namely, out of every three peas, one would breed pure, all tall, or dominants, without any dwarfs through endless generations ; while the other two peas would repeat the mixture of tall and dwarfs as in F 2, the previous generation. Thus F 1, the first hybrid, all tall, when self-fertilized produced in :—

F2, 25 per cent. pure dominants, tall plants —  $\frac{D}{D}$

50 „ „ impure dominants, tall and dwarfs —  $\frac{D}{R} \frac{R}{D}$

and 25 „ „ pure recessives, short or dwarfs —  $\frac{R}{R}$

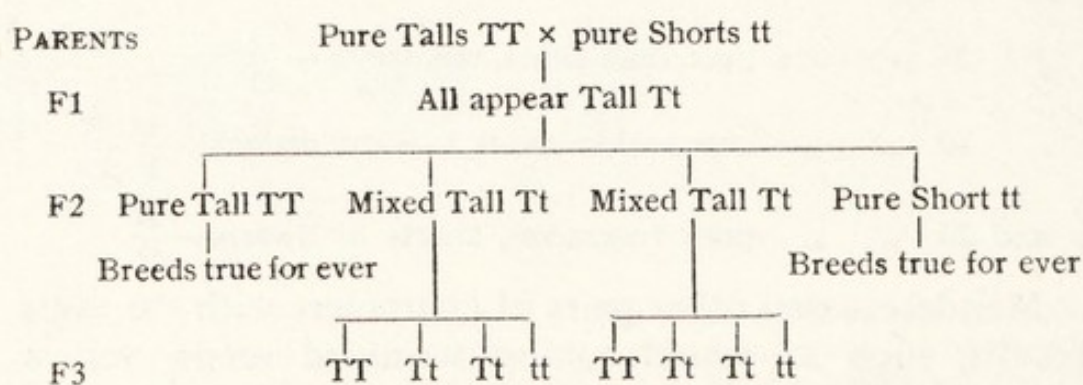
Mendel crossed other pairs of characters with the same results, such as round against wrinkled seeds, yellow cotyledons against green, and so on ; in all he crossed eight pairs of “unit characters” among peas. The same principle and ratio were maintained. As an example of mixed unit characters, when green round peas were crossed with yellow and wrinkled peas, the first genera-



tion (F<sub>1</sub>) are all yellow and round, showing that each side contributes something. When these are self-fertilized in the next generation (F<sub>2</sub>), they yield 6 yellow round, 3 green round, 3 yellow wrinkled and 1 green wrinkled.

The subject is too complicated for a popular treatise to pursue further, but it shows wide possibilities in the human race, both in physical and psychic qualities. The criminal of to-day may be a replica of some morbid properties in the chromosomes of perhaps five generations ago. The murderer whom we hang to-day may have already left seed containing chromosomes which will produce a desperate character to-morrow. It is generally agreed that there is no hope of cure for the homicidal maniac, or what we may term the born homicide, and this is the explanation. It is germinal. We have many juvenile homicides. There is no future hope for them except sterilized and in colonies; yet our old-fashioned legal system will liberate a murderer after twenty years in prison; one who committed the crime when he was only 16. It is very illogical and unscientific.

The following table will explain this wonderful discovery diagrammatically:—



Numerous experiments have been made by the late Professor Bateson, who elaborated Mendelism more than anyone else. The late Professor Darbyshire also experimented in many directions. His death in war service was a national loss. He made interesting observations by crossing Japanese waltzing mice with ordinary mice. Professor Biffen made researches of great economic value







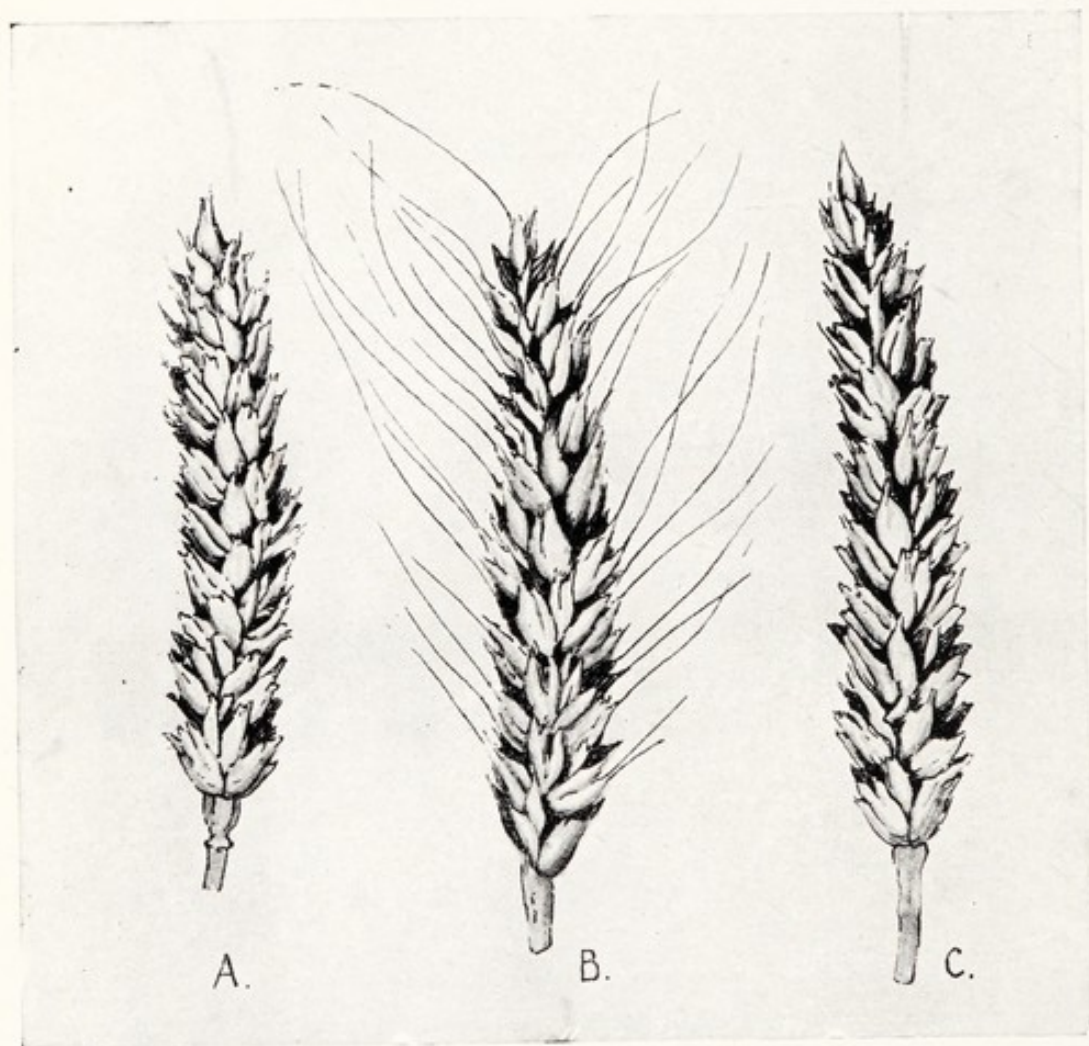


FIG. 48.—Mendelian phenomena in wheat. (After R. H. Biffen.) A, stand-up wheat ; B, bearded wheat ; C, the hybrid, showing that the beardless condition is dominant over the bearded. (From "Heredity," by Professor J. A. Thomson. By kind permission of Mr. Murray.)



in wheat.<sup>1</sup> Others have worked at plants, horses, eye-colour and many other characters.

While Mendel gave us our knowledge about dominants and recessives, his great discovery was that of what is technically called *segregation*. This is a normal phenomenon in Nature, the separation of different "unit characters" from each other in the formation of male and female germs. This process of segregation determines that regularity of differences which we find in heredity, both in animals and plants; and it explains the different varieties which appear in breeds of plants and animals. It is a complex subject and must be studied in the works on breeding. It defines how "unit characters" are to appear in the make-up of animals or plants, and affords a key to explain the complex composition of living forms.

As an example of unit characters let us take tall peas A, and dwarf peas a. It is obvious that there are at least two kinds of arrangement. In the pure, AA and aa: and in the mixed, Aa and aA, the first unit character, that is the first printed letter, being evident, and the second quality, hidden or latent. Would that we knew something of the latent characters in human beings, for this process of segregation must occur in us, and form the basis of our moral and intellectual natures.

Those who are anxious to pursue the subject should read Bateson's book, "Mendel's Principles of Heredity"; and Darbyshire's "Breeding and the Mendelian Discovery"; and Punnett's "Mendelism." Punnett made some interesting experiments which would appeal to the lay mind, in regard to blue Andalusian fowls.

On the other hand, if we take a hybrid between a negro and a white, the pigment is always mixed in proper proportions. The F 1 is neither black nor white, but a mulatto. A mulatto crossed with a white breeds a quadroon, that is three-quarters white, and so on, diluting

---

<sup>1</sup> Fig. 48.



the pigment, but no segregation of characters so far as we know.

Mendelism applied to racehorses is interesting. Chestnuts are recessive to bays and browns, which latter are dominants and have some black pigment. Chestnuts produce chestnuts with 1 per cent. exception. On the other hand, Mendelism does not fully account for the fleetness in a racehorse being transmitted, or for the transmission of blemishes. That famous horse, Eclipse, had a blemish spot and the same blemish appeared for seven subsequent generations.

Mendelism does not help as regards hæmophilia bleeders. The mothers carry the taint and their sons exhibit it, but the males do not pass it on. It is carried by the daughters to the grandsons and so on.<sup>1</sup>

I have been interested, on the physical side, as to the transmission of characters in finger prints. Chief Inspector Collins kindly analysed about sixty cases, representing four generations, proceeding from a great-great-grandfather. The transmission of parental characters was about 50 per cent.

### DEVELOPMENT IN UTERO.

We have rather strayed from our subject, but shall now pass to the human fertilized ovum, while it divides and attaches itself to the wall of the uterus, deriving nourishment from the mother. While I was studying the problem of development, I had the good luck to procure a human foetus at the thirty-fifth day. It was less than an inch long from snout to tail and curled up, a most curious little object. It had a large head with a tiny black spot on each side, the eyes. The black colour was due to the retinal cells. There were punctures for the ears, also for the nostrils; a slit represented the mouth, and in the neck three more slits, or gills. This foetus was near the fish

---

<sup>1</sup> See Chapter IV, fig. 3.



stage, or the amphibian, for as we develop from lowly cells we pass through the gamut of the animal world. There were no true limbs in this specimen, but what are called buds. I would call them fins or flappers. At first glance it looked like a sea-lion with four flappers and a tail.<sup>1</sup>

Another specimen, at the fifty-sixth day of development, had lost its tail and had grown minute limbs. Under the microscope, in very thin stained sections, groups of cells forming the bones could be seen, and in the head other groups of cells and cell nuclei, building up nerves and brain cells; eyes, ears and jaws; lungs, heart, abdominal organs, and so forth.

Life is indeed a miracle and whence it comes or how it works no man can say. Though in the beginning all the cells look alike, each group has a different function. One kind cannot be replaced by another kind, and yet they all have originated from the two primary cells, ovum and spermatozoon, which fused together. Obviously to get the best results for the offspring we must show great solicitude for the maternal organism, which is in charge of the important chromosomes. That is what the Jews do, and hence their power of endurance in spite of many ages of persecution.

At the ninth month, when the infant ought to weigh 7 lb., and measure 20 in., he enters the universe and makes his first bow. The brain development during its intra-uterine life interests us most, for the brain in evolution passes through gradual stages, from the fish upwards.

When it reaches the mammal stage, there develop a few simple grooves such as are found in the brain, say of the cat, but these grooves spread and deepen until at the sixth to seventh month the monkey or ape stage is reached. If development stops here we may have a normal or a weakling, or with bad luck, perhaps an idiot, and it is at this period especially that the mother must be cared for,

---

<sup>1</sup> Fig. 60, Chapter XXVII.



since unless everything matures properly there will be disaster.

I know of one child born at the sixth month of healthy parents who grew into a strong, healthy, intelligent man. He gave his life for his country.

Ought we to judge our fellow men too closely, considering that from conception nearly every one of us has had to encounter some unseen adversities against which there came no salvation?

### CONGENITAL DANGERS.

Leaving the subject of heredity, it seems a suitable place to diverge to environment, where, on the other side of the picture, there are dangers which we call congenital. This term means that the danger, such as the poison of tubercle or syphilis, is not necessarily in the germinal matter, the ovum or the spermatozoon, but the infection is local : in the mother's womb or in her blood ; probably by infection which her husband caught during the " wild oat stage."

When a child is born to a consumptive mother, the infant may have a weak resistance in the blood before birth, or infection may come after birth by contact. If such a child is taken away from the mother at once, it has a good chance of escaping tubercle, for the child is never born with consumption.

One of the tragedies of life is the number of children who, although not born blind, contract blindness at birth. This is due to maternal infection with gonorrhœa, usually contracted on the father's side. Great efforts are being made to stop this by cleansing the infant's eyes at birth of any matter which may have got in from the mother's discharges, during the descent from the uterus. Our blind asylums are crowded out by these sad cases. It is curious how slow we have been to wake up to this evil ; but then it was, of course, nobody's business, and, for the over-fastidious and over-pure in mind, it is not a



pleasant subject to discuss. National health has never been regarded seriously until lately. These blind cases alone, without all the idiocy and suffering, ought to have been enough argument to enforce control over prostitution and any suspected male. Those who do not understand should leave these difficult problems alone. So far they have thwarted reform and added enormously to the general suffering.

### HINTS FROM HORSE BREEDING.

We often get valuable practical help from breeders, though direct scientific proof or explanation may not be forthcoming. In regard to racehorses, the power of transmission of characters appears to decrease after the twentieth year, but there are on record the following cases<sup>1</sup> :—

In 1680 the stallion Byerly Turk at the age of 21 had two offspring.

About 1715 Flying Childers, when 20 and 22, had two foals.

In the eighteenth century Partner from the age of 21 to 29 had eleven; and Blank from the age of 20 to 28 was sire to nineteen.

In 1875 Master Kildare, at the age of 23, had Ostend Express.

Few horses live to the age of 30; I worked one of Russian blood to the age of 25, and I regarded its age as corresponding to 60 in the human. He was too proud to retire and died in harness. Some horses have a lot of character.

If stallions are used too much the foals become lighter in weight, and if used too young their fertility decreases. Stallions must be taken very slowly from training to covering. If we compare these opinions with present social conditions we can get some valuable hints on

---

<sup>1</sup> Baron von Ottingen on "Horse Breeding."



human sexual problems and see the value of self-control to the future generation and the importance of not dissipating at too young an age.

We gain from horse breeding some knowledge of what appears to resemble the transmission of acquired characters. It is admitted on all sides that such qualities as trotting, pulling and riding are transmitted. That is to say, the offspring of well-trained trotters learn to trot more easily and in better form than the offspring of non-trotters or badly-trained trotters. We find the same among mankind; for instance, among the wood-carvers and clock-makers in Germany and Switzerland, and glass-blowers in England. Abhorrent of the suggestion of the transmission of acquired characters, we say this is due to imitation and environment in the peasants' homes, but no similar argument will apply to trotters, or like cases. Breeders, indeed, have formulated a doctrine of constancy whereby they declare that heredity in horses is sure and constant, if a long line of ancestors has been trained to acquire the intended performance and has been favourably tested. Progress in the intended capabilities is regarded as essential and the products of capable parents are styled "highly bred."<sup>1</sup> The more highly bred the pedigree of both parents, the more constant the offspring. The "purity" of breed requires:—

- (1) A pure pedigree as recorded in the stud book.
- (2) A rational rearing.
- (3) Sufficient performances of the ancestors.

"Purity" is not used in the biological sense, for even thoroughbreds are not pure in that meaning. To illustrate the meaning of purity here, it is found that if ancestors are pampered instead of being trained and tested, the offspring will fail. Such stock, especially if the weakening had been allowed for some generations, would not transmit constancy, but would transmit effeminacy and lack of capabilities, or some opposite,

---

<sup>1</sup> H. V. Mathusius.



unwanted characters. The race then degenerates. The keeping up of performances is essential, and this principle is well illustrated by the present degeneracy of the Suffolks and Clydesdales.

Again let us pause and make use of the horse-breeder's knowledge and wisdom. These breeding principles are of great service in our everyday lives. Each of us can derive his own idea and moral. Galton in "Hereditary Genius" gives a number of clever families in all ranks and professions, and the one common factor in all is that they are workers. Yet in the human family, as in the racehorses, there must be "blood" and the pedigree of quality and stability. Which of us knows what ancestral qualities there may be hidden within us, which by energy on our side might raise us to a higher level? The great anatomist and surgeon, John Hunter, from the age of 17 to 24, was a cabinet maker, but in spite of that he afterwards founded the Museum at the College of Surgeons in Lincoln's Inn, and his writings of 150 years ago are to-day as fresh as they were then. The illustrious Sir William Herschel, who rose to be President of the Royal Society, came to England with the band of the Hanoverian Guards and later was organist at Bath. At the age of 41 he learned some mathematics, and, making his own telescope, gained fame as an astronomer, being the discoverer of Uranus. He lived to the great age of 83, a clear thinker to the end. His father and his brother, Alexander, were both bandsmen. His son, Sir John, was another great astronomer. He had three distinguished grandsons. One, a professor of physics, Alexander, a valued friend in my youth, was famed for his observations on meteor showers. He died recently at the family seat near Slough, which had been given to the family by George III.

Innumerable examples could be shown of how brain power runs in families for three or four generations, and when two or more intellectual families intermarry they make a remarkably good showing. Take, for example,



the offspring of Sir Philip Sydney and John Dudley. The Norths and Montagus produced a fine group of descendants, and so with many other family trees mentioned by Francis Galton.

We see that purity of breed is more or less artificial. Against that proposition we have natural breeds, such as the Arab and Steppe horses, where the natural environment keeps up the purity. It is thought that when introduced to town life the offspring falls off in quality, as we should expect, but there has not been a sufficiently long trial to give us adequate evidence.

Cross-breeding is instructive, as there is much of that in the human family. When the American trotter is crossed with the thoroughbred, we get a combination of hard sinews and bone with well developed lungs, strong heart action and healthy nerves. Thoroughbreds and Steppe horses make a good hybrid, but American and Russian trotters do not come out well, as the former are trained for short runs and the latter for long distances. The different training will not harmonize. We would ask the biologist, is this germinal? Remember, it looks like the question of inheritance of acquired characters.

There appears to be an element of lottery in transmission. Some who ought to succeed do not, and others, who seem feeble, produce good offspring. The latter we call prepotent, which means an individual character of strength in breeding and transmitting. On the other hand, there may be no such thing as a lottery in life. Everything may be pre-ordained in the germinal chain, in the arrangement of the chromosomes, for it would seem to be when we fall out with Nature that trouble comes.



## Chapter XXVI

---

### SUMMARY

#### THE EVOLUTION OF SEX.

Various Research Workers.

In Mendelian Terms.

J. H. Orton's Work.

#### THE ACCESSORY CHROMOSOME.

Sex Chromosomes.

Chromomeres.

"The Genetics of Sexuality in Animals."

Is Sex Pure?

### THE EVOLUTION OF SEX.

THE speculation as to the evolution, or determination, of sex has gone through many widely different phases.

Jung<sup>1</sup> thought sex was determined by nourishment. He found that among tadpoles the proportion of females to males was usually 57 per cent. ; but if he fed one group on beef the proportion of females rose to 78 per cent. Another group was fed on fish, and the females increased to 81 per cent. ; and finally frog flesh raised the percentage to 92. In an experiment of this kind there is one weak point, the mortality among the males, and the uncertainty which infant mortality involves.

W. Heape<sup>2</sup> has come to the conclusion that nourish-

---

<sup>1</sup> See Geddes and Thomson, "The Evolution of Sex."

<sup>2</sup> See "Proportion of the Sexes produced by Whites and Coloured Peoples in Cuba," by Walter Heape, M.A., F.R.S., *Proc. Roy. Soc.*, Ser. B, vol. lxxxi, 1909.



ment has much to do with the excessive production of one sex or the other. If nourishment be abundant then more females are born, but if it be scanty the more delicate female ova or embryos perish, and more males are born.

Dusing's<sup>1</sup> results (1891) show that while want and privation are constantly correlated with an increase of male births, prosperity is associated with an increase of female births ; that while starvation and an unfavourable climatic condition are inimical to the development of females, a plentiful supply of nutritious food, and specially favourable physical conditions, result in the survival of an increased proportion of that sex.

Nourishment does not of course refer only to the quantity of food, but to its quality and the power of absorbing it.

Heape<sup>2</sup> says that "the variable metabolic activity of the mother, acting upon the ovary, induces a struggle for existence between the ovarian ova of different sexes, and affects the proportion of male or female ova which ripen and are produced for fertilization.

"It is worthy of notice that these same extraneous forces must affect the proportionate production of individuals possessing various kinds of different characters, quite other than sex, which are associated with metabolism,<sup>3</sup> and when better understood may have valuable bearing on the means of selection of healthy ova and for preventing maturation of ova bearing the active germs of disease."

The extended research of many other observers does not tend to support the idea that nourishment plays any part in the determination of sex.

---

<sup>1</sup> Loc. cit., p. 275.

<sup>2</sup> Abstract, p. 37, loc. cit.

<sup>3</sup> Metabolism is the process of assimilating food and incorporating the substances into the living tissues. It applies to every form of animal life.



Of late years the foregoing ideas of sex production have been largely supplanted by the theory that the sex of an individual is already determined in the germ cell from which it develops.

Sylvestri<sup>1</sup> showed that in two kinds of insects the sex was determined at a very early stage, that is, in the ova. These insects lay eggs in other insects and each single egg divides into smaller eggs, each of which in turn forms an embryo. In *Litomastix* each egg produces ten to twenty smaller eggs containing so many embryos, while in *Ageniaspis* there may be 1,000 embryos from the one original egg; but all the embryos from one egg are of the same sex.

The theory of the causation of sex has grown in general favour, as a result of the success which has attended the attempt to describe sexual phenomena in Mendelian terms.

W. E. Castle supposed that each sex was a Mendelian zygote<sup>2</sup> of constitution (male and female); that is to say, that half the germ cells, whether they be ova or spermatozoa, bear the male character; and half bear the female character. In conjunction the only unions which were fertile were those between gametes, ova and sperms, bearing opposite sex characters. He assumed that dominance attached something to maleness and something to femaleness, and as often to the one as the other.<sup>3</sup>

J. H. Orton<sup>4</sup> made some observations as to the change

---

<sup>1</sup> *Annali R. Scuola Agric.*, Portici VI, 1906, and *Bolletino R. Scuola Agric.*, III, 1908.

<sup>2</sup> Gamete and zygote are terms constantly used by Mendelians. Gamete is a general term to represent the germinal elements, the ovum and the spermatozoon; when these unite they form a zygote, which then divides into two, then four, and so on, thus building up the embryo. The zygote contains twice the number of chromosomes to the gamete, as previously explained. Read the section on "Conception to Daylight."

<sup>3</sup> W. E. Castle, Harvard, Cambridge, Mass., U.S.A., January, 1903.

<sup>4</sup> *Proc. Roy. Soc.*, Co. 81, B (1909).



over of sex. His experiments were on a long, narrow limpet, called the *Crepidula fornicata*, which settles on oyster shells. It is at first a male. Later another similar mollusc settles on its back and so on, until some ten or twelve are adhering to each other's shells, forming a chain. When this is examined, say in a group of twelve, the bottom four are females, and possess a uterus only; the top four are males and possess only male genitalia; while the intermediate four are hermaphrodites, possessing both male and female genitalia. Mr. Orton found that at the beginning the young mollusc has male genitalia, but after a time rudimentary female genitalia appear. The animal passes through a period of hermaphroditism, after which the male organ atrophies and the female uterus or ovary develops. It is a remarkable fact that all the young are males. There are no females among them. As they develop, although they look like males, the microscope reveals ova in the germ gland alongside of spermatocytes and spermatozoa. This is beautifully shown in a photograph I took of a specimen he gave me.<sup>1</sup>

Giard, in certain species of crabs, has demonstrated that the male is a potential hermaphrodite and the female is pure. The male can go almost the whole way in development of female characters: but the female can only approach maleness in a very slight degree. We see in the human race that some males are mentally females; while normal males, as they approach old age and lose their sexual activity, develop femaleness. They run to fat, their breasts enlarge like females, and their virility softening, they adopt gentler dispositions.

Females to-day seem to have acquired new characters and force, in changing to maleness. What is the basis of the psychic change in modern woman? Is it germinal or is it environment? As women grow old they gravitate to the secondary characters of the male sex. Hair grows on the face and body, breasts atrophy, the voice grows

---

<sup>1</sup> Chapter XXV, fig. 45.







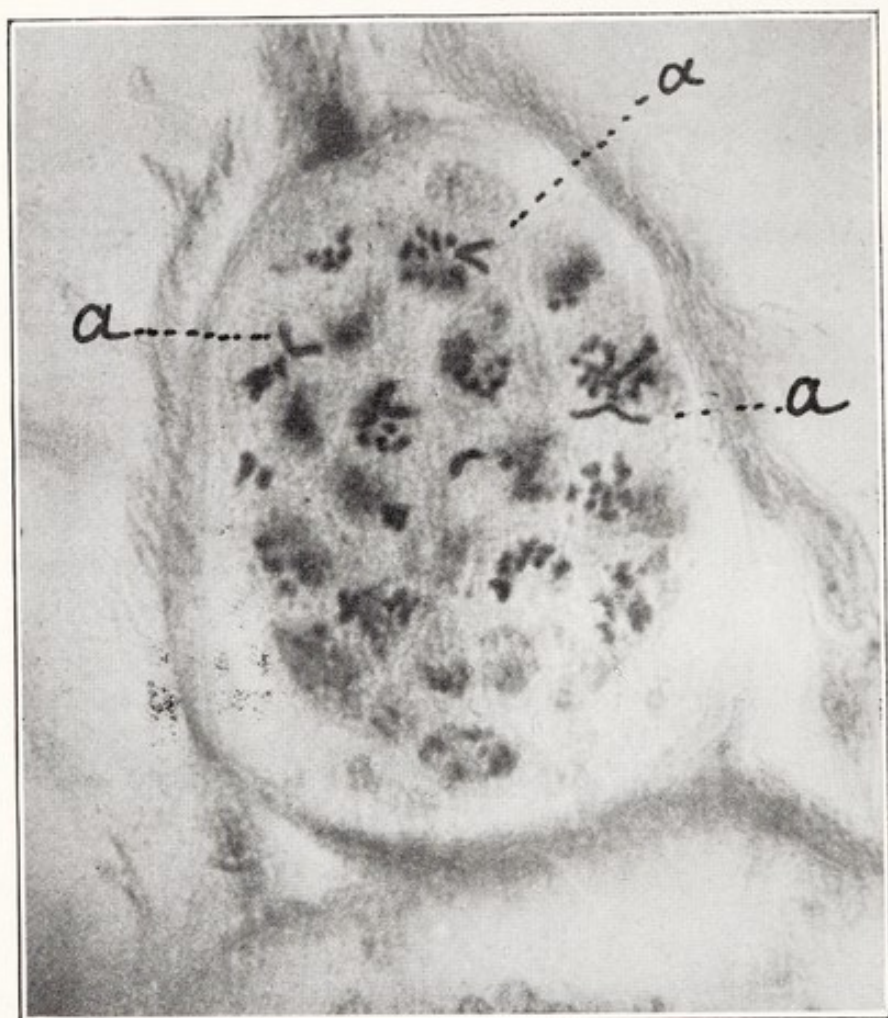


FIG. 49.—I am indebted to the late Professor Darbishire for this section of the germinal gland of the *Gryllus*, or cricket. Each of these cell bodies with clusters of chromosomes represents a mother sperm cell. The interest of the picture centres in the accessory chromosomes, *a*, which are concerned in the determination of sex.



harsh, and they develop something of the stern male character. An old woman may become less amiable; an old man becomes more sympathetic. As old age approaches sex becomes neuter.

There are certain first principles in physiology which govern functions, whether in lowly organisms or the higher mammals. Among these none are more striking than those which relate to fertilization. The anatomical detail or structure is a secondary matter, being a question of adaptation. The governing principle is the same whether the result is a snail, an insect, or a human being.

### THE ACCESSORY CHROMOSOME.

Professor Crew, of Edinburgh University, considers that "sex in the higher animals is usually predetermined at the time of fertilization."

Perhaps some of our earliest information came from Professor E. B. Wilson of Columbia University. He found among certain insects that half the spermatoczoa had an extra chromosome, which he called the accessory chromosome. On the other hand, every unfertilized ovum had one accessory chromosome. The accessory chromosome is shown in fig. 49, in a photograph I took of the male genital gland of a cricket, *Gryllus*. This section was given to me by the late Professor Darbyshire, whose death during the war was a great loss to the science of biology. Each of the clusters seen in this photograph represents what biologists call a parent cell, or spermatid, in process of development. We see in some a curved chromosome, which is the accessory chromosome. These parental cells are in active state, about to divide, each forming two mature spermatozoa. One of these ripe spermatozoa has the accessory chromosome, while the other is deficient.

This is more easily understood when represented diagrammatically.<sup>1</sup> The upper line shows a parent or

---

<sup>1</sup> Fig. 50.



mother sperm cell in process of division<sup>1</sup> into two mature spermatozoa. In the lower half of this mother cell, the thick curved line represents the accessory chromosome. After division it is evident that one spermatozoon contains the accessory chromosome, while the other draws a blank. This is shown clearly in the second line. As aforesaid, every ovum has an accessory chromosome. When these mature spermatozoa come into contact with mature ova, as shown in the second and third lines, there result two fertilized ova, which are shown on the bottom line.<sup>2</sup> The future sex is then decided. Where the conjunction is with a spermatozoon containing an accessory chromosome, we have a female-producing ovum, distinguished by possessing two accessory chromosomes. This is shown on the lowest line on the right. In the other union with the spermatozoon which is devoid of an accessory chromosome, the fertilized ovum possesses only its own original accessory chromosome. The result is a male-bearing ovum. It is on the left of the lowest line.

The decision arrived at nearly twenty years ago was that the spermatozoa, possessed of accessory chromosomes, produce females; while the sperm cells devoid of the accessory chromosomes produce males. This was considered to solve the mystery of sex. Some might push the question, why does the female get something extra and substantial at the moment of fertilization? This would seem to-day an unsolvable problem. It also suggests that one sex, the male, is a potential hermaphrodite, capable of producing males and females in equal numbers; while the female is a pure form in the biological sense.

An important social question arises. In the division of the parent sperm cell it has been suggested that the accessory chromosome, instead of going in one complete

---

<sup>1</sup> For division of cells or karyokinesis, see section on "Conception."

<sup>2</sup> The fertilized cells are called *zygotes*.





1st Division of  
sperm mother cell.

### Spermatids

Male producing

Female producing



Mature Sperms



Mature Ova  
unfertilized.



Fertilized Ova

Male and Female.

FIG. 50.—The theory of the production of sex and the relationship of the accessory chromosome, which is fully explained in the text, is here shown diagrammatically.







mass into one half, may be split up so that a portion goes into each spermatozoon. Therefore at fertilization no longer a pure male and a pure female are produced, sex is then double. We may expect what is sometimes spoken of as the third sex; a female deprived of her proper constituent in full amount, thus showing some maleness; while the male has some femaleness introduced by this fragment split off the accessory chromosome. We can realize how accidents may occur at fertilization which end in disaster to the individual, by this reduction to the third or unwanted sex. Fresh laws should be made under the guidance of facts and physiology.

It is abundantly evident how many females possess a certain amount of maleness, and prefer male attire and habits. Their instincts are also seriously diverted, and so conversely with the males. We must not blame them as they are not responsible for being freaks. Physiology gone wrong is termed pathology, and this big social problem, with the knowledge of to-day cannot be dealt with on purely legal lines. We must call on the alienist or the psychologist. It is germinal, the fault of the parents.

### SEX-CHROMOSOMES.

Professor Crew writes:<sup>1</sup> "In *Ascaris megalocephala*<sup>2</sup> it has been possible to demonstrate that the first division of the fertilized egg results in two cells which can be recognized from the beginning as being different in their organization; one of these cells gives rise to the somatic<sup>3</sup> tissues and the other to the germ cells. In the case of the former the nuclear material undergoes a marked diminution in quantity, whereas in the other no such reduction takes place. The lineage of the sex cells from

---

<sup>1</sup> "The Genetics of Sexuality in Animals," pp. 2 and 3.

<sup>2</sup> The common round-worm which is parasitic in the human intestine.

<sup>3</sup> Somatic cells of the body in contrast to the cells of reproduction.



embryo to adult is demonstrable and these can be shown to form the natural link between generations.

"Reference must be made to the chromosome theory of heredity. If it is true, as this hypothesis postulates, that for all the characters, anatomical and physiological, there are antecedent determiners, factors, or genes, in the germplasm, the chromosomes themselves in new characterizations are but the reflections of specific regional alterations in the organization of the chromatin material, of mutations, and if new characters, having arisen, persist in virtue of the integrity of the hereditary mechanism, then it follows that in<sup>1</sup> allogamy-cross-fertilization there exists the mechanism of the spread of a new characterization through the race to which the individual belongs, since it can be brought into association with other genetic variations, other genetic deviations from the usual characterization, that have occurred independently in time and remotely in space. The mingling of different hereditary constitutions, of different genotypes, leads to different factorial recombinations, and thence to new character combinations, new phenotypes, these being the raw material upon which selective agencies may work."

### *Chromomeres.*

In regard to the hidden mystery of the chromosomes, and the method of transmission of the heritable qualities, Wenrich (1916) and others have shown that chromosomes are composite bodies, like chains, or strings of beads, and it is supposed that each swelling, which they call a *chromomere*, may carry some character. Wenrich's observations were made on a grasshopper. Dr. F. A. E. Crew, director of the Animal Breeding Research Department of Edinburgh, says<sup>2</sup>: "It will have been recognized that this theory of inheritance postulates the

---

<sup>1</sup> A cross-fertilization in which each of the germ-cells bear opposite characters.

<sup>2</sup> *British Medical Journal*, August 14, 1926.



existence of a number of individual particles of substance, each of which controls the development of some particular tissue or character in the developing organism. It is, therefore, of profound interest to know that the chromosomes are indeed made up of small aggregates, the *chromomeres*. It has been established in favourable cases that a particular chromosome always exhibits the same series of chromomeres in any stage when they can be identified. Wenrich has shown that any particular chromosome, to be recognized by its distinctive shape, is built up of a definite number of chromomeres, and these are to be recognized by constant differences in form and position."

Considering that in ten generations we have more than 1,000 ancestors, the "determinants" or chromomeres, or invisible particles carrying our inheritance, surpass the keenest imagination. Are they all retained? Are like characters coming from each parent retained in stronger doses? Or are some qualities neutralized by being opposed to each other, or do they lie latent for generations? What a field of speculation in the absence of the knowledge which we await until the result of the vast amount of biological research now going on is fully established. It is the non-recognition of these facts that leads to the wild and unsupported speculations of the new psychology.

### "THE GENETICS OF SEXUALITY IN ANIMALS"

is the title of a recent<sup>1</sup> work by Professor F. A. E. Crew, Director of the Animal Breeding Research Department, and Lecturer in Genetics in the University of Edinburgh. It sends a thrill through those of us who studied in Edinburgh to feel that our Alma Mater still leads in scientific research.

Professor Crew confirms that the identical twins,

---

<sup>1</sup> 1927.



technically called twin zygotes, derived from a single ovum, are always of the same sex. This is of some interest to us as affecting ourselves as well as the lower creation. Therefore if twins are born, one male and the other female, the presumption is that there were two separate ova fertilized at the same time.

His observations differ in detail from those of the older school concerning the accessory chromosome. Many workers, Morgan, Geddes and Thompson, Cunningham and others, have shown that the sexes are distinct in form and even in chemical constitution. To put this problem in a popular way, Morgan and Crew found in the insect *Drosophila melanogaster* that there was a difference in the chromosome picture of the two sexes.<sup>1</sup>

There is a pair of chromosomes in the germ cells of each sex which are called the sex-chromosomes. They differ in the male from those in the female. In the female germinal tissues the pair are alike, and are called X chromosomes. One of the pair in the male is similar to that of the female X; while the unequal, unlike mate in the male is known as the Y chromosome. In respect of the sex-chromosomes, the female is represented as XX, and the male is XY. The Y chromosome is different from all the others, and possibly corresponds to the accessory chromosome of the older school.

"The situation<sup>2</sup> thus arises that in all the cells of the body of the female and in her immature ova there are four pairs of homologous (or similar) chromosomes, and of these one pair consists of two X chromosomes, whereas in all the somatic (or body) cells and immature gametes<sup>3</sup> of the male there are also four pairs, but of these one

---

<sup>1</sup> A small fruit fly, which breeds quickly and is very easily kept going from generation to generation in a glass tube, fed on bananas. It is used for Mendelian breeding work, largely in the U.S.A.

<sup>2</sup> Loc. cit., p. 7.

<sup>3</sup> Gametes are germ cells.



consists of an X chromosome in association with a Y chromosome. Into each ripe gamete there passes one or other member of each pair. All eggs are alike in that each contains an X chromosome, but there will be two kinds of sperm, one containing an X chromosome, the other kind containing a Y chromosome. The female of *Drosophila* is monogametic, the male is diagametic. When egg and sperm unite in fertilization, there will be two forms of zygotes,<sup>1</sup> one that received an X chromosome by way of the sperm, and the other that received a Y chromosome. The first will have a sex-chromosome constitution that can be symbolized XX, which is typical of the female ; the other a sex chromosome constitution symbolized as XY, that of a male."<sup>2</sup>

This quotation to some of the laity appears difficult. To put it more clearly for purposes of fertilization, two structures called sex chromosomes are set apart in each sex. In the female they are both alike and are called X. In the male there is one similar X chromosome, but it is combined with one of a different type, called Y. Therefore when ripened and division occurs each ovum carries an X, but only one sperm carries an X.

The result is that when the X-carrying ovum is fertilized by an X-bearing spermatozoon, XX results, and that is a female. On the other hand, if a Y-carrying spermatozoon fertilizes an ovum, which latter always carries an X, then we get a male or XY combination.

This is an addition to our previous knowledge and is being proved by various experiments, and appears to be the last word in the origin of sex.

### IS SEX PURE ?

It is my opinion, from observation of erring humanity, that sex is not absolutely pure, that possibly there is no pure male or pure female in the adult stage. In

---

<sup>1</sup> Zygote is a fertilised ovum.

<sup>2</sup> Loc. cit., pp. 7 and 8.



every female there is a latent maleness: and in every male femaleness is hidden.

I have a theory, supported by years of observation, that when Nature's plans and methods are thwarted serious results occur. D elage and others have shown that if the ova of starfish are damaged, monstrosities or dwarf forms occur. Physical injury produces physical deformity. But there is a more serious aspect, the interference of the proper arrangement of the chromosomes. Though this cannot be demonstrated, the possibility of such happening does not require a great stretch of imagination. If the male-forming ovum receives more than its share of female characters, or qualities, we get an abnormal feminine male; but suppose the male-forming ovum does not get its proper share of female characters, then it is a deficient male—deficient in properties which would complete its character as a normal male. Imagine what an adult male form, deficient in femaleness, is. Can we not easily infer that some physiological accident may at the time of conception make a "Jack the Ripper," or any other of those murderers who cause such sensational sexual crime? Is it not probable that these horrible brutes, who mutilate women and who delight in brutalities, are accidents of Nature? Working on physiological as well as on religious lines, is it not our duty to study these sexual problems more closely, and laying aside sentiment, sterilize freely, so as to purify the race?

The male is perhaps a sort of hermaphrodite<sup>1</sup>, or in strictly scientific terms bi-potential. This ought to be embodied in the creed of the divorce authorities. This theory of bi-potentiality of sex is no fanciful idea. There are more than a thousand cases reported by Neugebauer of so-called hermaphroditism.

There are several cases published by surgeons, where operations have been performed for hernia, and an organ representative of the opposite sex has been found in the sac.

---

<sup>1</sup> Hermes : a man. Aphrodite : a woman.



In one case a man was operated on for inguinal hernia and a solid body was found, which proved to be a rudimentary uterus with an ovary attached. He had female characters—a beardless face and a high-pitched voice. In a case of the opposite kind, a woman, there was found a male sex gland, which on microscopic section showed the normal male gland tissue. She was of rather masculine type. These are just two out of many to demonstrate my point.<sup>1</sup> Who amongst us, who passes as a man or a woman in the eyes of mankind and the laws of England, can be certain that he or she is not represented by the characters of both sexes, in his or her internal organization, or even a predominance of the opposite sex? Think what it means when we know that the sex glands are not solely employed in forming germinal substance, but that the secretions of the interstitial cells act on the nervous system to regulate our lives, feelings and ideas. There is more truth in this theory than would fill this volume, and no order or justice can be obtained in our law courts when physiology is ignored. This does not mean that there is any truth in the neo-psychologist's idea that our lives are wholly governed by our sexual urge. That is an over-stated fiction.

---

<sup>1</sup> These and many like them are authentic, being collected from medical journals.



## Chapter XXVII

---

### SUMMARY

THE BRAIN MACHINE.

REFLEX ACTION.

Experimental.

THE NEURON.

Cells and Fibres.

The Basal Ganglia.

THE CEREBRUM.

Brain Weight.

THE GREY CORTEX.

ASSOCIATION AREAS.

CONSCIOUSNESS.

The Emotions.

The Subconscious Mind.

Automatism.

THE KEY of the PROBLEM.

Post-natal Development.

"Let us start fair!"

**W**E shall here discuss the physiology of the nervous system, of the brain and mind, so as to enable us to understand ourselves, and observe the faults or rifts in the life and character of our less fortunate brethren, due to accidents in the building up of the brain.

If we have the opportunity to examine the nervous system as a whole, or see a diagram, we shall find that the spinal cord is attached to the lower and posterior



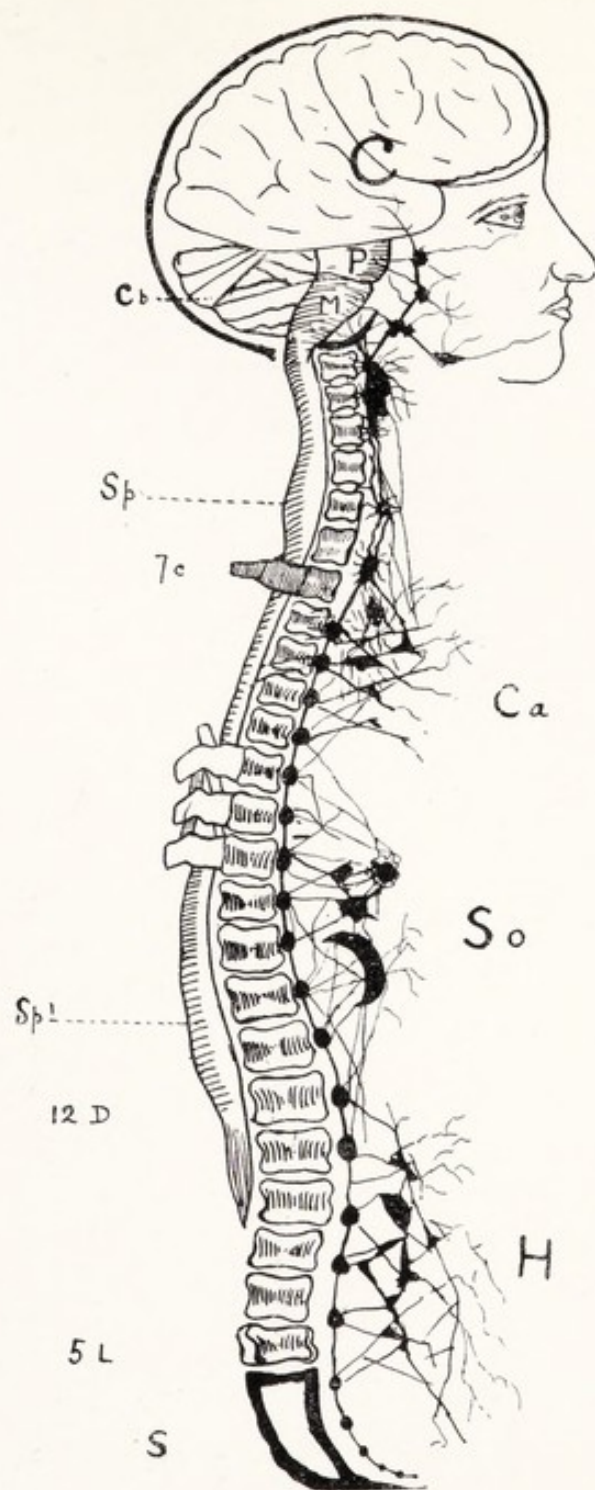


FIG. 51.—This to show the sympathetic nervous system (in black). The spine or backbone is in segments, the spine protects the spinal cord or marrow, *Sp*. The latter is thicker at *Sp* and *Sp*<sup>1</sup> where are the nerves connected with the arms and legs. *C* is the cerebrum or higher brain; *Cb* is the cerebellum, a very complex part to do with balancing; *M*, the medulla which contains the vital centres; and *P*, the pons, where strands of nerves cross, &c. The ancient nervous system, the sympathetic, controls all our vital parts. They are in masses or ganglia, behind the face and in the neck. *Ca*, another chain of plexus for heart and lungs. *So* represents ganglia for the abdominal organs, the solar plexus; and *H*, for the sexual organs in the pelvis, &c.



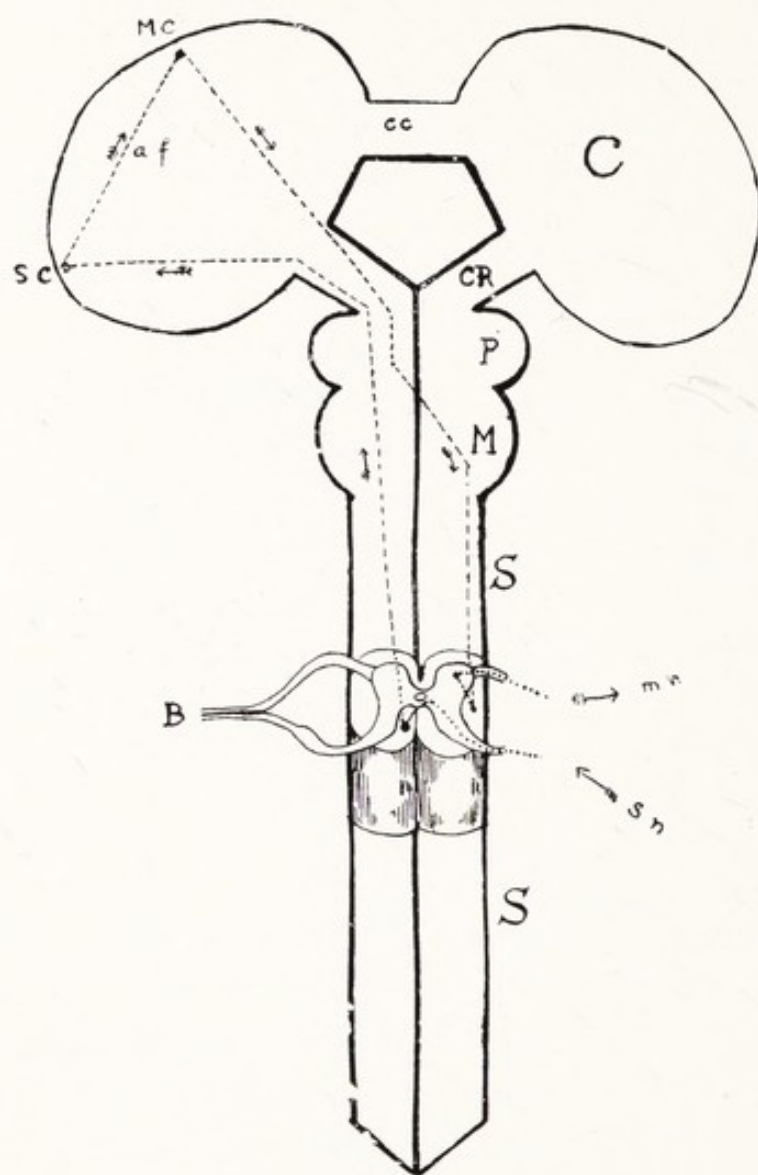


FIG. 52.—This is to show how the brain and spinal cord, right and left, work in two halves. Follow the arrows and notice *sn*, where an impulse runs up the spinal cord *S*, say from the skin, crosses to the opposite half in the spinal cord, and up to the brain, where the message is sorted out at an association area and a reply sent from the motor cortex, *Mc*, which crosses in the brain, by the pons or bridge, *P*, to the original side and down the cord to certain muscles of the area which sent up a sensory message.



part of the brain and looks like an appendage.<sup>1</sup> Such it is, carrying out the directions of the brain all over the body.

I will first show an explanatory diagram (fig. 52), to demonstrate the working of the brain and spinal cord. These are divided into right and left, and the left brain directs the right half of the body and vice versa. Arrows indicate the direction of nerve motion. An irritation, say of the hand, travels along a sensory nerve, s.n., and crosses to the opposite half of the cord, travelling upwards to the cortex of that side, s.c. A message is sent to the motor centre, m.c., in front, and directing motor impulses travel down, after recrossing higher up, and reach the muscles of the irritated hand. The actual process is much more complicated, calling in visual and association centres, but all working on the same lines.

In front of the bony spinal column, the backbone, are nerve masses, ganglia and fibres (coloured black in the diagram). These cells and fibres form the lowest and oldest part of the nervous system, the Sympathetic. It has nothing to do with the psychic quality of sympathy; but such was the name allotted to the system by early anatomists.

The sympathetic nervous system is the oldest in time, and the most important of all the nerve structures as it controls all the vital functions and is intimately connected with the endocrine glands.

In early days we did not know why the sea-anemone closed up when touched. To-day we know that there is a nervous system composed of cells and fibres, which by a reflex, unconscious movement, on the principle just described, commands the tentacles to close when there is any disturbance near. As we climb the ladder of evolution we establish a common brotherhood, with the worm which has one long cord of nerves, and further on with the snail, which is one of the earliest to have ganglia or

---

<sup>1</sup> Fig. 51.



masses of nerve cells and fibres. The snail has three ganglia, one in the head radiating to the eyes, ears, lungs and heart, which is sometimes spoken of as a brain, but it really corresponds to our sympathetic ganglia in the neck; the cervical, which are in touch with the organs of the head and of the chest.<sup>1</sup> The next ganglion in the snail is the abdominal, corresponding to our coeliac plexus at the pit of the stomach, where in our case a blow may be fatal: while the third mass in the snail is called the pedal, and it corresponds with our pelvic sympathetic ganglia, which have in control the reproductive and other organs. As evolution proceeds this basic plan is adhered to, and as far as health and vital phenomena are concerned our sympathetic nervous system is the vital and ruling factor. When it goes wrong all is wrong.

Nearly all, if not all, animals are built in segments with a chain or nerve cord running the length of the body. We are built in segments. The bony spine is made up of vertebræ united by strong ligaments, and from each segment of the nerve cord there are arranged bundles of motor and sensory nerves which direct different segments of the body and limbs.

When we pass from the invertebrates, those without a spine, and step on to a higher level, frogs, fish, snakes, birds and mammals, we see a higher organ of control, the brain, encased in a skull. Thus, there seems to be one steady line of evolution from these lowly animals to ourselves.

### REFLEX ACTION.

The simplest form of nerve motion is that just described in the sea-anemone. It exemplifies all nerve mechanisms and is the forerunner of the intricate nerve processes, even of thought in man. We call this simple act, Reflex Action, and it is an unconscious process. It

---

<sup>1</sup> The pain in the left neck and chest in *angina pectoris* is due to disturbance of the cervical sympathetic ganglion which controls the heart.



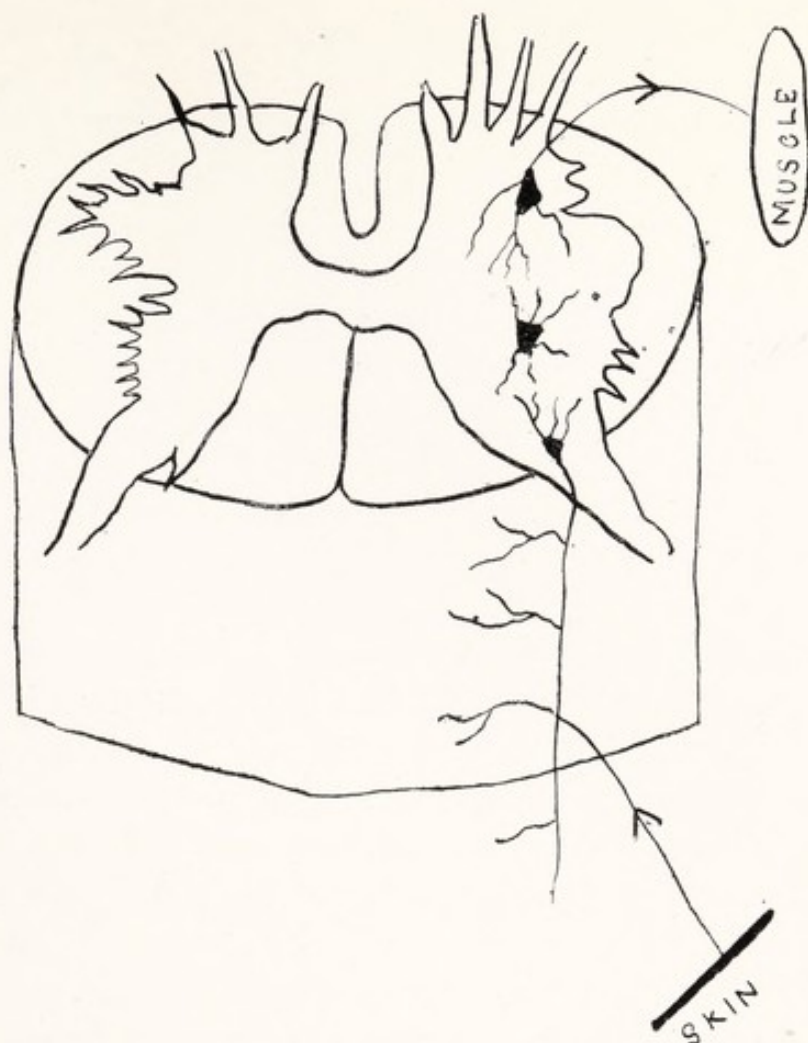


FIG. 53.—To illustrate reflex action as in tickling the foot of a sleeper. The arrow shows sensory impulse going to spinal cord and then to a central cell and next to a motor cell, which sends a message to the muscles of the foot to pull it away. This is purely diagrammatical.

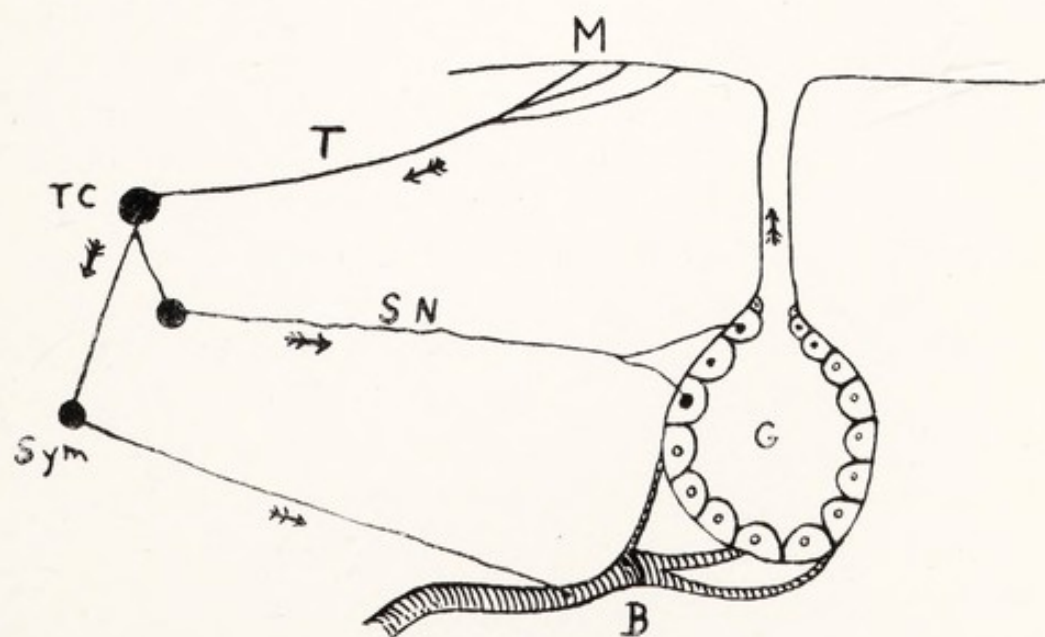


FIG. 54.—To illustrate the reflex action of the secretion of saliva. The taste sense passes from cells, M, on the surface of the tongue by a nerve, T, to the taste centre, TC. This sends messages to the salivary gland G, and by the sympathetic nerve, Sym, to the blood-vessel B, to supply more blood to the gland cells. The increase of blood to the cells causes an increase of gland activity.







can be demonstrated if you tickle the sole of a sleeper's foot, when he unconsciously, without waking, draws it away. Such is the meaning of the word Reflex; an automatic nerve response, which is reflected within the body. In explanation of this phenomenon there are sensory cells in the spinal cord which receive impressions from the skin of the foot. These in turn send impulses to motor cells in the spinal cord calling the muscles into action to pull the foot away.

Thus at once we begin to specialize between cells varying in function<sup>1</sup> :—

(a) Sensory cells with their nerves, receiving impressions from the outer world, by the skin, eye, ear, nose and tongue.

(b) Analytical or ganglion cells in the spinal cord or brain, which take the message and switch on the

(c) Motor cells and nerves calling certain muscles to action.

It thus resembles the telephone exchange, or, to put it more simply, it is like the electric bell system. The push corresponds to the sensory touch corpuscle or structure; the wire leading to the cell is analogous to the sensory nerve; the battery cell represents the nerve cell or ganglion, and the wire from it acts like the motor nerve. The ringing of the bell completes the circuit, as the motion to be produced, which in our case is some muscular action or response.

A common illustration of reflex action is where dust impinges on the sensitive surface of the eye; in this case the muscles of the lids are called upon to close tightly and with rapidity, and by reflex action the lachrymal gland is called upon to squeeze or shed tears to wash away the particle. As another example, when food reaches the back of the tongue, it is beyond our control, and the muscular act of swallowing is then reflex. Again, let us regard the reflex secretion of saliva. Stimu-

---

<sup>1</sup> Fig. 53.



lating sensations of taste travel from a taste corpuscle on the surface of the tongue to the blood-vessels and glands, causing the saliva to flow. The saliva is prepared from the blood by the gland cells and poured into ducts, which empty between the cheeks and the gums, so as to mix easily with the food.<sup>1</sup> The organ of smell will stimulate the gland; likewise when no food be about the memory or thought can make the mouth water. It is in such processes as these that the sympathetic nerves are in control acting silently without our knowing anything about it.

### *Experimental Reflex Action.*

The scratch reflex in a decapitated frog is very interesting. Suppose the frog be tickled on the left flank, it will raise the left hind leg to scratch; but if the irritation be continued, it may raise the opposite, or right foot, bringing it across to scratch. It will even scratch with its forefeet if the irritation be continued. In this comparatively simple process, the tickling sensation of the flank is carried to the sensory cells in the spinal cord, which call up groups of motor cells. These in turn send impulses to the muscles which perform this very complex act of scratching. If the left foot cannot remove the irritation of the skin, the intensity of the stimulus causes an increase or overflow of nerve energy to cross to the opposite side of the spinal cord, and invoke the motor cells and muscles of the right leg. The excessive nerve impulse, continuing, may overflow still further and travel higher up the spinal cord to the forelegs or arms.

Experiment shows that when a slight stimulus, as tickling, fails to call forth a motor response, if the same stimulus be applied as well in two or three places, there is at last a motor response. The former feeble stimulus was supposed to be unable to jump the synapses to the next neuron.

---

<sup>1</sup> See fig. 54.



It has been observed that continued slight stimuli accumulate in their effect. The tortures of the Spanish Inquisition revealed this, where the victim had to suffer the continued drop of water on one spot for a long period. One drop falling on the skin barely attracts attention, whereas a drop every few seconds, or half-minute, becomes exquisite torture on account of the accumulated stimulus to the touch corpuscle or perhaps to a pain cell.

### THE NEURON.

The neuron is a single nerve system, as illustrated by the ringing of an electric bell, or tickling the foot of a sleeper, and consists of three parts as just described, namely a receiver or sensory nerve, a cell and an emitter or motor nerve. The neurons are distributed all over the body, some in masses or ganglia, others in the spinal cord, and the highest in function are found in the brain, in a complicated degree of evolution. In numbers they cannot be counted nor even estimated.

These sets of neurons are not joined together, but are distinct systems, with infinitesimal gaps, which the nerve current has to jump over to reach the next. Some imagine these terminals have some intervening conducting material to prevent leakage of nerve force. Sherrington and Wundt have shown that these breaks in the connections, or as they call them, "synapses," may cause a delay in messages or inhibition. We know the rapidity of a stimulus along a nerve trunk was decided by Helmholtz at the rate of 100 to 120 ft. per second. Slow thinkers evidently are not able to send their ideas across the synapses at the ordinary rate. It was frequently observed that there was a good deal of delay or inhibition in soldiers suffering from shell shock, the poor men being stupefied and responding very slowly. This was thought to be due to a block at the junctions of the synapses, preventing them from working. In fatal cases numerous small hæmorrhages were found with a breaking up of the delicate nerve tissue.



The cells and fibres are imbedded in a soft tissue, called neuroglia, for protection against concussion.<sup>1</sup> A nerve cell when stained presents a beautiful pattern of "tigroid bodies," about which there is dispute. These disappear in disease or disorganization, as in idiots. From the base of each cell proceeds a single fibre, the axon, which carries the message away. At the apex of the cell are receiving fibres, dendrons, of which I show a very elaborate cell from the cerebellum, given to me by the late Sir Frederick Mott, M.D. (fig. 55B).

I have not sufficiently emphasized the fibres, so show a photograph lent to me by Professor Shaw Bolton of the fibres in the prefrontal area, the highest part of the brain (fig. 56).

I present another drawing, executed by my daughter; it shows the general arrangement of fibres in the brain. There are three main horizontal rows, connecting different areas, and vertical cells and fibres connecting the brain with the outer world (fig. 57, A and B).

### *The Basal Ganglia.*

We have seen that the simple brains of the fish, frog and bird foreshadow the foundation of our brains, and appear to correspond in structure and arrangement to the ganglia which lie at the base of our skulls.<sup>2</sup> These ganglia bear a distinct relation to vital phenomena, as has been shown by Professor Sherrington and others; and they appear to be the seat of our primary instincts and emotions. The neo-psychologists so reduce us as to suggest that the ganglia are the driving forces of our lives, what they call the unconscious mind. We owe to Sherrington the honour of unravelling this complex problem. He removed the upper brain or cerebrum of an animal, so

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* Chapter X, Fig. 34, for an excellent photograph of nerve cells and fibres.

Chapter X. Fig. 30 and Fig. 58.





A



B

FIG. 55.—A, this is a cell from the grey cortex, stained to show the pattern of what are termed tigroid bodies. This tiger-like pattern disappears in disease also after chloroform. B, this specimen was given to me by the late Sir Frederick Mott, M.D. It shows the enormous mass of dendrons or receivers. It is taken from the cerebellum.



FIG. 56.—This is a very interesting photograph lent to me by Dr. Shaw Bolton. It shows the fibrillation of the prefrontal cortex. The prefrontal cortex was not well understood and was thought to be poor in fibres as if Nature had failed in her architecture. Shaw Bolton showed that it was very rich in both fibres and cells and the final touch of the Great Architect in the construction of man. It is the centre that directs all.



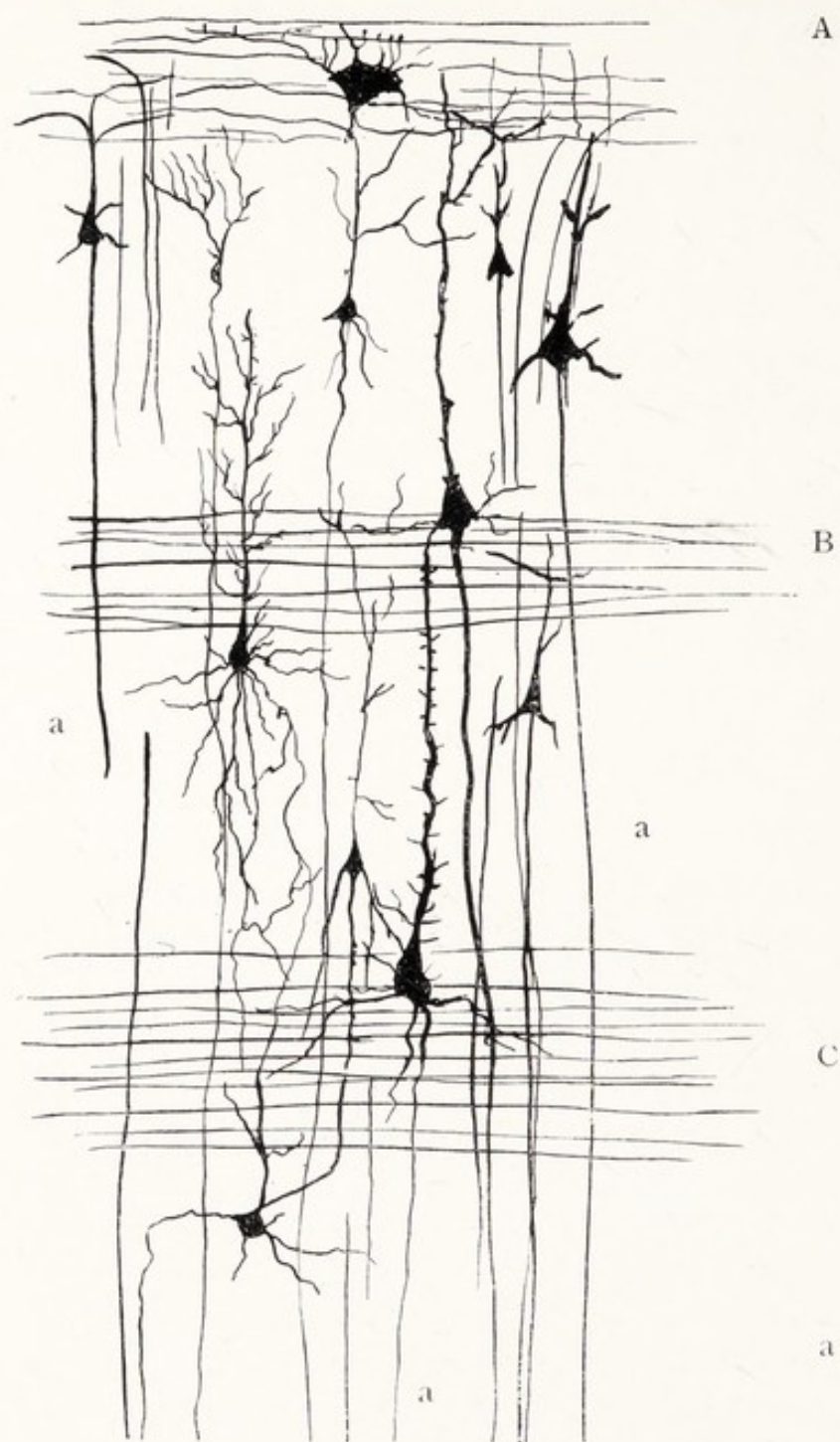


FIG. 57A.—This diagram drawn by my daughter, Miss Berta Wilson, shows the chief arrangement of fibres in the brain. This upper layer A is of delicate fibrils, the tangential, communications being thus made between the highest layers of cells. These are the first to fail and disappear. The supra-radial B and the lower layer C connect up large areas. The vertical cells, radiating outwards and upwards, are shown with their interlacing fibres. There is one axon *a* to each cell to carry the message, but many dendrons or receptors to receive messages.



that it had no intellectual knowledge or consciousness of what was going on ; but he left the aforesaid ganglia at the base of the brain. The sciatic nerve was then irritated, and the animal showed signs of defence and attack, drew the leg away and turned the head to the side. The animal, a dog or cat, would lower the head, set the jaw open as if to bite, draw back the lips as if snarling, snap and growl, or, in case of a cat, spit. This shows that all these symptoms, fear, anger, disgust, spite, so common in human life, may originate at the base of the brain and are purely animal instincts, more or less reflex in character.

Golz did, if anything, a more interesting experiment, for he decerebrated<sup>1</sup> a bitch and kept it alive for months. He removed the whole of the intellectual thinking brain and reduced the dog to about the level of a fish or a bird. This bitch could stand and would curl up to sleep, but when disturbed to be taken out of her cage and fed, would snarl in anger and snap. She would put her head down, her coat standing up, and her ears set back, and would struggle and try to get free to go into her cage again. Such behaviour showed an absence of memory of previous days, and there never were any signs of pleasure ; nor, of course, was there any affection or gratitude to those who fed her. She evinced ordinary sexual reaction and function. The animal was listless and unintelligent, as well as having no memory. Her mind and memory disappeared when the grey matter was removed ; yet the Neos regard her behaviour as evidence of a deep-seated unconscious mind ; and have no use for the cerebrum.

Her functions were normal, though she would not go and search for food, but when placed within reach would take it, chew it and swallow it like a normal dog. Golz tried her with some meat soaked in quinine, but the

---

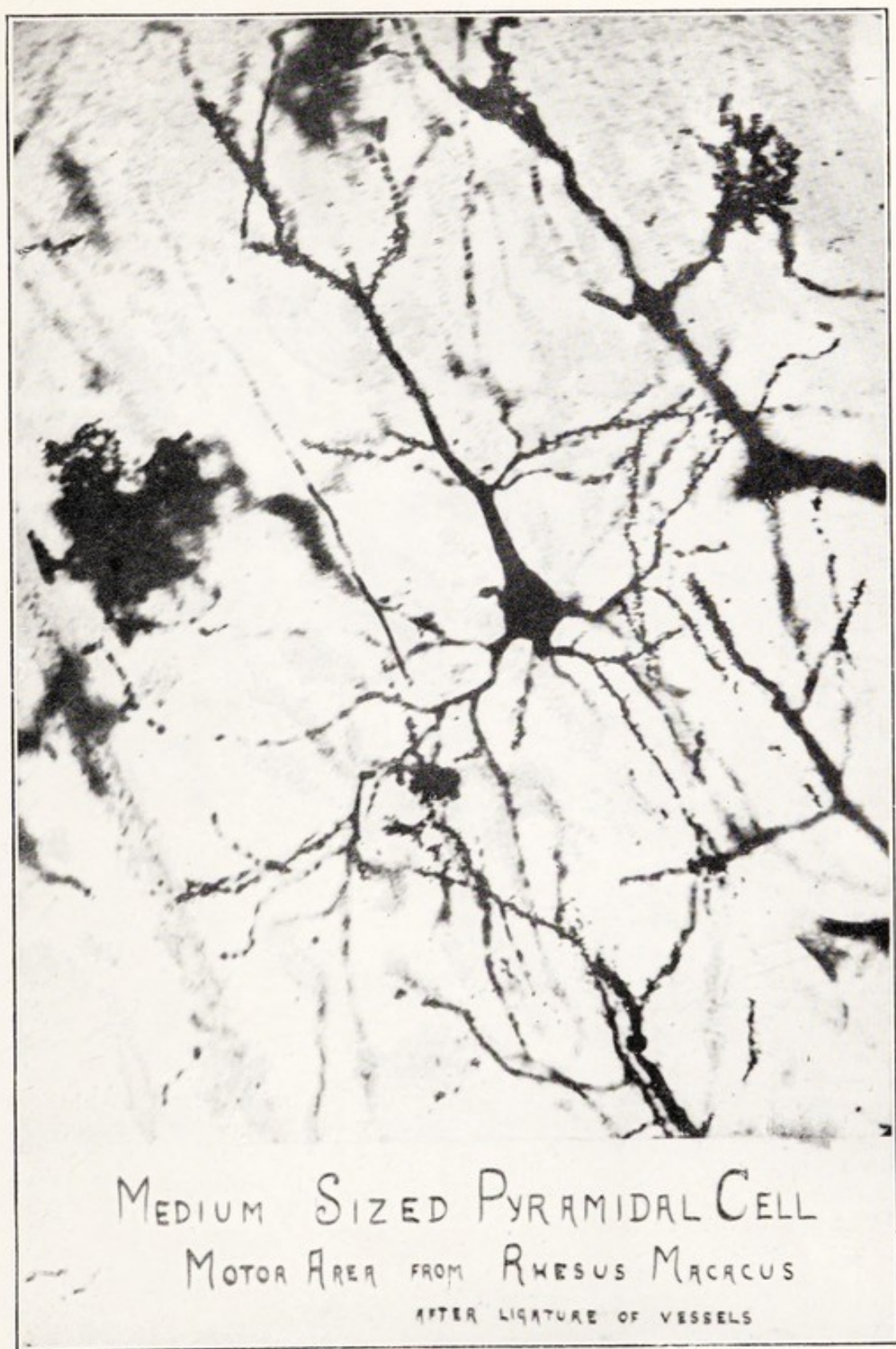
<sup>1</sup> To decerebrate is to remove the upper brain, the thinking brain, the cerebrum.



animal showed signs of disgust and turned from it. The sense of disgust in the animal world is evidently protective against poisoning. We who live so artificially have not the same kind of disgust, as our protective senses have wasted from want of use. Golz had a pet dog, and though it did not like it, he persuaded it to eat the bitter meat, more out of affection and duty to its master. It had, however, its brain intact. We ought to revolt against putrid food, yet many choose it and call it delicious and "high," which shows that civilization has robbed us of this natural means of protection.

We know that the grey matter on the surface of the brain can be cut without pain, and the experiments on animals seem to indicate that pain is represented as an excessive or severe stimulus to the optic thalamus and other ganglia or organs in the base of the brain. Pain is supposed not to reach the seat of consciousness, that is the grey matter, except to indicate the source and position of the cause of the pain. We thereby learn how to avoid its recurrence. If this be correct it shows why we forget pain as soon as it is over, because it is so deep-seated in an otherwise unconscious area. But our upper brain remembers the conditions which brought it about. We say of a tooth extraction that the pain was awful, but we do not experience the pain over again. Is this not a wonderful provision of Nature? Labour pains are likewise forgotten as soon as the event is over, which fact is alluded to in the Bible. However much the new school may endeavour to deprive the memory of its qualities or of its existence, it is proved to reside in the association and psychic areas of the grey matter. The memory of pain acts upon us as a conative or driving force to warn us of the danger of pain and set the motor machinery going to avoid it. Experiments help us still more, because, while stimulation of the surface of the brain does not cause pain even in man, yet stimulation of this sense ganglion, the thalamus, appears to cause intense pain to a decerebrated animal.





MEDIUM SIZED PYRAMIDAL CELL  
MOTOR AREA FROM RHESUS MACACUS  
AFTER LIGATION OF VESSELS

FIG. 57B.--This is a beautiful diagram of the structure and ramification of nerve fibres and neurons. I am indebted to the late Sir Frederick Mott for this picture.



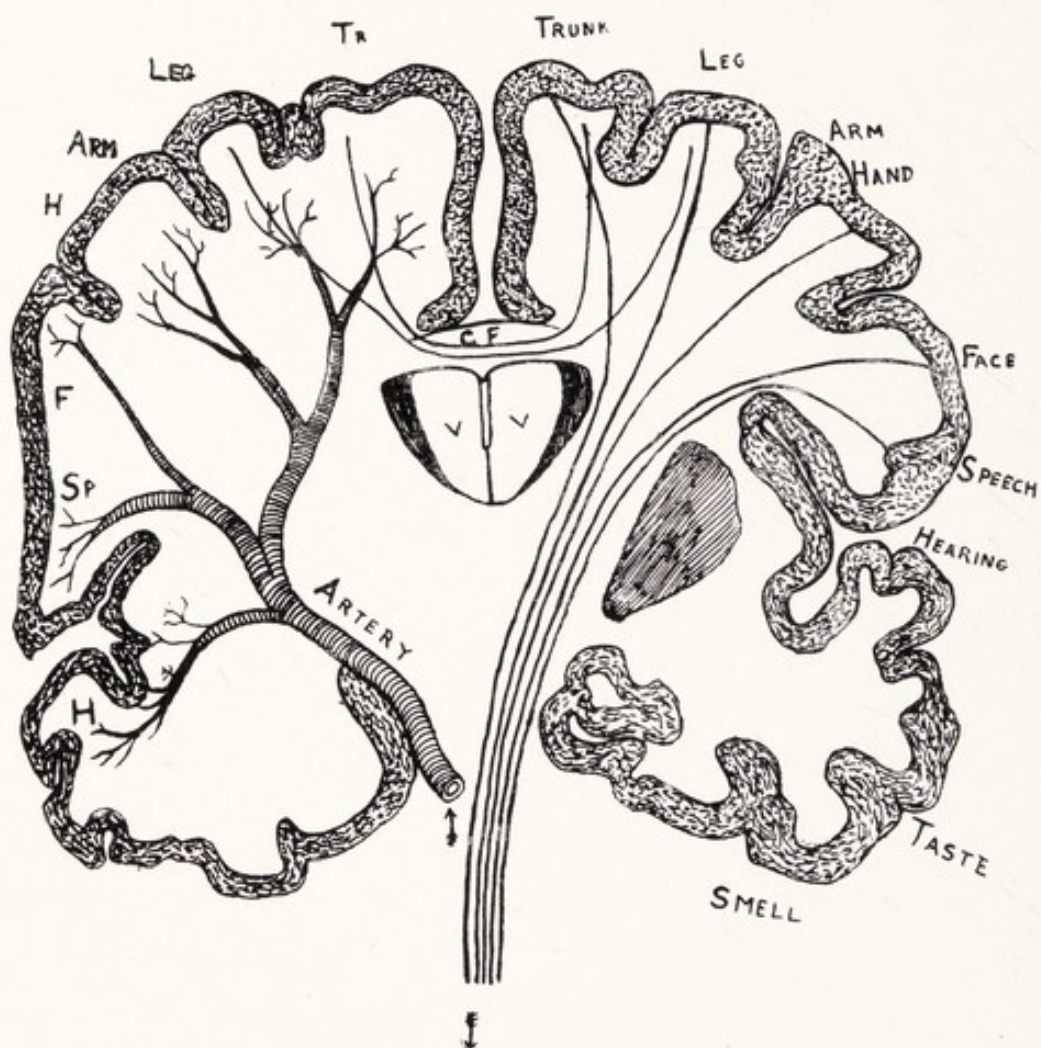


FIG. 58.—A vertical section through the brain to show the thin grey cortex, the blood supply and nerve cords or strands coming down. The different areas are marked. V is one of the five ventricles or spaces filled with fluid. Lower down on the right side is a large ganglion or mass of active nerve cells. Ganglia are frequently alluded to and fill up the whole of the base of the brain.



## THE CEREBRUM.

When we leave the fish, frogs and birds with their primitive brains, we enter a higher zone of life, the mammals, or sucking animals. Here we find a new development of brain, *neo pallium*, or *cerebrum*, which is a large mass that covers the more primitive brain below. The human form during development *in utero* passes through the gamut of the vertebrates from the fish upwards.

Where the cells are in masses they are a buff or slightly pink colour in life and are called the grey matter. The surface of the brain is covered with this grey matter to a depth of a quarter or three-eighths of an inch and the machinery or active thought resides there. At the base of the human or mammal brain there are masses of grey material, forming important ganglia, which correspond to the simple brains of the lower animals, birds, fish and reptiles, and are concerned in vital, though unconscious processes. During this progression, the brain becomes covered with curved and wavy fissures or grooves, which are infoldings of the brain surface; the intervening ridges are called convolutions. These fissures and convolutions greatly increase, perhaps treble, the superficial area of the grey matter, which is the area given up to intellectual processes.<sup>1</sup> The pattern of convolutions and fissures is the measure of the intellectual development of the species or individual, and it does not require to be stated that the highest evolution is in man. We find very highly developed brains in the gorilla and the ouran and the gibbon, to whom we are distantly related. I show a photograph which I took of an ouran's brain and an imbecile's alongside; the ouran is the superior being.<sup>2</sup>

*Brain Weight.*

At birth the human brain weighs about 14 oz., or 400 grm. The convolutionary pattern is complex with

<sup>1</sup> Fig. 58.

<sup>2</sup> Chapter XXIV, fig. 42.



rudiments of fissures to develop as the brain expands. At 5 the material structure of the brain is considerably advanced, and it weighs about 34 oz., or about 1,000 grm. About the age of 18 the brain may reach full weight, 46 to 50 oz., or 1,300 to 1,400 grm. The brain, however, continues to grow till the about the age of 25, and the skull does the same. A female brain weighs 4 or 5 oz. less. During all this active period more brain cells develop out of the round nuclei and the intellect is added to thereby.

Brains vary immensely in weight. Cromwell's weighed 78 oz. and Byron's 79 oz., while Gambetta's was only 41 oz. Labourers appear to have the heaviest brains, having the largest bodies. It is commonly argued that as a woman's brain is 3 or 4 oz. below the weight of a man's that she is inferior intellectually, but in proportion to body weight woman has the advantage. The inference favours her superiority and experience shows no inferiority on her side. Recently the weight of Anatole France's brain was reported as about 1,100 grm., or roughly 40 oz. It was very unfortunate that its outer surface was not photographed.

### THE GREY CORTEX.

Let us consider the marvellous structure of the thin layer of grey matter on the brain surface. The subject has been alluded to in Chapter X in its relation to mind. We stain the cells with certain aniline dyes, and observe their structure, but what they are like in actual life no one knows. After staining these sections we see several differently shaped cells, and can make out five distinct layers.<sup>1</sup> At the deepest part are larger cells of all sorts of angular shapes which we call polymorphs. This

---

<sup>1</sup> Professor Shaw Bolton described these five layers to the Royal Society in 1900. *Vide Phil. Trans.* His original description is now the standard followed. See Chapter X, figs. 31 and 32.



layer is concerned with the instincts, and will carry on after the higher, more intellectual layers have decayed, as in brain softening or dementia. The ordinary daily habits probably get their direction from here. This would seem to be the region of Freud's unconscious mind. Its performance we believe to be unconscious, but it does not represent what we style mind.

The layer which concerns us most is the outer one, called the pyramidal layer. The cells are triangular, like an isosceles triangle, but they are not truly pyramidal. I show some of Professor Shaw Bolton's photographs to illustrate the difference between normal cells and those of an idiot. Such a demonstration is valuable and sheds a side-light on legal responsibility. Observe that the idiot's cells are not only shrivelled but have lost the normal pattern and are fewer.<sup>1</sup>

### ASSOCIATION AREAS.

In Chapter X we have discussed certain large areas which in experiments give no response to electrical stimuli. These used to be called the silent areas, when first discovered by Flechsig, in 1894. Now we know they are the capping stones of the brain architecture, the association areas. They are the centres of intelligence that receive and analyse everything and direct all our actions and impressions, which is thought or psychic action. They probably dictate what is to be done, which involves a motor response through the large and important motor centres in the frontal region. The association areas are concerned with memory, and as things are repeated so memory is less and less called upon, and various acts and mental processes become automatic; figuratively, and perhaps actually, they sink to lower layers in the brain.<sup>2</sup> For comparison I am able

---

<sup>1</sup> Chapter X, figs. 25 and 26, Chapter XXIV, figs. 43 and 43 A.

<sup>2</sup> To understand the association areas compare fig. 59 and Chapter X, figs. 28 and 29.



to show a photograph of a well-developed normal brain (fig. 62).

One large association area is at the back of the upper part of the skull, connecting vision with speech and other functions. A skull should be broad behind. The frontal development, so marked in German skulls, indicates force, motor power, energy, observation, but the German skull is cut off behind, and less developed in the visual association areas. This explains their want of reasoning and foresight and their deficiency in the sense of humour. On the other hand, they are keen observers and workers and have fuller development of the frontal areas; hence they are efficient in carrying out their discoveries or those of others.

The association area in the precentral or motor area is, in the words of Professor Keith, "probably concerned in treasuring up memories of how certain acts are performed." That in the temporal lobe "associates particular sounds with particular meanings, and is therefore concerned in speech." "Spread out on the surface of the brain, in front of the occipital pole, are association areas—evidently connected with the elaboration and interpretation of the visual impressions which reach the brain." That part of the brain, the parietal lobe, behind the sensori-motor convolutions, is a very important centre. It receives the sensory impressions of the skin and body generally, "but the greater part of this lobe seems to serve the higher purposes of the human brain—the purposes of memory and interpretation."<sup>1</sup>

The mechanical working of the brain is abundantly proved. Many years ago the great Helmholtz timed the motion along a nerve and found it to be at the rate of 100 to 120 ft. per second. During the war the following test, discovered by Jung, was often employed where the

---

<sup>1</sup> "Antiquity of Man." By Sir Arthur Keith, p. 609. Examine figs. 28 and 59, both of which were given to me by my friend, the late Sir Frederick Mott, M.D.



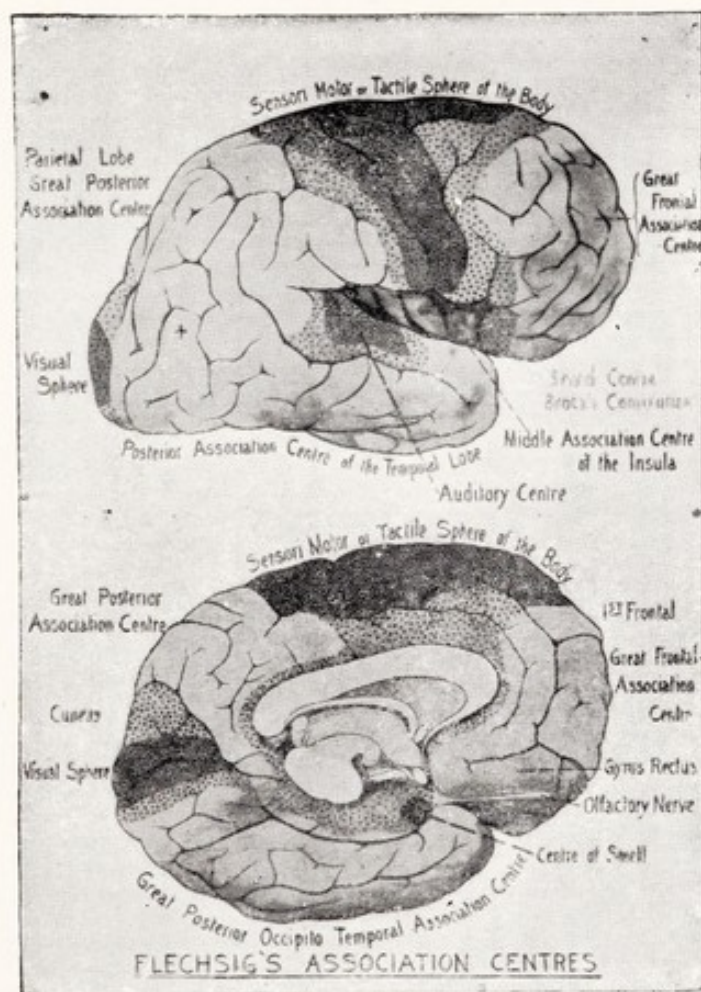


FIG. 59.—I am indebted to the late Sir Frederick Mott, M.D., for this diagram. The different areas are fully explained. The clear parts are the association areas, and the shaded parts are sensory and motor.







brain was supposed to be affected. The line of investigation was to say a word like cabbage, and the patient was to reply as quickly as possible with the first word it suggested. Suppose the reply was vegetable, or, taking the easier word, grass, the reply might be "green." Thus the word passed through the brain, making a tour from the ear to the speech centre. In doing so memory pictures and various neurones must be employed. The result was to receive very slow and delayed answers where shock or damage to the brain had occurred. It might be due to injury of the cells, or fibres, or of the synapses or junctions of the neurons.

The most important part of all, the captain of the ship, is the prefrontal association centre. This is a narrow area just above the brows and has been fully described by Professor J. S. Bolton. Both experiment and disease afford full proof of this area.<sup>1</sup> In general paralysis of the insane the individual cells in this area become diseased, fall out of action, and disappear. When they begin to do so the individual is full of delusions of grandeur but inattentive to his surroundings, without any aim, or purpose, or self-control. Many of these patients, through the loss of self-control, commit crime before their insanity is recognized. Should it be diagnosed, the diagnosis may be rejected by the judge. This area is supposed to be the last developed, the highest part of brain architecture; and for that reason it is often the first to go.

The association centres place man on the pinnacle of the creation. Yet they cannot be considered to belong to man only. Nature does not make such big jumps as that. The apes undoubtedly have these developments in rudimentary form; while by observation we must regard them as appearing in man's chief friend, the dog, as well as in other animals.

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vide Philosoph. Trans. Royal Society*, 1900, "Exact Histological Localization of Visual Area." *Re prefrontal*, "Amentia and Dementia," *Archives of Neurol.*, vol. ii, 1903. Goulstonian Lecture on "Cortical Localization," *Brain*, 1910.



## CONSCIOUSNESS.

While the lower forms of animal life act like automata, the higher forms exhibit a consciousness which at first is machine-like, but gradually rises to the highest form of intelligence. Consciousness is a very vexed question,<sup>1</sup> and no one knows what it is, nor where it resides, nor whether such animals as insects have consciousness, or instincts, or are merely reflex machines.

In forming an opinion as to consciousness or automatism, the following experiment sheds some light on unconscious action. If we take a male decapitated frog and tickle the skin of his chest, he will clasp his arms as if in embrace; but he is unconscious and brainless, being without his head. It is a reflex movement, similar to that of the divided insect. If, however, a gentleman frog with his head on be so stimulated, he resents the interference and thrusts away any object, other than his spouse, from being laid on his bosom. The decapitated frog acts unconsciously, though it has the appearance of knowing what it is doing. The neo-psychologist cannot suggest an unconscious mind, as it was decapitated. Is there not the possibility of several degrees or planes of consciousness, from the lowest forms right up to man? Is the word consciousness, with its vagueness and elasticity, the correct term for what we mean? The sea anemone seems conscious to the slightest disturbance. The sepia, when conscious of danger, squirts from its inkbag to form a screen. There is the bee, an architect; the spider, the ant, all conscious, living machines, exhibiting each its own special intelligence, and of no mean order. Though much of this appears to be machine-like, yet intelligence seems to guide their

---

<sup>1</sup> Consciousness is defined as the uniform condition of individual experience. Individual experience and the facts of consciousness are identical. See Calderwood's "Moral Philosophy," and Hamilton's "Metaphysics," XI-XVI.



lives, which implies at least a certain level of lower consciousness.

### *The Emotions.*

These experiments are mentioned to show that the emotions of anger and passion are rapid and have the appearance of being reflex, devoid of reason, and at the onset have little to do with the upper consciousness. The angry dart of a serpent, the attack of a tarantula, perhaps even the first snap of the dog and the spit of the cat, are thus on a lower physical plane of subconsciousness. But this neural plane tires out and does not continue its emotion. If the emotion is still further provoked, in animals which have not been mutilated, then the upper brain or cortex comes into play, involving the field of consciousness and intelligence, which acts as a check. Is emotion on a lower psychic plane than intelligence? This may explain why the more intellectual folk show less emotion, due to a higher control; while our poor degenerates, especially if enfeebled by alcohol, give way so easily.

Sherrington, by further investigation, proved that internal sensations in the heart, bowels, stomach and other internal organs, are the result of emotion rather than the cause. He says that when deprived of the cerebrum, neither cat nor dog can be induced to show pleasure, as though happiness belonged to a higher plane, the cerebral cortex; while emotions are reflex, in fact intuitive, for protection, defence, selection of food and for satisfying amorous instincts.

These experiments give us a valuable insight into everyday occurrences which are not appreciated by the lawyers or the laity. We know how the higher plane of thought can inhibit or control the emotions, yet in such conflicts we are aware of effort, and the necessity sometimes of strong effort. How many crimes and rash acts are committed by the overpowering reflex of a temporarily deranged and irresponsible brain machine! We must



treat our difficult social problems with all the knowledge that science gives us. Quite recently a man was hanged for the murder of a woman who threw a pot of beer at him in an alehouse. The total time elapsing between the woman's act and the death blow was ten seconds. Considering the probability of the man's brain being out of control from alcoholism, it might be described as a reflex act, as in the experiments just described, for there was barely enough time for mentation in such a brain. If we license the sale of alcoholic poisons as we do other poisons in the charge of chemists, should we not demand a certain amount of responsibility from the former where crime results from alcoholic poisoning? Such would be logical but would not be practical under present unfair conditions.

### *The Subconscious Mind—Automatism.*

We are all aware of the reflex action of the spinal cord working unconsciously. The large ganglia at the base of the skull are but a higher development, which respond below our sphere of consciousness; possibly the seat of Freud's unconscious mind which Bolton demonstrates as non-existent and which is a contradiction in terms.<sup>1</sup> We might for the moment regard the base of the brain as the prolongation of the spinal cord. The next level, a development peculiar to mammals, is the cerebrum or thinking brain; the neo-pallium of Elliot Smith. We may follow on the lines laid down by Hughlings Jackson, our most learned neurologist, the founder of neurology, who spoke of the base of the brain as the kitchen and the brain proper as the parlour.

I would ask to be allowed to place another storey above the kitchen, the workroom, where orders are received and carried out. I have for long used the term

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* Introduction to Bergson's "Matter and Memory;" and an important article by Dr. Shaw Bolton in *The English Review*, November, 1926.



"mid-brain" for this undefined zone. This is a most important service and depends largely upon orderly training. Habit plays a great part in educating this section of the brain, so that habits ought to be good, precise and correct from the earliest childhood. All automatic actions, of which one of the simplest is dressing, are directed from the workroom or mid-brain. Our common phrase is that such an act comes naturally without previous thought, but we little realize the years of training necessary to produce this subconscious and automatic accuracy. Automatic habits enter into most of our doings. Take for example a bag with important contents which is carried about all day, yet nothing is lost or misplaced. When we start out, our consciousness sends a message down to the subconscious, the mid-brain, the watchman, to look after the bag. We have to think about these actions in the early training, and hundreds of others which are more complex, but in time they come to be performed automatically or subconsciously.

The upper storey, the pyramidal layer, is the parlour or study where intellect and intelligence reside. The successful operations of its character and function depend mainly upon family history. We are unfortunately not all blessed alike, which is shown daily by the marked differences in individuals, and in the way in which each performs his respective duties. The managing director of the establishment, if I may continue to be colloquial, resides in the most advanced, last built area of the brain, the prefrontal, which organizes action and receives the final reports. The director has access to the reference library, that is, experience and memory. He has to meet all difficulties, and in this way opposes obstacles and unfavourable environment, finally coming out on top. He is the directing force that guides the individual to success in life.

So we have the lower brain or ganglia, of which we know little, which probably is the basis of Freud's



unconscious mind.<sup>1</sup> Above in the pyramidal layers of the grey matter of the upper brain, in which we live and move and have our being, we are entitled to expect the highest consciousness or personality. In between, in the grey matter, comes the mid-brain, which acts as a clerk or servant, carrying out daily acts without disturbing the individual, or master, in the study. This last is probably the automatic, subconscious mind.

By way of a practical illustration, the author may mention that he was, through his well-brought-up mid-brain, preserved from losing a valuable Ross field-glass. It was on the return journey from Algiers, and he thought he had been robbed at the Custom House, for he had carried the glass in an outside pocket. There had been much crushing and pushing, and a lady actually pushed him down in her anxiety to soften her own fall. What joy he had at Paris in finding the field-glasses had been placed subconsciously, by the mid-brain, in the kit-bag at the *douane*! This action was performed without, as it were, speaking to the "boss" on the top storey, the parlour or study; in proof, the author had no remembrance of the affair. He had to fight for his life against a much over-weighted lady, to keep a tight grip on his luggage, and to guard his pockets, his money and these glasses.

Similar events occur to every busy person. Half our mental activities are carried on in the subconscious, that is, in the "mid-brain." Many people, while dressing or playing music, are thinking or conversing about other things, events which occurred yesterday or are expected to-day. But when old age comes the old man has put his tie on the wrong way, the old lady has arranged her hair in a new style or put on the wrong dress. What does this mean? It means that the brain is slowly breaking up. It requires more energy to do and think,

---

<sup>1</sup> When I use this term I use it out of courtesy to the neopsychologists. It is really non-existent, a fiction or a phantasy.



and less energy goes to the automatic centres. Possibly some brain cells have fallen out of action. The remedy is to go slow and pay more attention to the subconscious, automatic acts. Bring them every now and again into the plane of consciousness, to see that all goes well. It is all part of the hardship of old age. We notice how old people drop things, or knock things over through the misdirections of the fine movements of the fingers or hands. Old people have to look carefully and think about whatever they are doing, as in childhood, so as to avoid accidents, as their earlier education has rusted away. The brain cells in old age are gradually thrown out of action, in fact, they disappear, for we know that after 65 or 70 years of age the brain shrinks and loses weight. The subconsciousness, the automatic performances of all the little things of life, is to them getting more difficult.

What is to be said of the tiresome servant of 20, who is just as helpless as the old man of 75 or 80. She breaks china, knocks over ornaments and seems hopeless. So she is, but it is not her fault; it is her misfortune. Mentally she is 8 and her fingers have never acquired fine movements. Her post-natal cells, about to be described, have not developed normally. She bespeaks a poor home and arrested development. The new school of psychology says her unconscious mind makes her break things so as to have less to do. I say, cure the anæmia and try to develop her brain cells with thyroid and pituitary extracts.

### THE KEY OF THE PROBLEM.

After a long dissertation on the failure of the individual and the impairment of the race, much of which is avoidable, I shall now draw attention to what might almost be called the key of the problem. As far as breed is concerned, provided a poor family is free from disease or taint, it is quite as good to breed from as the



family of the rich ; in many cases better. I am speaking of average conditions ; exceptional families of high breed will nearly always produce supernormals, while degraded families will produce inferior stock. The poor and rich are equally open to the inheritance of good and bad qualities or chromosomes from their forebears, however remote. It may be that the layer of neuroblasts in the brain, which I am about to describe, is the main representative of breed and heredity, and the deciding factor of success or failure in life ; the deciding factor of intellectual power and force of character, and equally of badness or goodness in the individual's career.

The photograph I took of an infant's brain soon after birth (fig. 61) shows a good convolutional pattern, though born in a slum. Such knowledge gives us something to think about in the problem of race and the future of Empire. Below I put a very well-developed adult brain (fig. 62) by way of comparison, and as a standard. Fig. 60 represents the human foetus on the thirty-fifth day, with snout, gills, fins, tail and a slit for the ear. It is made up of numerous groups of cells obeying the Great Architect's design. Some for brain, others for limb, stomach, nerves, blood, and so on. It is too beautiful to be left out.

*The Post-natal Neurons or the Developing Brain Nuclei.*

When we examine the grey matter of the new-born child with the microscope, we find several layers of pyramidal cells already laid down ; the pre-natal cells, P. These represent the human race—*Homo domesticus*, as distinct from the apes. Externally nearer the surface of the brain we see a few layers (N) of round nuclei.<sup>1</sup> Each of these nuclei, or neuroblasts, is going to divide and develop into new cells, the pyramidal or thinking cells. The pyramidal cells seen at birth are much larger than the pyramidal cells which develop after birth, so that

---

<sup>1</sup>Fig. 63A and B.



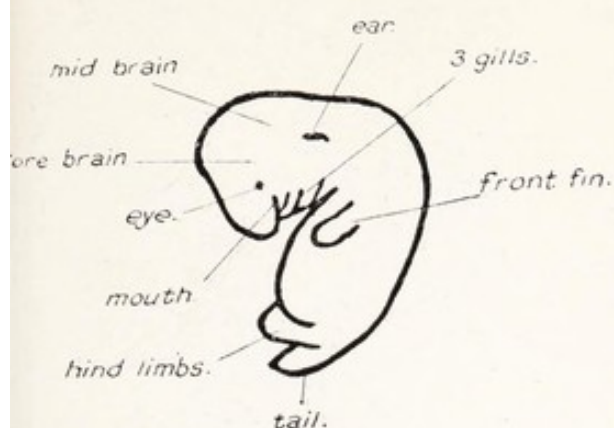


FIG. 60.

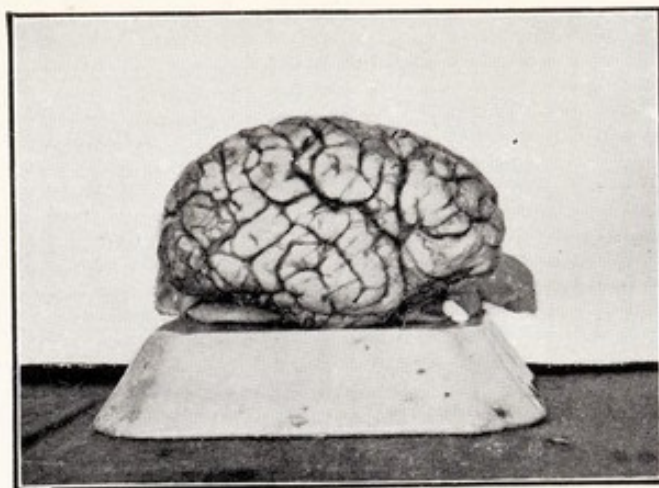


FIG. 61.

FIG. 60.—This enlargement is of the human foetus on the thirty-fifth day. It looks like a sea lion and is one mass of varying cells developing into different organs. It measures  $\frac{3}{4}$  in. from snout to tail. (Drawn by my daughter, Miss Berta Wilson.)

FIG. 61.—The brain, eighth to ninth month, well convoluted. This belonged to the poverty zone, yet Nature claims that she fulfilled her building contract. See the microscopical sections, fig. 63.

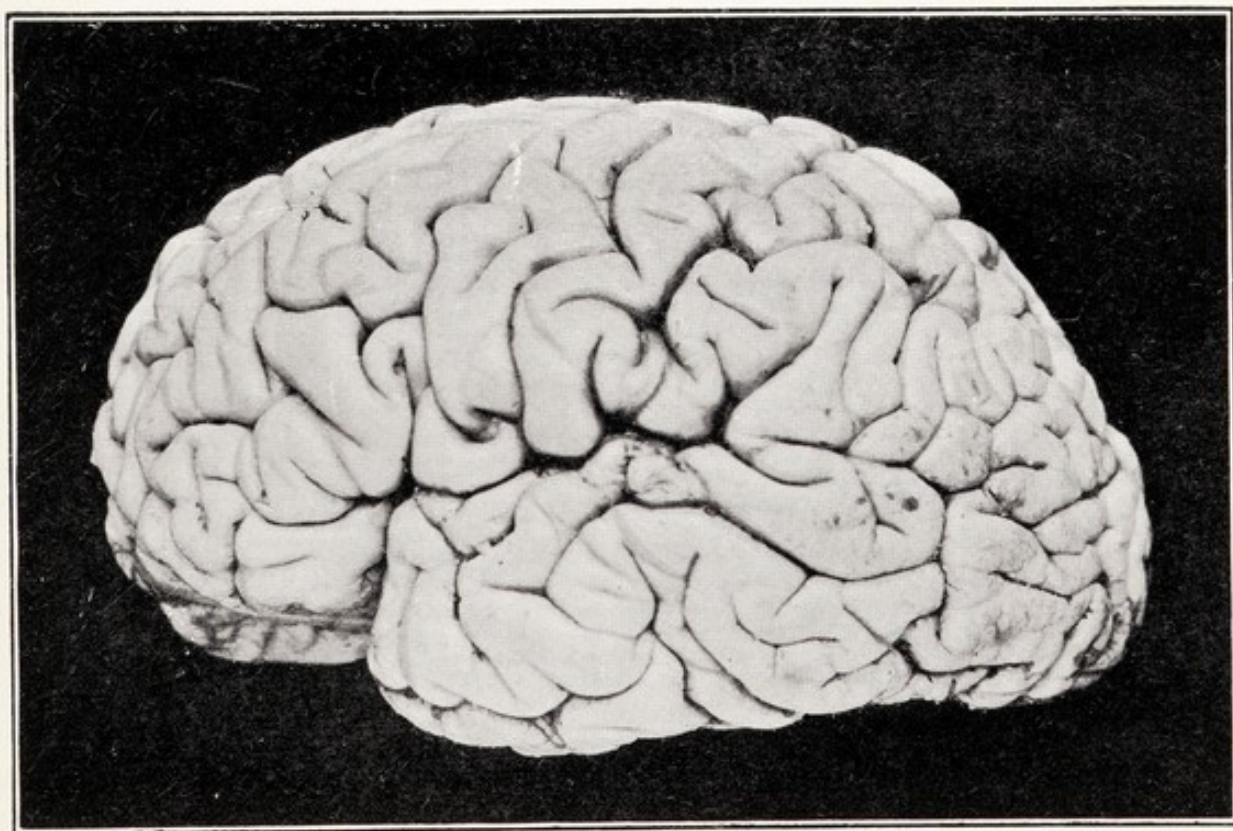
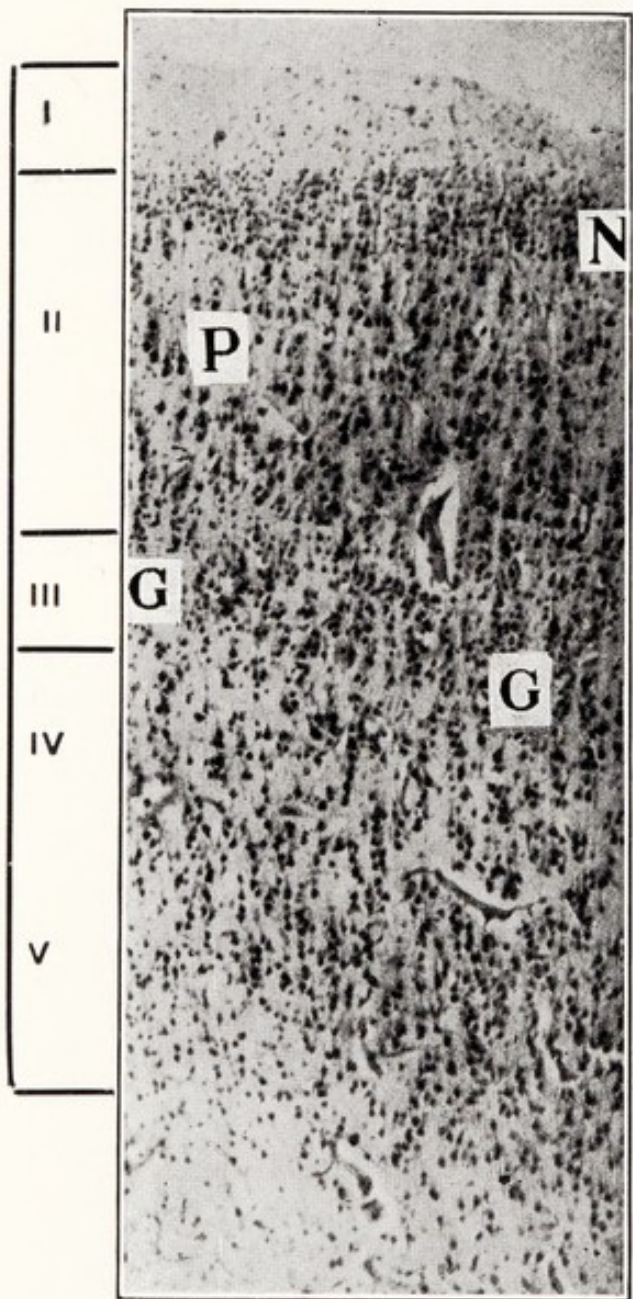
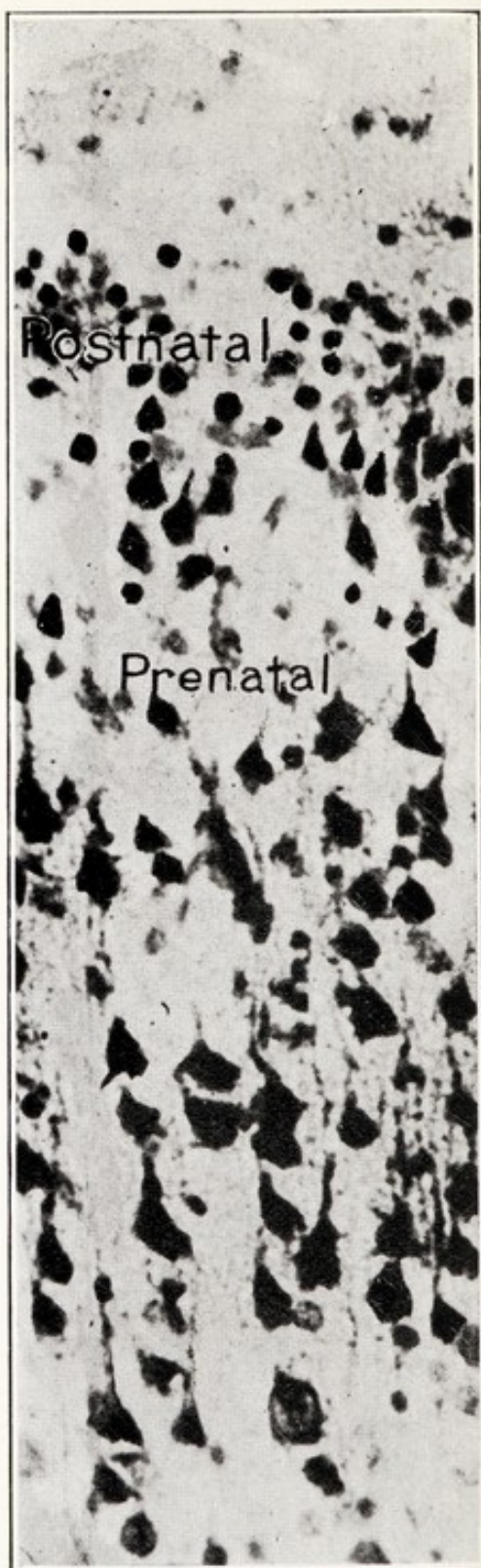


FIG. 62.—A good example of a normal, well convoluted, brain. The left side. This was given to me many years ago by Dr. Mott.





A



B

FIG. 63.—A, this section is from the ascending parietal or post-central convolution of the foetus, about the time of birth. I is the zonal or tangential layer, and is made up of delicate fibres of association. II shows the pyramidal layer P, which is divided into well shaped cells below—the prenatal B, and a band of nuclei or neuroblasts above, N—which are better seen in B, and are postnatal in development and function. III is the granular layer—sensory, marked G. The infragranular portion is marked IV and V. They serve the instincts, B.



we can always distinguish the two types or layers. The larger, deeper cells are more ancient in time and are racial. I suggest that they be called the *pre-natal* cells, as they represent the genus man; or we might say the species—*Homo domesticus*. The layers which develop after birth, which I call the *post-natal*, represent the family or the individual, in fact, the personality—*Homo sapiens*. This distinction is most important and has been overlooked. We might truly suggest that man in his nakedness arrives unfinished. If all goes well he is clothed by these latent cells, which give him intelligence, character and individuality. The infant then is to be, according to its parentage, of good stock or of bad, for its die is cast before it sees daylight.

It is our duty to help the child, if only before birth; but if possible for at least during its early years, so as to improve its chances against the faults and failings of a possibly bad parentage and unwelcome environment.

In further proof of the fact that the higher intelligence depends largely on the development of these post-natal neuroblasts, I present two photographs: one (fig. 64) of the cortex of a new-born, and (fig. 65) of the same area in a degenerate. The undeveloped nuclei or neuroblasts are as numerous and as apparent in the degenerate as in the babe. Mentally the degenerate is still a child. Then why hang him? Painless extinction is to be commended wherever possible, or sterilization, so as to cut short such types of degradation. Everything now depends upon our racial and national strength. Cut down the C3 population. These two sections<sup>1</sup> are taken from the second frontal convolution, which psychically is connected with fixing the attention. We can realize from this the stupidity of the degenerate from lack of finish. He is an unfinished article.<sup>2</sup> Perhaps we shall be more patient with him in future.

---

<sup>1</sup> Figs. 64 and 65.

<sup>2</sup> Vide "Unfinished Man."



This lack of finish explains the "born tired"; the tramp; the unemployable; and the inferior servant who is unstable, incompetent, and usually immoral. What is to be done? It is too late to remedy things when the die is cast. The only chance is pre-natal care of expectant mothers among the poor; and care of the growing infant, and not to force children in matters of education. They must have a different chance from the things of to-day.

Dame Nature is a stern, unforgiving old lady; nor does she forget. Civilization is her enemy always trying to thwart her; and if we are too great sinners, she tries not only to get rid of us but also of our progeny. It may seem hard and we may plead ignorance, but it is better for the race. In the case of mental degenerates, they may be prolific breeders in the first generation, but succeeding generations may be wiped out by idiocy and non-fertility. This means twenty to forty years of waiting for their disappearance, but only to be replaced by another chain so long as we continue to manufacture such stock.

Healthy and selective breeding points the only way to salvation. The State should appoint a marriage bureau under the highest medical skill. The divorce courts would soon be empty if there were healthier ideas and aims in marriage.

The author has no intention of joining the Jeremiahs, nor the dismal Jimmies, to suggest that as an Empire we are declining. The reply to that is the energy and force of character of our young men against the best-equipped and most merciless of all our enemies. May we continue strong and restrain the soft-hearted "peace-at-any-price" cranks, lest they cripple us in the next war. There must always be oscillations in power and superiority among peoples on the face of the earth, but they will always return to a mean level. So far as it has been given to us to rule the world, the responsibility has been given to us because we are a hardy maritime people with a sense of rightness. The sea inspires courage, from which



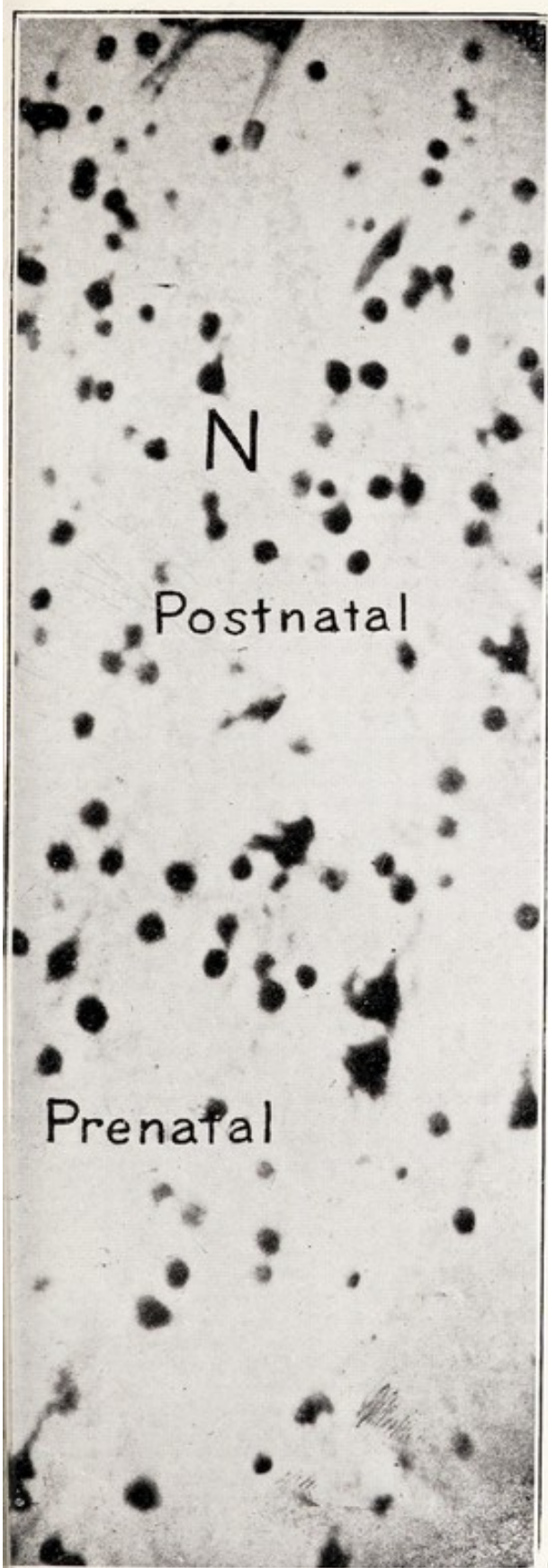


FIG. 64.

FIG. 64.—The grey cortex at birth. Note the round cells (foetal neuroblasts) which later form the intellectual cells, the basis of personality.

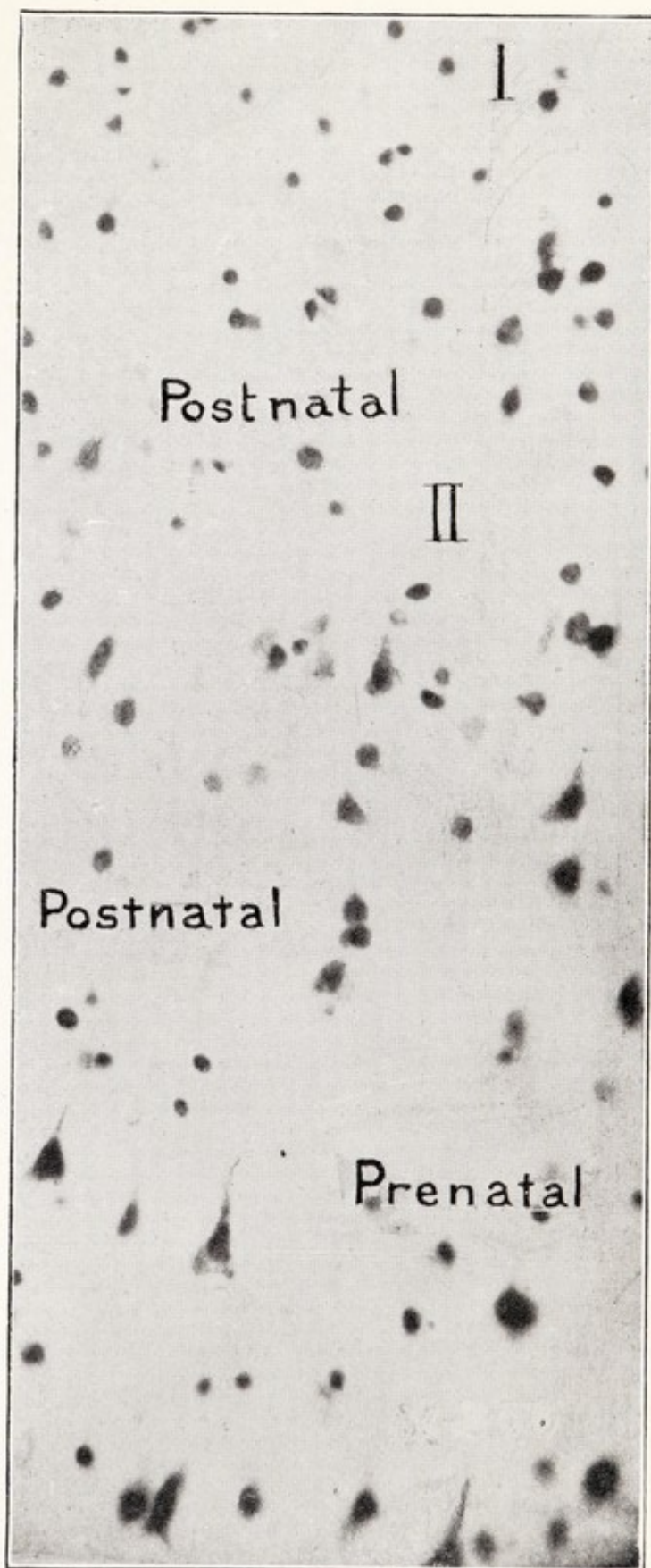


FIG. 65.

FIG. 65.—This is from the same area, second frontal, in a degenerate. Observe that the foetal neuroblasts remain in great numbers, showing he is still a child, devoid of personality.





FIG. 66.—This poor man, Barrett, the King of Silver Thieves, is one example of not getting a fair start in life. At the time of this photograph in my garden he was over 70 years of age, and in my surtout would pass as a church or chapel deacon. In his early days he would enter an open door, as once in Mecklenberg Square, having discovered where the silver was kept, fill his bag and leave. If anyone appeared he would produce a card asking an order for coals. He had some narrow escapes, generally in hansoms, as the drivers usually understood these underground methods. Though a burglar, he never used violence, as his kind face would imply. He spent 30 years in prison, beginning crime at the age of 12. After his conversion he was for 10 years cashier at one of the feeding S.A. shelters. He died in the work-house, free of care or anxiety, what some people call "saved." A further account of his life is given on p. 32.



comes a sense of correct dealing with other peoples. To be shut out from the ocean entirely alters the mentality of the Central Powers in what they term Welt-Politik, apart from their being a different race from ourselves.

The author is a mere cartographer, charting the hidden rocks on the ocean of life, hoping thereby to prevent many wrecks.

While a nation goes up or down, due to the acts of a few good or bad men, it is now recognized, what Galton emphasized, that the silent influence of a few good families adds greatly to the value and strength of a nation.

Many years ago on the wild Cornish coast, one Sunday evening, church service was being performed in a little fishing village. The Cornish were great wreckers, oft-times misleading ships by swinging lights, or tying a lantern to a donkey's neck on a cliff. The clergyman had been holding forth on the way of life resembling the restless ocean when he observed many of his hefty parishioners were slipping out, and suddenly a cry was raised outside of a ship ashore. As the congregation was about to bolt, the vicar threw off his vestments, calling out, "Dearly beloved brethren let us start fair," and was soon at the head of the wreckers. Let that be our slogan here, and now,

*"Let us start fair."*



APPENDIX.

---

IT was with unspeakable delight that after this present work was placed with the publishers, I read an article in the *British Medical Journal*, January, 1928, by Professor Berry, of Melbourne, on a plea for "A National Laboratory for the Study of Mental Abnormality." In his article he gives full credit to Drs. Bolton and Watson for their "equally important work on cortical stratification and cerebral function," and points out that "errors in development of the cerebral cortex underlie many of those anti-social reactions characteristic of criminality and some of the insanities."

Professor Berry is Anatomist and Psychiatrist to the medical school. He also points out that the pyramidal cells on the exterior of the brain, which I have just described, give the power of voluntary control of the animal functions of the infra-granular cortex.

If the individual possesses a relatively undeveloped supra-granular cortex, the organ of control, he is more likely to react to his surroundings on the animal plane. He may then be a criminal. Here Berry sheds a fresh light when he says that such a deficient brain is less able to appreciate the consequences of his actions. This I would like to emphasize, though I have given Professor Bolton the credit on that point, for he has proved the prefrontal cortex to be the centre of control.

Dr. Bolton has shown that those who are born blind have a thinner cortex in the visual area, than have normal individuals; and he has done similar good work among the mentally affected.

In regard to criminals and criminology, I believe my



account of the thin undeveloped cortex in the brain of a very degraded murderer has precedence. I published the account of it in 1908, and more fully in "Unfinished Man," in 1910. I also read a paper, illustrated by photographs, at the Royal Society of Medicine. I felt at my reception as if the subject excited little or no interest nor was it regarded as important. Criminals were more for the psychologist than the physician; but after this evidence of new interest in criminology I feel hopeful and happy, and look forward to a radical change in law. In the former work and in this I give abundant photographs demonstrating how shallow was the criminal cortex when compared with the normal or even with a child of 5. In fact I say the criminal is a child's brain in a grown-up body.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Compare photographs (figs. 6, 7 and 8, figs. 25 and 26, figs. 31 and 32, figs. 35 and 36, figs. 64 and 65, and the capping stone fig. 63).



## INDEX.

## A

- Accessory chromosome, 379-381  
 Adrenal secretion, 166  
 Age, our correct, 353  
 — changes with, 378  
 Agnostic, 163  
 Alcalá, 305  
 Allbutt, Sir Clifford, 166  
 Alcohol, 6, 404  
 Alternating personalities, 42  
 America, 208  
 — Convict camps, 319  
 — Prison reform, 316  
 — — system, 317  
 Amersfoort, reformatory at, 263  
 Amsterdam, prison at, 268  
 An American case of dual personality, 104  
 Anatole France on religion, 15  
 Ancestral units, 147  
 Anthropologie pénitentiaire in Brussels, 275  
 — Method and case, 277  
 Ape, our relationship, 336, 337  
 Aphasia, 138  
 Appendix, 412  
 Arabs, 354  
 "Archie" the garotter, a Salvation Army case, 251  
 Aristotle, 18  
 Armstrong-Jones, Sir Robert, letters, 158, 347  
 Aryans, 57, 130  
 Asile de bienfaisance, Madrid, 306  
 Association areas, 399  
 "Audi alterem partem," 243  
 Automatism, 404  
 Aveling, Prof., 133, 139  
 Azam, Dr., dual personality, 78

## B

- Balfour, Jabez, 192, 246  
 Ballington Booth, Mrs., 222, 323  
 "Balmy" convicts, 247

- Barnardo's Homes, 339  
 Barnes, Mary, 80, Chap. VII  
 Barrett, the silver thief, 32, 189  
 Bateson, Prof. W., 366  
 Beddard, F. E. Prof., 338  
 Belgian treatment of *déséquilibre mentale*, 278  
 — penal sentences, 280  
 — *système judiciaire*, 279  
 — *système pénitentiaire*, 279  
 Bergson, "Matter and Memory," 153-155  
 Berry, James, the hangman, 198  
 Berry, Prof., at Melbourne, 412  
 Bianchi on dual personality, 103  
 Birmingham, reforms at, 259  
 Bjerre, psychology of murder, 9  
 Black cap, the, 185  
 Bolton, Prof. Shaw, researches, 131  
 — measurements of grey cortex, 144  
 — on the prefrontal, 401  
 — on the unconscious mind, 157  
 Booth, General W., 11, 12  
 Booth-Tucker in India, 56  
 Borstal, 216-219, 257  
 Borstal Association, 220  
 Boveri, 357  
 Boys' prison at Alcalá, 305  
 Brackenbury, Dr., 347  
 Brain, arrested development, 64  
 — degenerate murderer's, 64  
 — infant's, 408  
 Brain cells, pre- and post-natal, pyramidal, 65, 399  
 — infants', 408  
 — layers, 65, 66, 144, 145, 398  
 — machine, Chap. XXVII, 388  
 — weights, 397  
 Breur, Prof., 129  
 Brighton poisoner, the, 201  
 Britons, 130  
 Broadmoor asylum, 202  
 Broca, Prof., 138  
 Brockway on prisons, 209, 247  
 Browning, Dr. Colin, 251  
 Bruce, Dr. Lewis on dual personality, 103



## C

Cadiz, 129  
 Cæsars, 40  
 Caillard the murderer, 25  
 Cain, 19  
 Camuset, on dual personality, 102  
 Cannibals, 182  
 Carlile, Prebendary, 211  
 Carlisle, Lord, 221  
 Casati, 182  
 Caste, 57  
 Castle, W. E., 377  
 Cat, decerebrated, 175  
 "Cat," the, 250  
 Catherine de Medici, 41  
 Cells, somatic and germinal, 358  
 — pre- and post-natal, 65, 408  
 — pyramidal, 65  
 — see *Brain*  
 Central powers, 411  
 Cerebrum, 397  
 — the cortex, 398  
 — rapidity of action, 400  
 Chapman, Mr. Cecil, 196  
 Charcot, Prof., cases, 77  
 Charles of Navarre, 41  
 Charlotte, Queen, 331  
 Child, the backward, 343  
 Children's Act, 210  
 Children's Homes in Spain, 311  
 Chisholm, Mr. Ogden, 323  
 Chromomères, 382  
 Chromosomes, 356-384  
 Chromatin, 357  
 Church Army, 211  
 Churchill, Winston, 4  
 Class legislation, 185  
 Cleverness and capability, 344  
 Clifford, Dr., 147  
 Clinics, 37  
 Clouston, Sir Thomas, 53, 227, 283  
 Coleridge, 327  
 Colony in Holland, S.A., 260  
 Communists, 36  
 Complexes, anxiety, 134  
 — ego centric, 7, 133  
 — vanity, 7  
 Conditional sentence in Holland, 256  
 Congenital dangers, 370  
 Consciousness, 402  
 Control, centres of, 240  
 Convict camps in America, 319  
 Cooley, Dr. Harrison, 319  
 Corporal punishment, 242  
 Correction paternal, 292  
 Coué, M., 151  
 Crackanthorpe, Sir Montague, 191  
 Crew, Prof. of Edin. Univ., 379

Crime in Belgium, 288  
 — prevention of, 17  
 — what is, 21, 62  
 Criminals, at home and abroad, 48, 55  
 Criminal families, 48-51-61  
 — insanity, 234-237  
 — lunatics, 119  
 — negligence, 23  
 — responsibility, 232  
 — types, 26, 178, 185  
 — what the criminal is, Chap. I-V  
 — who he is, Chap. VI-X  
 Criminology, 17  
 Crofton, Sir W., 221  
 Cross breeding, 374  
 C3 incubus, 339  
 Cunningham, Prof., 384

## D

Dalton, 172  
 Dangers, congenital, 370  
 Darbyshire, 367  
 Dartmoor, 247  
 — compared with Louvain, 273  
 Darwin, 362  
 Death sentences, 207  
 Débile mentale, a case at Moll, 278, 285  
 De Fleury on criminal mind, 25  
 Delbruck, Dr. 224  
 Dementia præcox, 227  
 Democracy, 177  
 Déséquilibre mentale in Belgium, 278  
 Deterrence, 209  
 — lash, 251  
 Determinism, 17, 155, 234  
 Development, arrested, 62  
 Dickens, Charles, 327  
 Didot, 151  
 Disraeli, 362  
 Doetinchem, observatorium, 265  
 Doles, 37  
 Drake, Sir Francis, 305  
 Drummond, Mr., 233  
 Dufay de Blois, Dr., on dual personality, 108  
 Dusing, 376  
 Dymphne, Saint of Gheel, 282

## E

Ecclesiastical Courts, 180, 183  
 Ecken, Van, 255  
 École de Bienfaisance de l'État, 218  
 Edwards, J., good pedigree, 52  
 Education, the key, 340  
 — of working class, 346  
 Educational machine, 347



Ego, 181  
 Elmira, 319  
 Empress of Russia, 212  
 Emotions, 403  
 Encephalitis lethargica, 76  
 Endocrine glands, 66, 176  
 Envy, its nature, 118  
 Epilepsy and double consciousness, 105  
 — two murder cases, 106 and 108  
 Esquirol, brain of sadist, 42  
 Eucken, Rudolf, of Jena, 336  
 Eugenic problem, 359  
 Evolution, 337  
 — of sex, 375  
 Ex-prisoners in Germany, care of, 299

## F

Family taints, 48, 52  
 Fantasies, 149  
 Feeble-minded criminals, 121  
 Felida X., 78  
 Ferrier, 131, 138, 140  
 Fertilization, 354  
 Financial swindlers, 30  
 Finger-prints, 148  
 First Offenders Act, 14  
 First Offenders in Germany, 300  
 Flechzig, 138, 394  
 Foetal brains, 132, 145  
 Forêt, le, laboratory in Brussels, 277  
 Freethinkers, 163  
 French system of penology, 289  
 —, Guyane, 290  
 Fresne, 294  
 Friends, Society of, 11, 170-172  
 Fry, Elizabeth, 163, 258, 328  
 —, Life and work, 6  
 Freud, 7, 11, 18, 63, 128, 129, 130, 133,  
 134, 149, 155, 157, 160  
 Freudian theories, 139, 164, 165

## G

Gainford, Lord, 207  
 Gamut of Humanity, 69  
 Galot, Dr., in Brussels, 277  
 Galton, 373  
 Ganglia, basal, 394  
 Geddes and Thompson, 375, 384  
 Genes, 362  
 Genetics of sexuality, 383  
 George "Daddy," 321  
 German prisons and research, Ch. XV  
 — skulls, 400  
 Germinal chain and plasm, 363  
 Gheel, 282  
 Giard, 378

Gilles de Rays, 40  
 Girls, murders and assaults of, 43  
 Gladstone, 246  
 Glanvill, 185  
 Gloucester, Royal Duke of, 330  
 Goltz, 395  
 Goring, Dr., 21  
 Great hereafter, 162  
 — unknown, 163  
 Gresham, Sir Thomas, 206, 361  
 Grey cortex, 128, 144, 398  
 — — murderer's, 177  
 Gurney, Samuel, Mrs., 333

## H

Hadfield, Prof., 132  
 Hallé, 223.  
 Hallucinations, 225  
 Hamburg, 129  
 Hanover, 129  
 Head, 131, 138  
 Heape, 375  
 Helmholtz, 400  
 Henry II, 185  
 Heredity, 362  
 Hermaphrodite, 378, 386  
 Herschell family, 373  
 Highwaymen, 27-29  
 Hitzig, 138  
 Hobbes, 18  
 Hodgkin, Thomas, 172  
 Holland, 209, 254  
 — principle of sentences, 259  
 Holmes, Thomas, 14, 44, 492  
 Home Secretary, 259  
 Homicidal maniac in Louvain, 273  
 Homo domesticus sapiens, 409  
 Horses, breeding, 371; constancy, 372;  
 pedigree, 372; purity, 372; race,  
 368  
 Horsley, Sir Victor, 138  
 Howard, John, 326  
 Hughlings Jackson, 138, 141  
 Humanity, plea for, 211.  
 Hunter, John, 373  
 Huxley, 163  
 Hyslop, Dr. T., his cases, 108

## I

Illusions, 225  
 Imagination, 151  
 Inborn character, transmission of, 54  
 India, crime in, 56  
 Indian Government and crime, 56  
 Indians, Red, 315  
 Individualization, 221



Infant, the, like negro, 338  
 — brain cells, 339  
 Infanticide and death sentence, 205  
 Injustice, 176  
 Innocents, hanged, 198, 199, 200  
 Instincts, the two, 60  
 Intelligence, 409  
 Ireland, remarkable prison, 221  
 Ireland's eye tragedy, 201  
 Irish law, 183.  
 Irresistible impulse, 237  
 Italy, 58, 59

## J

Jack the Ripper, 41  
 James, William, 164  
 Janet, 151  
 Jealousy, its nature and cure, 117  
 Jekyll and Hyde, 41, 75, 77  
 Jews, 58, 183, 188  
 — care of children, 339  
 — care of mothers, 353  
 Juge des Enfants, Belgium, 284  
 Jukes family, 52  
 Junior Republic, 328  
 Jurisdiction *v.* Jurisprudence, 221  
 Justice, theory of, 175, 180  
 Justifiable homicide, 202  
 Juvenile offenders, 213-215

## K

Kaffirs, 182  
 Kangaroo, 189  
 Keith, Sir Arthur, 314, 315, 336  
 — on association areas, 400  
 Kelvin, 152  
 Key of the problem, 407  
 Kirwan, 201  
 Knecht, Dr., 226  
 Koepenick, 103  
 Kraepelin, Dr., 226  
 Krafft-Ebing, 43

## L

Lag, the old, 194  
 Language, 138  
 Lash, 249  
 Law, ethics of, 20, 22  
 Lawrence, Mr. Justice, 250  
 Legal irregularities by Cecil Chapman, 196  
 Leonard, Dr. 320  
 Lèse patrie, 36  
 — majesté, 36  
 Leeuwarden, 260  
 Life a miracle, 369

Lister, 163  
 — life of, 167-169  
 Livingstone, Dr., 147  
 Locke, 18  
 Lombroso, 50  
 Longevity of mind, 146  
 Louvain prison, 271  
 — compared with Dartmoor, 273  
 Lush, Mr. Justice, 250

## M

MacDougall, 134, 135, 136, 137, 141, 150, 162  
 MacNaughten, 233  
 Madeira prison, 312  
 Madrid, Asile de bienfaisance, 306  
 — prisons, 309, 311  
 Magistrate on Penology, 248  
 Maladministration of the law, 188  
 Maoris, 182  
 Marie H., case of, 77  
 Masses, raising, 146  
 Materialism, 161  
 Melun, 290  
 Memory test, 181  
 Memory, education of, 342  
 — sensory and psychic centres of, 342  
 — word, 342  
 Mendelism, 364  
 Mens sana, 335  
 Mental Deficiency Act, 122  
 Mercier, the late Charles, 21, 23, 53, 227, 243, 345  
 — Cardinal, 163  
 Merxplas, 258  
 — details of to-day, 280  
 Mesnet, Dr., case of dual personality, 101  
 Mid-brain, 405  
 Mind and brain, 128, 137  
 — subconscious, 404  
 Mind and new school, 136  
 Mind, subjective and objective, 225  
 Misdirected instincts, 38  
 Mission work, 12  
 Moll, 282  
 — boy's prison, 287  
 — examination at, 286  
 Mongols, 129, 130, 131, 325  
 — American, 315  
 — other Mongolians, 129  
 Moral imbeciles, cases of, 125, 233  
 Morgan, 362  
 — 384  
 Morningside Asylum, 227  
 Morley, 163  
 Morocco, crime in, 56



Motor Bandits, 29  
 Mott, Sir Frederick, 150, 394  
 Murderer, brain of, 176  
 — a reflex murder, 404  
 — juvenile, in Holland, 267  
 Murders, after seduction, 203  
 — constable in Essex, 165  
 — in train, 239  
 — MacDougall, 113  
 — M. Chantrelle, 113  
 — my cases, 120  
 — the trunk, 112

## N

Negativism, 227  
 Negligence, criminal, 23  
 Negro population, 324  
 Neo group, 131, 137, 232  
 Neopallium, 128, 143  
 Neo-psychology, 164  
 Nero, 40  
 Nervous system, 388  
 Neurokyne, MacDougall's, 150  
 Neuron, 393  
 — nuclei or neuroblasts, 408  
 — post-natal, 407  
 — pre-natal, 409  
 Nevill, Lord W., 192  
 New Caledonia, 290  
 Newgate Calendar, cases from, 27-29  
 Nicholas, Czar, 333  
 Nigger philosophy, 239

## O

Oates, Capt., 165  
 Observatories, 179  
 — in Holland, 165  
 Obsessions, 110  
 — case of Dr. Minor, 110  
 Organ, Mr., 221  
 Orton, J. H., 377  
 Osborne, Mr. Mott, 321  
 Ovum, 354

## P

Painless extinction, 180  
 Paranoia, 114  
 — causing strikes, 115  
 — Lincolnshire murderer, 115  
 Parkhurst, 6  
 Paul, St., 155, 161  
 Peace, Charlie, 189  
 Pease, Sir Joseph, 207  
 Peel, Sir Robert, 233  
 Pellagra, 43

Penal Colony, Holland, 258  
 Penal sentence in Belgium, 280  
 Penology a science? 231  
 — in Belgium, 271  
 — magistrate on, 248  
 Perish to, 161  
*Personality* is composite, 75  
 — cases, Chapter VIII  
 — compartment theory, 93  
 — dual, Chapters VI and VII  
 — features of a dual personality, 98  
 Perversions, 38  
 Phantasies, 149  
 Phantasy in crime, 63, 116  
 Philippine Islands, 322  
 Phœnicians, 129, 304  
 Piltown, 336  
 Pithecanthropus, 336  
 Pituitary body, 67  
 — in crime, 166  
 Polynesians, 182  
 Portuguese prison, Madeira, 313  
 Prayer in Sanskrit, 20  
 Pre- and post-natal brain-cells, 65  
 Préaux, 292  
 Preventive medicine, 47  
 Pre-Victorian period, 187  
 Principle of sentences in Holland, 250  
 Prison, Amsterdam, 268  
 — at Buenos Aires, 314  
 — at La Santé, 213  
 — boys' at Alcala, 305  
 — children in, 210  
 — comfortable, 245  
 — convicts' at Granada, 309  
 — for women in Germany, 300  
 — Funchal, 213  
 — in England, 212  
 — in Germany, 298  
 — in Ireland, 221  
 — its object, 209  
 — Madeira, 312  
 — men's at Madrid, 309  
 — South America, 313  
 — women's at Alcala, 310  
 Prison grades, Belgium, Réclus Travaux  
   forcés Perpétuité, 271  
 Prisoners, mental care in Germany, 299  
 Probation, 256, 257  
 — of Offenders Act, 14  
 Problem of sentences, 243  
 Procureur, the, 39  
 Prosecution, method of in France, 296  
 Protection of criminal, 242  
 Prussia, key of, 334  
 Prussian, 129  
 Psychic aberrations, 76  
 Psycho-analysis, 155, 157, 160



Psychology of criminal, 7, 231  
 — of murder, 9  
 — of punishment, 234  
 Punishment, 182  
 Punnett, 367

## Q

Quakers, 11, 161  
 — American, 317  
 Quakerism, 170-172  
 Quartiers de correction, 295  
 Queen Alexandra, 212  
 — Charlotte, 331  
 — Elizabeth, 305  
 — Isabella, 34  
 — Victoria, 163, 170, 188, 189, 195,  
 333, 334

## R

Rambles in N. Africa, 58  
 Rasputin, 130  
 Reaction, man as a, 164  
 Receivers, 29  
 Recidivists, 246  
 Reflex action, 390  
 — experimental, 392  
 Reformation, 209-215  
 — America, 215  
 — George Junior Republic, 215  
 — Melton Mowbray, 215  
 Reformatory at Amersfoort, 263  
 Reformatories in Holland, 265  
 — — Avereest, Leiden, Rotterdam, 266  
 Regression or reversion, 338  
 Relégue for récidivists, 294  
 Religion, 11, 161, 262  
 — Anatole France, 15  
 — intellectual, 162  
 Remand homes, 210  
 Remoteness of damage as a defence in  
 crime, 203  
 Repression, 241  
 Reproductive organs, glands, 68  
 Residue, the, 14  
 Responsibility, 24  
 Retribution, 209  
 Revenge, 178  
 Reynolds, Mary, case of, 100  
 Robertson, Dr., 227  
 Roman law, 183  
 Romilly, Sir Samuel, 187  
 Roquette la petite, 291  
 Rouvray, Dr., of Moll, 285  
 Russia, 58, 129

## S

Sadism, 39, 43, 45  
 — Vidal, 45  
 Sahara, 155  
 Saint Honoré, 217  
 St. Gilles prison in Brussels, 274  
 St. Lazare, 293  
 Salvation Army, 8, 12  
 — boys' homes in Holland, 267  
 — homes for juvenile offenders in Ger-  
 many, 300  
 — in Holland, 259, 260  
 — — India, 56, 211  
 — — Russia, 244, 255  
 Santé, la, 296  
 Savages, 182  
 Savill, Dr. T. *See* Chap. VII, 151  
 Saxony, 129  
 Scott Expedition, 165  
 Seddon, 200  
 Seduction and murder, 203  
 Self-regarding sentiment, 102  
 Semitic blood, 58  
 Sentences, problem of, 243  
 — piling up, 244  
 — principles in Holland, 259  
 Sentiment, false, 195  
 Sex anomalies, causes of, 44  
 — chromosomes, 381  
 —, evolution of, 375  
 — glands, 240  
 — if pure, 385  
 Sherrington, 131, 394, 403  
 Sicily, 58  
 Sierra Leone, 20  
 Sin and crime, 19, 20  
 Sing Sing prison, 319  
 Sommer, Dr., 225  
 Soul or Spirit, 180  
 South American prison, 313  
 Spain, 58  
 —, boy's prison, 305  
 —, children's homes, 311  
 —, convict prison at Granada, 309  
 —, men's prison, 309  
 —, prisons in, 303  
 —, women's prison, 310  
 —, workhouse, 306, 307  
 Spanish, the, 304  
 — fleet, 305  
 Spencer, Herbert, 362  
 Sperm, 355  
 Stephen, Sir Fitzjames, 22, 233  
 Sterilization, 124, 240  
 Stevenson, Robert Louis, 41, 77  
 Stigmata, 43  
 Strachan, on criminal families, 50



Subconsciousness or mind, 404  
 Sublimation, 155  
 Suetonius, 40  
 Sumerians, 130  
 Sylvestri, 377  
 Synapses, 393

## T

Tallack, Wm., 195, 238, 243, 314  
 Tasmania, 253  
 Temperaments, 142  
 Teutonic blood, 58  
 Thompson, Mrs., and Bywater, 17  
 Thyroid gland, 67  
 Tiberius, 40  
 Tissie, Dr., on dual personality, 102  
 Tomassi, Professor, on dual personality, 102  
 Tournai criminal asylum, 42  
 Tramps, 34  
 Transportation, 251  
 Traumatic oblivion; a medico-legal case, 109  
 Treatment of crime 50 years hence, 241  
 Trunk murderer, 43  
 "Truth," 193  
 Turanians, 57

## U

Uncertainty of law, 200  
 Unconscious mind, 130  
 Uncontrollables, sterilisation of, 239  
 Unfinished man, 275, 410  
 Units, ancestral, 147  
 Utero, development in, 368  
 — 35th day, 368

## V

Vanity, 7  
 Veenhuizen, 258  
 Veenstra, S. L., 255  
 Vengeance, 180  
 Verenzi, 42  
 Vervaeck, Dr., in Brussels, 181, 275  
 Vigilambulism, 77  
 Virilism and adrenal tumour, 166  
 Visser, S., at Amersfoort, 263  
 Volunteer prison league, 323  
 Vries, de, 362

## W

Waddell, 129  
 Wallace, Sir Robert, 210  
 Walton, Sir Joseph, 244  
 Wandsworth gaol, 257  
 Watson, G. A., 144, 338  
 Webster, Canon, the late, 211  
 Weissmann, 363  
 Welfare League, 321  
 Welt politik, 129, 411  
 Wheatley, Wm. and Edward, 12, 217  
 Williams II, history and prison life, 1-9, 190, 246  
 Willson, Bishop, 379  
 Wilman, Dr., 227  
 Wilson, Prof. E. B., 379  
 Wilson, Sir W. G., 220  
 Women's prisons in Germany, 300  
 Workhouse at Granada, 307  
 — at Madrid, 306

## Z

Zarde, Gabriel, 197









